00106833
GOD
940.3
T9m
106833

00106833

Digitized with financial assistance from
Shri Brihad Bhartiya Samaj
on 31 October, 2019

The Times

DOCUMENTARY HISTORY OF THE WAR

VOL. X

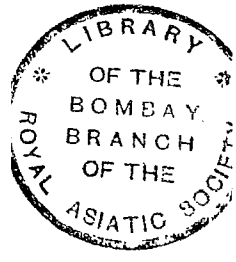
GOD
940.3
T9m
106833

The Times

DOCUMENTARY HISTORY OF THE WAR

VOLUME X

OVERSEAS—PART 2



LONDON
PRINTING HOUSE SQUARE
1919

PREFACE

THE first of the volumes in the Overseas Division of *The Times* DOCUMENTARY HISTORY OF THE WAR related exclusively to Canada, and covered the period between the outbreak of the Great War and the departure for England, at the end of September 1914, of the First Canadian Contingent. In this, the second volume of the series, the activities during the same period of Newfoundland, Australia, and New Zealand are exhibited, but some documents similar to those included in the Canadian volume have been omitted. In the case of Newfoundland the important Report of the Governor, dated March 31, 1915, dealing with events between August 12, 1914, and the end of March, 1915, has been included.

In an Appendix will be found the Report of the Committee of Imperial Defence upon a General Scheme of Defence for Australia, published in August, 1906; Lord Kitchener's Memorandum on the Defence of Australia of February 12, 1910; the Memorandum by the Australian Chief of the General Staff and of the Commonwealth Section of the Imperial General Staff of July 8, 1910; the greater part of the Reports, dated respectively April 24, 1914, and June 4, 1914, of Sir Ian Hamilton on the Military Forces of Australia and New Zealand; and lastly, part of Admiral Sir Reginald Henderson's Recommendations of March 1, 1911, in regard to the Naval Forces of Australia. By perusing these, and the documents relating to Australia and New Zealand, included in other volumes of the *Documentary History*, the reader will be able properly to appreciate the gigantic efforts made by Australia and New Zealand after the outbreak of the war. The Report of the Committee of Imperial Defence, also,

lucidly explains the British Naval Strategy in 1906, while the Memorandum of Lord Kitchener and the Reports of Sir Ian Hamilton are of peculiar interest because of the distinguished part played by their authors after hostilities had commenced.

AUTHORITIES QUOTED

A. . . . . 'Correspondence regarding the Naval and Military Assistance afforded to His Majesty's Government by His Majesty's Oversea Dominions,' 1914. [Cd. 7607.]

B. . . . . 'Correspondence relating to Gifts of Foodstuffs and other Supplies to His Majesty's Government from the Oversea Dominions and Colonies,' 1914. [Cd. 7608.]

C. . . . . 'Correspondence regarding Gifts from the Oversea Dominions and Colonies,' 1914. [Cd. 7646.]

CONTENTS

NEWFOUNDLAND AND LABRADOR:

PAGE

Members of Sir Edward Morris's Government . . . 1
Correspondence with His Majesty's Government . . 2
Proclamations 8
Proceedings in Newfoundland Legislature . . . 12
Other Speeches, Statements, and Public Notices . . 33
Report of the Newfoundland Patriotic Association . . 56

AUSTRALIA:

Members of Mr. Cook's Government and of Mr. Fisher's Government 82
Correspondence with His Majesty's Government . . 83
Proclamations, Orders in Council, and Public Notices . 94
Speeches and Statements 102
Australian Expeditionary Force 152

NEW ZEALAND:

Members of Mr. Massey's Government 173
Correspondence with His Majesty's Government . . 174
Proclamations and Orders in Council 181
Proceedings in New Zealand Parliament 190
Other Speeches, Statements, and Public Notices . . 256
New Zealand Expeditionary Force 263

APPENDIX 287

INDEX 493

NEWFOUNDLAND AND LABRADOR

GOVERNOR AND COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF:

SIR WALTER EDWARD DAVIDSON, K.C.M.G.,
appointed October 1912

THE MINISTRY

AT THE OUTBREAK OF WAR

Prime Minister, without Portfolio	Rt. Hon. SIR EDWARD P. MORRIS, P.C., K.C.M.G., K.C., LL.D.[1]
Colonial Secretary	Hon. J. R. BENNETT.
Minister of Justice	Hon. RICHARD A. SQUIRES, K.C.
Minister of Finance and Customs	Hon. M. P. CASHIN.
Minister of Agriculture and Mines	Hon. S. D. BLANDFORD.
Leader of the Legislative Council	Hon. R. K. BISHOP.
Without Portfolio	Hon. C. H. EMERSON, K.C.
Without Portfolio	Hon. M. P. GIBBS, K.C.
Without Portfolio	Hon. J. C. CROSBIE.

NOT IN THE CABINET

Minister of Public Works	Mr. WILLIAM WOODFORD.
Minister of Marine and Fisheries	Mr. A. W. PICCOTT.

[1] Now Lord Morris.

CORRESPONDENCE WITH HIS MAJESTY'S GOVERNMENT

NAVAL AND MILITARY ASSISTANCE OF NEWFOUNDLAND [1]

No. 1

The Governor-General of Newfoundland, Sir W. E. Davidson, K.C.M.G., to the Rt. Hon. Lewis Harcourt, M.P., Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *St. John's, August* 8, 1914.

A. [See p. 56.] Authority is desired by my Ministers to enlist special men service abroad by land and by sea.

Ministers undertake to raise force of Naval Reserve by the 31st of October to thousand efficient available naval service abroad for one year, and are willing to meet all local expenses.

Several hundred efficient local brigade training officers for enlistment for land service abroad.

Five hundred could, I believe, be enlisted within one month.

Propose to induce serviceable men between eighteen and thirty-six years enlist; training home defence wherever corps instruction available. Material for further draft would be formed by these.

DAVIDSON.

No. 2

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 8, 1914.

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 10, '14. Please inform your Ministers that the Dominions Royal Commission will conclude its inquiry in the Canadian Maritime Provinces, and then suspend its sittings.

HARCOURT.

[1] [For convenience of reference the communications have been numbered.]

No. 3

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 9, 1914.

With reference to your telegram of 8th August,[1] His Majesty's Government gladly avail themselves of offer of your Government to raise troops for land service abroad. As regards Naval Reserve, I will telegraph later. A. [See p. 56.]

HARCOURT.

No. 4

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 12, 1914.

Press Bureau has been established which will be responsible for the issue of official war news to the Press. We have ascertained that Press agencies propose to supply Newfoundland Press with all news of importance or general interest. Any additional news which concerns your Government or is likely to affect their plans will, of course, be telegraphed to you by me. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 14, '14.

HARCOURT.

No. 5

The Governor of Newfoundland to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *St. John's, August* 13, 1914.

Am desired by the [Newfoundland] Board of Trade to telegraph as follows :— *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 22, '14.

Information received that cod fish in casks, shipped from here *viâ* Liverpool through bill of lading to Spain, has been stopped at Liverpool by Proclamation prohibiting export of food supplies. Does it mean that exportation of Newfoundland cod fish to Spain, Portugal, Italy, Brazil, and other neutral places will be prohibited, or does it mean that export food supplies *viâ* Great Britain prohibited? If former is case,

[1] [No. 1.]

Colony will have no means of paying for food supplies from Canada and the United States, or articles manufactured by Great Britain. There is a large shipment awaiting Digby for Spain *viâ* Liverpool. Of great importance in interests of trade that transhipment be allowed at once. Hitherto Newfoundland cod fish has not been consumed in Great Britain to any extent, and, as it is perishable article, could not be held for any length of time. DAVIDSON.

No. 6

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland.

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 14, 1914.

A. My telegram 9th August.[1] Lords Commissioners of Admiralty accept with gratitude offer of your Government to raise force of Naval Reserve to 1000. It has been already arranged to utilise part of reserve to complete H.M.S. *Niobe*, and additional numbers will be valuable for later requirements. HARCOURT.

No. 7

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

London, August 16 (*circa*), 1914.

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 17, '14.

The accompanying message is a reply to one sent [August 14] by His Excellency the Governor at the request of the Prime Minister on behalf of the Board of Trade, who were anxious to know if the arrangements made by the British Government in relation to War Risk insurance, whereby the British Government guaranteed eighty per cent., applied to Colonial ships:

'With reference to your telegram of the 14th August, Board of Trade states that a number of Colonial registered vessels have been already entered in one or other of the three approved associations, and it is therefore possible that Newfoundland steamships referred to in your telegram have not applied to all three associations. If owners fail to obtain

[1] [No. 3.]

admission to all three and particulars are furnished to the Board of Trade, the Board will institute inquiries to see if a solution can be found.' HARCOURT.

No. 8

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 21, 1914.

With reference to your telegram ; Royal Naval Reserve men not immediately required should be allowed to return home. [HARCOURT.] *Report of Sir W. E. Davidson,* March 31, 1915, p. 9.

No. 9

The Governor of Newfoundland to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *St. John's, August* 21, 1914.

Newfoundland Regiment. Ministers desire to state Government of Newfoundland will meet total cost of contingent 500 men. They purpose leaving end September. DAVIDSON. A.

No. 10

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 21, 1914.

With reference to your telegram of August 13, prohibition of exportation of fish from this country is now withdrawn. No objection to exportation of Newfoundland fish to neutral countries. HARCOURT. *St. John's Daily News,* Aug. 22, '14.

No. 11

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor of Newfoundland

(Cablegram.) *London, August* 24, 1914.

Your telegram 21st August. His Majesty's Government much appreciate offer of your Government to pay total cost of Newfoundland contingent, and desire that their thanks may be conveyed to your Ministers. HARCOURT. A.

No. 12

The Governor of Newfoundland to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

Government House,
St. John's, September 5, 1914.

St. John's Daily News, Sept. 10, '14.

SIR,—I have the honour to report that H.M.S. *Niobe,* Captain R. G. Corbett, has arrived this day at St. John's, and has completed her complement by embarking 100 men of the Newfoundland Royal Naval Reserve—in terms of your telegraphic instructions (No. 13) of the 6th ult.

I inspected the men before embarkation, and am of the opinion that I have never seen a finer body of seamen. They are all unmarried men, who tendered their services when volunteers were called for. H.M.S. *Niobe* left this evening.

2. When the mobilisation order issued on August 2, some 380 men reported themselves for duty on H.M.S. *Calypso,* Lieutenant-Commander A. MacDermott. A force of 35 men, in command of a warrant officer, was sent to take charge of the wireless station at Cape Race, and a body of 30 men was sent under the command of Mr. Carter, retired Lieutenant, R.N., who happens to be living on the west coast, to take charge of the wireless station at Cape Ray.

3. In compliance with telegraphic war series instructions from the Admiralty (Telegrams Nos. 46 and 50 of 22-23 August), the remaining reservists were granted leave of absence to return to their homes at the public expense, with the exception of the draft required for H.M.S. *Niobe* and a reserve of 50 retained on board H.M.S. *Calypso,* against possible eventualities. The order of the Admiralty was executed with promptitude, more especially because the fishing season is busy and the men can earn money in their fishing centres.

4. The actual strength of the reservists on the roll of efficients was 565 at the date of mobilisation. Those who were unable to obey the order forthwith were employed on the Labrador Fishery and on deep sea voyages. Telegraphic communication with the Labrador coast is suspended, the wireless stations having been closed in terms of the censorship regulations, and has not yet been reopened.

5. The offer made by my Ministers (contained in my

telegram of the 8th ult., and accepted by the Admiralty No. 31 of the 14th *idem*), to raise the number of the Royal Naval Reservists from 600 to 1000 by October 31, has not yet been acted upon, because the fishermen of the northern outports, on whom we chiefly rely, have not yet returned from their fishing voyages. As the fishing season is unusually late, it is not unlikely that the recruiting of the full number may be correspondingly delayed.—I have the honour to be, Sir, Your obedient servant

(Signed) [Sir] W. E. DAVIDSON.

The Right Hon. Lewis Harcourt, M.P.,
etc., etc., etc.

No. 13

The Governor of Newfoundland to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

St. John's, September 9, 1914.

My Ministers desire me to convey to His Majesty the grateful thanks of all in Newfoundland for the gracious message received last night.[1] Newfoundland is loyal to the core to King and Empire in this just quarrel. DAVIDSON. *St. John's Daily News,* Sept. 11, '14.

[1] [See *Overseas*, 1, pp. 3-5.]

PROCLAMATIONS

August 3, 1914.

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 3, '14.

GEORGE THE FIFTH, by the Grace of God, of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and of the British Dominions beyond the Seas, King, Defender of the Faith, Emperor of India.

W. E. DAVIDSON, *Governor* (L.S.).

To all to whom these presents shall come, greeting :

His Britannic Majesty's Government find themselves under the necessity of availing themselves of the power reserved under Article 8 of the International Telegraph Convention and Article 17 of the International Radio-Telegraph Convention to suspend the transmission of telegrams and radio-telegrams to and from or in transit through the United Kingdom, and to and from or in transit through all British Possessions and all British Protectorates whatsoever, save and except such telegrams and radio-telegrams as are on the service of His Majesty's Government or of the Government of any British Possession or Protectorate.

With a view, however, to minimise inconvenience to the public, His Britannic Majesty's Government will, until further notice, and as an act of grace, permit the transmission of such telegrams and radio-telegrams in plain language as foreign governments or the public choose to send, provided that such telegrams and radio-telegrams are written in English or French and on the understanding that they are accepted at the sender's risk and subject to censorship by the British authorities ; that is that they may be stopped, delayed or otherwise dealt with in all respects at the discretion of those authorities and without notice to the senders ; and that no claims in respect of them, whether for the reimbursement of the sums paid for transmission or otherwise, will be considered by His Majesty's Government in any circumstances whatever. It is, moreover, essential that such telegrams and radio-telegrams should bear the sender's name at the end of the text, otherwise they are

liable to be stopped until the name is notified by paid telegram. Registered abbreviated addresses will not be accepted, either as addresses or as the names of senders.

Note.—The term 'telegram' is applied to radio-telegraph messages sent from shore to shore as well as to those sent by cable or land line.

The term 'radio-telegram' is used to denote messages exchanged between ships and the shore.

Given under the Great Seal of Our Island of Newfoundland.

Witness Our Trusty and Well-Beloved Sir Walter Edward Davidson, Knight Commander of the Most Distinguished Order of St. Michael and St. George, Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over Our said Island of Newfoundland and its Dependencies, at St. John's, in Our said Island, this third day of August, A.D. 1914, and in the fourth year of Our Reign.

By His Excellency's command.

JOHN R. BENNETT, *Colonial Secretary.*

August 5, 1914.

PROCLAMATION.

His Excellency, the Governor in Council, has been pleased to direct that the following Order in Council of His Majesty, the King in Council, with reference to the application to this Colony of the procedure respecting the treatment of neutral and enemy merchant ships in time of war, shall come into effect on the date hereof. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 5, '14.

JOHN R. BENNETT, *Colonial Secretary.*

[The Order in Council will be found in *Naval*, 1, pp. 20-4.]

August 22, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

YOUR KING AND COUNTRY NEED YOU.

Will You Answer Your Country's Call?

At this very moment the Empire is engaged in the greatest war in the history of the world. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 22, '14.

In this crisis your country calls on her young men to rally round her flag and enlist in the ranks of her army.

If every patriotic young man answers her call, Great Britain and the Empire will emerge stronger and more united than ever.

Newfoundland responds to the Homeland's call and promises to enlist, equip and despatch to England the first Newfoundland regiment of 500 strong. We want to send our best, and we believe that Britain's Oldest Colony will gain greater honour and glory for her Name.

If you are between nineteen and thirty-five years old, will you answer your country's call? If you will, then go to the nearest magistrate and enrol your name for service in the fighting line. If you live in St. John's, go to the C.L.B.[1] Armoury and enter your name at the Central Recruiting Office, on any evening between 8 P.M. and 10 P.M.

Tickets to St. John's will be provided by the magistrate free of cost.

The terms of enlistment are: To serve abroad for the duration of the war, but not exceeding one year. It is intended the men shall leave within one month of their enrolment, and that in the meantime they shall receive a course of instruction and training in St. John's.

A complete outfit will be provided.

Each private will receive pay at the rate of $1.00 per day and free rations, from the date of enrolment to the date of return, a portion of which will be paid to dependants left behind, or it will be allowed to accumulate for their personal benefit until termination of service.

Volunteers from outports will be given free passage to St. John's.

Any applicant for service, forwarded by the proper authorities and not accepted after arrival at headquarters, will be provided with a free passage and maintenance back to his home.

September 29, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

Report of Sir W. E. Davidson, March 31, 1915, p. 42.

WHEREAS the British Empire is now at War with Germany and Austria; and Whereas, after consultation with the Heads of the various Religious Denominations in this Colony, I deem it meet and proper, and in keeping with the desire of our

[1] [Church Lads' Brigade.]

people, that a special date be set apart as a day of Universal Prayer and Supplication to Almighty God for the protection of the British Empire and the success of the British Arms and Allied Forces, and for the blessings of an honourable and lasting Peace;

And Whereas I have ascertained from the Heads of the various Religious Denominations in this Colony that Sunday, the Eighteenth day of October next, would be a convenient day for such public prayers:

Wherefore, I, the Governor, do hereby appoint and direct that Sunday, the Eighteenth day of October next, be observed throughout this Colony as a day of Universal Prayer and Supplication to Almighty God for the protection of the British Empire and for the success of the British Arms and Allied Forces, and for the blessings of an honourable and lasting Peace:

And Whereas notice of this appointment may not be received in some of the remote settlements of the Colony before the said Eighteenth day of October;

Therefore I do further direct that in such cases such public devotions be observed on some other convenient day as early as possible after the receipt of this Proclamation as the various Clergy having jurisdiction in these remote settlements may respectively appoint.

PROCEEDINGS IN NEWFOUNDLAND LEGISLATURE

September 2, 1914.

SPEECH FROM THE THRONE

St. John's Daily News, Sept. 3, '14.

Mr. President and Honourable Gentlemen of the Legislative Council;

Mr. Speaker and Gentlemen of the Honourable House of Assembly:

You are called together to-day under circumstances of unparalleled character. The European war, in which the Mother Country found herself compelled to engage, has occasioned such conditions that all the Overseas Dominions have felt it a pride and a privilege to tender her moral and material support. My Ministers promptly made undertakings on behalf of this Colony, for which you will be invited to provide. Other measures designed to cope with exceptional circumstances which may arise during the course of the war, will be submitted to your consideration.

. . . . . .

DEBATE ON ADDRESS IN LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

Hon. Edgar Bowring rose to move the appointment of a Committee to draft an Address in reply. He approached the task with a full sense of the solemnity of the occasion. The session was an unusual one, the result of the present war, which it could not be too strongly emphasised had not been brought about by Britain until all possibilities of peace had been exhausted. That right was on our side the world admitted. Success must come, but to achieve it would call for great and mighty effort. Our patriotism was real, and demanded that a full share of support be given to the Mother Country, at least proportionate to that offered by the large dominions. Here

we had enjoyed immunity from all war troubles. Few, if any, had ever seen a shot fired in anger. To Great Britain we owed our freedom. She had taken upon herself the burden of our protection, and even now the trade routes were safe.

After reading an article from the *Daily Telegraph*, Mr. Bowring referred to the recent successful naval battle near Heligoland, the news of which had sent a thrill through all. The security which we enjoy had been the principal factor in the Colony's prosperity. Now the opportunity offered to make some small return. To give it was both a duty and a privilege; to deny it would be a crowning disgrace. He rejoiced to know how rapidly volunteers were pouring in. St. John's alone was providing sufficient for the first contingent. The value of the brigades had been amply proven. Up to September 2, 688 had volunteered. Of these 174 were from the Catholic Cadet Corps, 130 from the Church Lads' Brigade, 73 Methodist Guards, 47 Highlanders, 18 Frontiersmen, and 54 had seen some service elsewhere.

Reference was made to the splendid unanimity that had characterised other Parliaments, and some burning words of Sir Wilfrid Laurier and Donald Sutherland were quoted. The whole Empire was at one in its determination to for ever crush 'the Imperial butcher who claims to have his licence from Almighty God.'

A comparison was made of Newfoundland's proposals and those of other Dominions, and the proposed legislation was briefly reviewed. . . .

Hon. Samuel Milley seconded the motion, preceding his remarks with a welcome to the proposer, who was occupying his seat in the Council for the first time for many years. All were moved deeply by the conditions which now surrounded the Mother Country and the Empire, and words failed him to express the profound emotion that animated the breasts of Britons everywhere. He had been in London when the war broke out. It was impossible adequately to describe the conditions there between August 3 and 8. There was no sign of popular panic, but the financial situation beggared description. Mr. Milley expressed his assurance that the legislature would gladly endorse all measures dealing with war expenditures. It was a matter of just pride that whole-hearted sympathy and support had come from all parts of the Empire

and that unity was the dominant note. The four days' session of the Dominion Parliament was a proof of the genuineness of its loyalty. We can and we will send such help as it is in our power to give. Already 700 had volunteered, and he was sure that the people would be proud to undertake the expenses in connection with the first Newfoundland volunteer regiment in its fight for King and Country. No doubt we were called upon to pass through a period of strain and anxiety, but so long as Britain ruled the waves markets would be found. Prices must advance, but that was inevitable. Germany's beet crop supplied England, and that was lost now, and those who reaped it were under arms. Many English firms could no longer supply us, as they were compelled to hold their goods for the Imperial authorities. . . . Mr. Milley concluded a stirring peroration with the words 'Our Empire will, for she must, emerge victorious from the present contest.'

DEBATE ON THE ADDRESS IN THE HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY

MR. J. M. KENT, K.C. (Leader of the Opposition): Mr. Speaker, before proceeding to deal with the subject which has brought us here this afternoon, I should like to extend my congratulations in no formal way, to the proposer and seconder of the address. We have heard both gentlemen on former occasions in this House, but never, I think, to such advantage as this afternoon. They have struck the true note which actuates the whole Empire, and which, I am sure, is entertained by every member of this House this afternoon—the note of patriotism and the determination to stand shoulder to shoulder to meet the foreign foe which has made an uncalled-for attack upon the Empire of which we form a part.

This extraordinary session, Mr. Speaker, has been rendered necessary by the general European war in which the British Empire has been forced to participate, not willingly, not until every effort within human power had been made to preserve the peace amongst nations, but at the last moment in order to vindicate its national honour, to maintain its treaty obligations and to preserve that trust between nation and nation without

which the very foundations of civilisation would crumble and disappear, and the nations of the world again rush to that savagery and chaos from which centuries of civilisation have been drawing them.

The conditions produced by this war are such that they could not be anticipated; some questions have arisen for which no precedent can be found; and in order to solve these problems the responsible legislatures in every part of the Empire have been called together. Many questions arose with which it was urgently necessary that the Government should deal promptly and at once, and it was desirable to call the Legislature together at the earliest opportunity so that the necessary legislative sanction should be obtained. That has been done, and we are here to-day in order to sanction those measures and to provide that legislative authority without which their validity might be questioned, and also to pass such measures as may be necessary to make valid the acts which the Government may deem necessary to promulgate in order to carry out the undertakings which they have made.

This, Sir, is not a time when we should think of Party differences. This is a time when our land calls for the united action of every one. In every country there are Party differences and political differences, but at a time like this these differences must stand aside, and all, whether they occupy seats on the Government side, or the Opposition side, must unite in order to bring forth the best results that can possibly be obtained from our deliberations in this House. And, Sir, speaking on behalf of those who sit on this side of the House, I want to say to the Government that, so long as hostilities continue, so long as the Empire is engaged with a foreign foe, you will find no criticism, no opposition from this side of the House. On the contrary, Sir, you find us ready in every direction, and by every means in our power, to assist in passing all measures that may be deemed necessary in the interests of the country and the Empire.

The present situation, as I have said, Mr. Speaker, is unprecedented. It is unprecedented in many ways. But I think, Sir, that the characteristic which stands out most is the unity which it has evoked throughout the whole Empire; and I am sure that there has been no sorer disappointment to the Emperor of Germany, and the military faction by which he is

advised, than to find the different sections of the Empire come together as one man, sinking all their differences and standing shoulder to shoulder determined that no foe should strike at the great principles for which the British Empire has always stood and stands to-day. They thought they saw the Empire divided; they thought they saw in the Homeland a division between Nationalists and Ulsterites, which must of necessity weaken the Empire; but at the first sound of alarm these different sections came together, and gave to the enemy an illustration of what they might expect throughout the Empire. They thought they saw, Sir, throughout the larger Dominions, a growing desire for independence; they saw discussions in Canada as to whether, when England was at war, Canada was at war, and they saw similar discussions in Australia and New Zealand; but now they have found that these questions were purely academic, and that at the first sound of danger they vanished, and to-day one of the greatest surprises to those who stand opposed to the British Empire is the manner in which all sections stand together in the determination to fight this fight to a finish.

After all, Mr. Speaker, the issues that are involved in this war don't affect the nations immediately concerned alone. They are broad issues. They are issues which, as I have said, go to the very foundation upon which civilisation is built. They include the right of the smaller nations to live in independence just as much as the largest empire. Every nation has the right to independence, and every nation has the right to expect that other nations will maintain their pledged honour and their treaty obligations. At first it appeared that the exertions of the British Foreign Minister, Sir Edward Grey, were going to be successful in limiting the area of hostilities, but he was thwarted in this by the lust of conquest which filled the ruling powers of Germany. Belgium, a small nation, had its integrity guaranteed by the three great Powers of Europe, one of which was Germany, but instead of maintaining that integrity she was the first to violate it; and, Sir, she made proposals to the Mother Country which any country should have been ashamed to make. She asked England to stand by and see the integrity of Belgium violated in spite of her plighted word. Sir Edward Grey and the British people rejected this unworthy proposal, but it was only at the last

moment, when every hope of peace had been removed, that the Empire found itself embroiled in this fight. Now that we are in it, it behoves every part of the Empire to do all in its power so that we may come out so thoroughly victorious that when the war is over there will be no possibility of those principles of independence and freedom and democracy for which the fight is waged, ever being questioned again.

We in this country are doing what is in our power to help the Motherland in her fight. The Government has undertaken to send forward 500 volunteers, and any person who has watched, during the last week or so, the manner in which our young men have come forward to enlist themselves must indeed feel proud of the city and country in which he lives. And the same spirit, Sir, actuates every other portion of the Empire. Take up the papers from England, from Ireland, from Scotland, from Canada, from Australia, from New Zealand and even from South Africa, against whom we were so lately arrayed in arms, and you will find the same spirit prevailing amongst the young men, and you will also find that the men who themselves are unable to go forward because of age or infirmity, are offering their sons to participate in the fight. We have here in this Legislature to-day men whose sons are volunteering to go to the front. I have on my right a gentleman, Mr. Clift, the hon. member for Twillingate, who has two sons volunteering; I see across from me the Prime Minister, whose stepson is going forward. And the Colonial Secretary has a son going forward. I don't know if there are any others in the House, but this is an example of the spirit which actuates all our young men of all classes. They are determined to see this thing through, and to give all the assistance in their power to the Motherland in the trials which are confronting her.

There are other problems arising out of the war in which patriotism can be shown, just as by volunteering for the front. We will all have to face trials and troubles here. We will probably have hard times—I hope not, but if the war is prolonged we will have to prepare for it. Therefore, those upon whom the conduct of the business of this community falls, will have to take their share in helping along the people of the country in the trials that are before them. Men doing business in this country ought to be satisfied with a fair profit upon

food-stuffs. It is unfair to the people of the country, unfair to the Empire—it is treason, Sir, on the part of the man who takes advantage of the present critical position to extort from the people unfair profits. I don't say that there are any men of that class—I don't know of any myself; but I have heard talk along this line. I hope that this talk is not true, and if there are any who have heretofore, unthinkingly, made profits of this kind, I hope they will have the patriotism and the courage to come forward now and give these unlawful profits to the assistance of the cause in which we are all concerned. It is, I think, the desire of us all to encourage and help our neighbour as much as possible at this time. At present we don't see the real troubles and difficulties of war, but if it is prolonged, if it should go on for a year or more, then we will begin to realise what it means to have the Empire at war, its trade tied up, its young men out fighting the battles of Empire, and its whole business more or less interfered with. That has been the experience of war everywhere, and the gigantic nature of this war will only magnify that experience; and therefore it behoves us to take courage from one another, and to maintain the spirit of those who may weaken in the face of those difficulties. One of the best ways of doing that is to act together and to consult together as to the best means of meeting those difficulties. . . .

I do not intend, Mr. Speaker, to detain the House any longer. In conclusion I would like to say that we on this side of the House will do our part in everything that will lend itself towards the maintaining of the country, and the assisting of the Mother Country in the trials that now confront her. I am sure, Sir, that when the war is over, and victory has ultimately crowned the efforts of Great Britain and her Allies, that those principles for which she has fought—the principle of honour among nations, the principle of mutual trust and confidence amongst nations, the principle of democracy (to explain what I mean by democracy I may contrast it with the autocratic rule which prevails in Germany), will be determined once and for all, and that the world throughout will have Government of the people, by the people, and for the people, and that such a system as prevails in Germany at the present time will be looked upon as an historical curiosity which lasted beyond its time.

RT. HON. SIR E. P. MORRIS (Prime Minister): Mr. Speaker, I desire in the first place to associate myself with the words of congratulation so very justly and appropriately conferred by my learned friend, the Leader of the Opposition, on the gentlemen who proposed and seconded the Address in reply to the Speech from the Throne this afternoon. In addition to congratulating them, I feel that I should tender to him, on my own behalf and on behalf of my friends on this side of the House, our united congratulations upon the splendid effort that he has just made—an effort worthy of a great occasion. He has lifted himself and his associates this afternoon on to a very high plane. I congratulate him, and I feel certain that the future historian will devote a page to the principles which the Opposition in this Legislature have been actuated with on this opening day. And yet it is not altogether a surprise to me. I do not wish to speak of it in any exaggerated terms, feeling that I might be misunderstood, and that any persons might think that I did not expect such an act from the gentlemen who sit on the other side of the House. From my acquaintance with them, from my knowledge of them, I should never have contemplated any other action than that which they have shown here this evening.

It is almost impossible on an occasion like this, not to say something in relation to the awe-inspiring position in which we find ourselves. Not alone here but all over the British Empire, and indeed all over the world, we are confronted with a spectacle the seriousness of which we have not yet been able to realise, and the consequences of which are so far-reaching that not one of us—not even the principal actors in the great tragedy which is being enacted in Europe to-day—can estimate them. We have no idea of measuring them; we have no idea of where this war is going to end or how long it is going to last. The most we can do, Mr. Speaker, is to make a plain comment on the various phases of it as far as may lie in our power, to play our part.

You have been told here this evening in very eloquent terms, by all the speakers who have preceded me, something of the causes of the great conflict in which the Empire is engaged, and with which we ourselves will shortly be personally and physically connected. You don't require from me any further explanation of the causes of the war. The Prime

Minister of England on more than one occasion has pointed out that no country ever went into a war for which there is greater moral justification, and every impartial country and every impartial individual has given the same verdict; and the verdict of posterity as well as ours must be that if we did not go into this war we could not have continued to hold up our heads. The Leader of the Opposition has told you that we have been drawn into this war in defence of our treaty obligations. It would have been very easy indeed for us to have kept out of it if we had been prepared to break our solemn pledges. We were bound to protect the neutrality of the small kingdom of Belgium, and we owed certain obligations to our Allies, the French. At the very last moment we were tempted by the German representatives to betray that trust; to permit them to go through Belgian territory. Any one who has read the White Book, any one who has read the momentous correspondence that took place between Sir Edward Grey, the British Foreign Minister, and the German representative, between the 20th July and the 4th August, when war was declared, can come to no other conclusions than that from the very start Germany was determined to pick a quarrel. This was not news to some, because they have been satisfied for years that the intention of the Germans from the very start was to pick a quarrel, and the only regret to-day is that those who foresaw and pointed out that danger—those who recognised that Germany was not building Dreadnought after Dreadnought and arming her people to the teeth for fun—were not listened to. It was done in pursuit of a well-thought-out and definite policy, and to-day we are face to face with the result. To bring their plans to a head they were prepared to shipwreck the honesty and integrity of a whole Empire.

The last words that the German Chancellor said to our representative in Berlin were: 'It is hardly worth our while to fall out over a bit of paper'; and the reply of our representative was: 'Yes, it is only a bit of paper, but England's name is on it.' So that it is some consolation to us to know and to feel that this is a justifiable war; that it is a war in defence of right and justice; and that no matter how it may terminate we will have in that respect nothing to regret.

My learned friend, the Leader of the Opposition, has referred to the united character of the British Empire to-day.

The ranks have closed up in every land. We have an illustration of it here to-day, where we find the Opposition vying with the Government in a united effort to show an unbroken front. And I want to say that my learned friend did not wait until to-day. Days ago, this proffered help and assistance was given by him to the Government, not alone for himself but for the gentlemen who sit behind him. And the moral effect of an act of this kind, not alone here but in every other part of the Empire—in Canada, in Australia, in New Zealand, and elsewhere—will be considerable. It will show the world, it will let the nations know and feel that there is no division in our ranks in the presence of the enemy. It is well that the German Emperor and those who are behind him should know that, as has been stated before, 'They who would reckon with England must reckon with England's sons.' The British Empire consists of an aggregation of States—far flung dominions all over the world—States in every sea and in every land and every continent and on every hemisphere—but, although separated, brotherhood and kinship have annihilated space.

We are met here to-day in extraordinary session of this Legislature in order that we may vote funds for those whom we are sending away to participate in this war, and in order that we may pass some necessary measures for the conduct of public affairs, for the protection of trade and all the other matters which may be necessary from time to time in order to lessen to some extent the trials and troubles and inconveniences and losses which are certain to follow from this war. We are only now beginning to realise that we are part of a great Empire. We have gone on for a hundred years and taken everything as a matter of fact. We have enjoyed all the advantages and blessings and privileges of being part of the British Empire, and up to the present we have not been called upon for a dollar to help build a battleship or drill a soldier. We have been glad and gratified to claim the protection of the British flag, to take advantage of British consuls and agents all over the world to assist in extending our trade. Now a blow has been struck at the whole Empire, and we realise to-day at least that of an Empire of 500,000,000 souls—nearly one-third of the whole human race—its entire defence has to be borne by 45,000,000 of people in the British Isles. We are at last beginning to awaken to a sense of our respon-

sibilities. We begin to realise that if we are a part of a great Empire, an Empire that stands for civilisation, for civil liberty, for religious liberty, for everything that is dear and sacred to a Briton, there are corresponding responsibilities which have to be faced or else our Empire cannot live. Any one who has read history must know that all the great Empires—Rome, Greece, Carthage, Egypt, Babylon—have all fallen because they ceased to recognise their obligations. We cannot get away from obligations. Let us try to figure what would happen to every part of the Empire if by any accident—which I don't think possible—we should lose in this war. Civilisation, our rights and liberties, all the freedom which we prize so much in this country and all over the Empire, would disappear. As my learned friend the Leader of the Opposition has told you, we would have to begin all over again. For that reason, Mr. Speaker, we are availing now of the very earliest opportunity to contribute our small share to the defence of the Empire. There is no danger as far as England is concerned. There can be no invasion of England as long as our Navy remains over water. Our trade routes are free and open, and in that way there is no danger and no risk as far as we are concerned, but great danger may come to our Allies. Danger may come to France, danger may come to Russia, and it is for that reason that the whole British Empire to-day is uniting with the Motherland in sending men to the front to fill the gaps created by those who have already fallen. I am delighted beyond measure that our people are responding all over the country so splendidly in this matter. My only regret is that they are not better equipped—that they have not had years of training to meet the men who have been trained for years and years. My learned friend has told you that this is a war between democracy and autocracy, and he is perfectly right, not in the ordinary acceptation of the words, but in this acceptation, that Democracy will come out of this war and ask—Why are we suffering in this manner? Why have we lost our sons? Why have our homes been pillaged? Why have our towns been burnt? Why has our trade been ruined? Why have we allowed half a dozen families to accomplish this? And the whole world will rise up and say: This must not happen again. It would not happen to-day if we had an Army and a Navy adequate to meet every possible

combination, and if we were able to say: Here we are, and we can stand against any possible combination that may be formed. When I have put this position to friends over in the old land during the last half a dozen years, I have been asked, Where is the money to come from? There is no question about the money. All the money that can possibly be required is there. I said this to one man only last June (I was down in Chelsea outside London talking on this very question of Imperial Defence at a public meeting where there were nearly 5000 people). I said our Navy is our national insurance, and the question is, Have we enough insurance on? No man has a right to have a house unless he can keep it insured, because it may be gone when he gets home. The same thing applies to a nation, and we have no right to own the British Empire unless we keep it insured, and the only way to insure it is to have an Army and a Navy capable of meeting any possible combination. This friend of mine said to me, Where are you going to get the money? Do you know that Lloyd George has just presented a Budget for £206,000,000, and that we are at the end of our taxation? I said: Yes, I am aware of that; I am aware that you spent £200,000,000 last year on your entire public service, but you also spent £180,000,000 on liquor, nearly half that amount on tobacco, and no one knows what you spent on golf and theatres and everything else. That was my reply. Well, now it is a case of getting down to defend the Empire. What we want now is for every man, woman, and child in Newfoundland to try and realise our obligation. Don't let any one think or feel that he is doing any great thing when he gives a small donation. He is only giving that which he is bound to give, and which he or those who went before him ought to have been giving for at least a hundred years.

Now, Mr. Speaker, I want to thank my friends on the other side again for their very generous offer of co-operation as far as the measures that we propose to introduce this session are concerned. We recognise, of course, what their duties are as members of the Opposition; we recognise their obligations, and we feel sure that the country will appreciate the work which they have commenced here to-day.

Now, I think, I ought to refer briefly to two or three matters that are likely to come before the House, and for which the Legislature has been specially called together.

In the first place, we propose to introduce an Act for the creation of a brigade or a volunteer corps. That will be a very short Act, and at the same time sufficiently comprehensive to deal with the present emergency. We are not in a position to state to the House just what the exact cost of this corps will be, but $250,000 will probably be the outside figure for all their expenses from the time of leaving here till they come back in seven or eight months. We are making provision on the assumption that they will be away for that period. I hope for the sake of all concerned that the war will be over before they ever leave here. I also hope, however, that if the war is prolonged, we may be able to find additional recruits to offer for service in the event of their being required. We are giving the 500 that will be leaving here in a month or so the very best equipment. We are not sparing any money upon them. We are giving them the best guns, the best ammunition that can be procured, and the best outfit in the way of clothes, so that those interested in them may not have any regrets in that respect. That is all we can do. . . .

There are two or three Bills that will be introduced in relation to what I may term purely commercial matters, arising out of the war. As you know, in England at the outbreak of the war, the British Government immediately, without any legislative authority, proclaimed by proclamation a moratorium. This provides for a delay in the payment of debts under certain contracts. They found it necessary to do that because of their wonderfully complex monetary system. Then when the House of Commons met, they brought in a Bill ratifying what they had done without previous legislation. Now in Canada, the other day, they took power, if occasion should arise, to proclaim a moratorium, but that will be a last resort, because a moratorium cannot be proclaimed for individuals—it must be done for the whole country, and a very serious condition of affairs would arise before we could resort to that. However, conditions may arise which would make it necessary, and we are going to take power so as to be able to deal with the matter.

Another Bill is that referred to by the Leader of the Opposition in relation to the price of food.

In England they have passed a Bill to prevent excessive charges being put on food-stuffs, and we are introducing that

Bill here, so that, hereafter, if it is found that excessive prices are charged, the Government will be able to interfere and prevent it as much as possible. I may say, with my learned friend the Leader of the Opposition, that I have heard it stated that excessive prices are being charged. No concrete cases have been put before me, however, where prices have risen in this town except in proportion to the prices as they have gone up in the countries where the goods are purchased. There is no reason whatever why flour should be dearer in St. John's to-day than it is in Canada plus the cost of freight to bring it here. In other words, nothing would justify raising prices merely because we are in a state of war. We cannot, of course, get away from the natural commercial increase that takes place. In other words, if flour goes up in the States and Canada, we have to put it up here; but if flour goes up half a dollar in Canada where it is purchased, then it must go up that amount here. If, however, it is found that in addition to that half dollar another twenty cents or forty cents is added, and that the war is being taken advantage of to take money out of the pockets of the poor, then we propose to deal with that.

One other Act will be introduced which will probably be entitled War Measures, giving the Government certain powers in relation to any extraordinary circumstances that may arise. The details of that Bill will be of a character, I trust, which will commend themselves to the House.

Now, Mr. Speaker, I don't know that I need delay the House any longer. The other Bills—that is the Loan Bill to provide the cost of the volunteer movement, and also the legislation in relation to the tariff—will probably be prepared within a day or two. It is an unfortunate thing that we should have to ask the House to increase the tariff in relation to some articles, but it is necessary that we should find revenue to carry on the Government in abnormal times such as the present. The public bills have to be paid; our interest has to be met; and we are now face to face with a position that will mean that within the next twelve months or up to the end of the next fiscal year on June 30th, we shall probably have a very large deficit owing to the war. This is one of those accidents that it is impossible to provide against, and we shall have to put on a tariff that will enable us to collect sufficient money to pay our way during the year. I hope, however, that matters may

look brighter as we go along, and that the taxation which will now be put on will be removed perhaps quicker than many of us anticipate. This taxation will be put on merely to deal with shortage in revenue and not to provide for any increased expenditure, except it be the increase in relation to the loan which we will submit to the House.

September 4, 1914.

DEBATE IN THE HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY

St. John's Daily News, Sept. 5, '14.

SIR E. P. MORRIS (Prime Minister) introduced a new Bill dealing with the exportation of timber. The Bill was the result of considerable inquiries from the United Kingdom for colliery pitwood, which was in great demand there, and the supply of which from Norway was greatly hampered by the war conditions which exist in the North Sea. The Premier read one message which had been received by Hon. Edgar Bowring from Mr. Lorimer, one of the Imperial Commissioners recently here, and intimated that Hon. John Harvey and others had received similar requests. The message to Mr. Bowring was as follows :—

Glasgow, September 3, 1914.

To HON. EDGAR BOWRING, St. John's.

Colliery pitwood most urgently wanted, 2½ inch diameter thin end upwards. Great Britain must have supplies from December onwards. What can you do? Wire me and President of Board of Trade.

LORIMER, c/o Dubs, Glasgow.

The Premier pointed out that it had been the settled policy of all Governments not to permit the exportation of pulp wood, but in the present case, in view of the emergent need in the Old Country and also of our people during the coming winter, the Government had decided to grant a licence for one year for the exportation of pulp wood, the licence not to extend beyond December 31, 1915—the licensee to pay an export duty of $1 per cord and the Governor in Council reserving the right to prescribe the rate of wages to be paid men employed.

MR. J. M. KENT, on behalf of the Opposition, from patriotic motives, consented to the Bill, but only on the understanding

that it would not be enforced for more than one year. Subsequently it was agreed that the date of cutting should not be later than June 1 of next year, and the fine for a breach of the Act—that is, exporting without (paying) licence and without paying duty—was increased to $5000. The Opposition asked for the Committee stage to be deferred until to-day, as they had not had time to go thoroughly into the Bill. This was agreed to, and the Bill received only the first and second readings.

HON. M. P. CASTIN (Minister of Finance and Customs) introduced the Bill for the raising of $250,000 to provide for the equipment, etc., of the volunteer force. This, he said, was the first war loan the Colony had ever been called upon to raise. Few thought when the House met early in the year that in a few months' time it would be summoned in war session. But the Empire had unexpectedly found itself at war, and, after considering how best it could help, the Government had offered a contingent of 500 men. This Bill was to pay the expenses of the contingent. This amount of $250,000 was a small contribution for us to make in return for the protection and help that had been accorded us since Newfoundland became a part of the Empire. The Minister referred to the spirit of loyalty that was to be found throughout the Colony, and paid a tribute to the city lads who so willingly and spontaneously responded to the call for volunteers. He also referred to the Outports, expressing his confidence and belief that the same spirit was to be found there, but most of the young men were under agreement at the fishery and away from home, and were thus not in a position to respond so quickly. In addition there were not the brigades to draw from, but he was confident if further drafts were necessary the Outports would nobly respond. With regard to the loan, the Minister said it was not the intention to put the debentures on the market at once, but a temporary loan would be obtained from the local banks.

MR. COAKER expressed his desire to facilitate the Government as far as possible in their war measures; also expressed his loyalty, and explained his position in refusing to act on the Committee because he believed the meetings held were being used by the Government for party purposes. He congratulated St. John's on the splendid response to the call for volunteers, and concurred with the Minister of Finance that the Outports were loyal and would do their duty.

SIR E. P. MORRIS pointed out that there was an entire misapprehension with regard to the meetings for the promotion of the volunteer movement, that the Government were not behind them whatever, that they were public, and that he (the Premier) was not even on the Committee until appointed by the Nominating Committee, when every other member of the House was included.

MR. F. J. MORRIS expressed his confidence in the spirit of enthusiastic loyalty which pervades the Outports. As a member of one of the Committees he knew what was taking place there, and of the response that was sure to come to the call of the country when the young men got home from the fishery. He realised, of course, that they were more fitted for the Naval Reserves, which branch of the service they would probably volunteer for.

DR. LLOYD delivered a most patriotic speech on our obligations and responsibilities. He believed a great many people yet failed to realise fully our obligations of Empire. The measure of our giving should be the measure of our obligations. He was glad something was being done to bear our share in the burden of Empire, was proud of the many who were offering for our contingent, and agreed with previous speakers that the Outports would do their share. Our fishermen were more suited for the Naval Reserve, but unfortunately they are not wanted on the sea—the fighting is not being done there; on the sea Britain is supreme. Her victory there has almost been a silent one, but it is effective. We did not feel the full effect of the war here, we were away from its devastating forces, but who paid for our peacefulness? Ours was a gigantic debt to the Empire for what had been done for us during the past hundred years. In money it represented $70 a head simply for the building or making the Empire; for keeping it up our share was $9. In men, if we were doing in proportion to what England is doing, our contingent to go forward should be 5000 instead of 500. These figures he quoted only to show just what our obligations were, and what we should try to measure up to. He would gladly give his support to the Bill, and if more were asked for the same purpose would gladly assent to it.

The Loan Bill then passed its various stages, and the time being 6.30 the Speaker left the chair till 8 o'clock.

Resuming, at the last-named hour, the first business, the 'War Budget,' was delivered by the Minister of Finance.

MR. KENT said the statement of the Minister was of an extraordinary character, prepared to meet an extraordinary situation. He defined the position of the Opposition as continually opposed to the financial policy of the Government. This opposition was on record, and he believed their opinions had been duly amplified and justified. At the present time the Opposition were prepared to assist the Government in all matters directly due to the war. He would not admit, however, that all the conditions referred to by the Minister were due entirely to the war. He believed the Colony had been over-spending and was left without normal reserves. But he would not stop now to distinguish them. This was not the session for that—when the House meets early in the coming year there would be ample opportunity for criticism. He would not dispute that war affected the trade conditions. That was patent to everybody, and so long as the war existed this must continue. The Belle Isle tax was also a source of revenue that was purely affected by the war. But there was another side to the statement, and he hoped that in their expenditure the Government would be strictly economical and that every department would be searched for retrenchment. He hoped the extra taxation which was necessary to meet present contingencies would be removed as quickly as possible.

SIR E. P. MORRIS replied to one or two points made by the Leader of the Opposition. He desired to put himself on record as stating that all obligations undertaken by the Opposition had been more than lived up to, and they had been very generous in their dealing with the Government. Referring to Mr. Kent's statement that the Opposition continuously condemned the financial policy of the Government, he said that he was still ready, and when the time came would be fully prepared, to defend the Government's policy. The public accounts had been thoroughly ventilated, and he was prepared to justify every expenditure. The affairs of the Colony were conducted now on as sound commercial and economical principles as by any previous Government. Every year except last, there had been surpluses from a tariff for which this Government was in no way responsible but which had

been introduced by a previous administration. Last year, in accordance with a pledge to the country, the duty was taken off certain articles of food, but despite that he had no doubt if conditions had continued normal another surplus would have been obtained. Unfortunately, the great money stringency which was felt all over the world had its effect here, and as a result there was no development; indeed retrenchment in some of the large enterprises took place. The Government had spent large sums of money, it was true, but the revenues justified the expenditure and the country demanded it. All the money had gone in giving new and better services to the country—lighthouses, schoolhouses, better roads, marine works, education, etc.—indeed, the Government had to do what should have been done fifty years before. He, however, believed that things were not nearly so bad as some people liked to picture them. Our people had large investments and prepared for the rainy day; and he looked forward to an early return of prosperous times. The fishery might be considered a normal one, and when the difficulties of exchange which now presented themselves were obviated, he believed there would be good markets for our fish and the high price would to some extent make up for the shortage. He saw no reason to despair. He believed that a very great development would take place here when conditions became normal. The Government is even now considering a huge contract with a company which wishes to use our great lime properties for fertiliser purposes. He would not continue the discussion any further, however, as there would be opportunity to defend the Government's polity during the regular session next year.

MR. COAKER associated himself with the position taken by Mr. Kent, and asked for retrenchment in the Civil Service. Revenue was necessary to meet our obligations, and if his party had been in power, he said, they would have to do the same thing.

September 7, 1914.

PROROGATION

St. John's Daily News, Sept. 8, '14.

Assent was given by the Governor of Newfoundland in His Majesty's name to the following Bills:—

1. An Act respecting Inquiries into Matters of Public Importance.

2. An Act to enable the Governor-in-Council during the existence of a State of War, to take possession of food-stuffs unreasonably withheld.

3. An Act respecting the Provision of Wireless Telegraphy on Steamers engaged in the Trade of the Colony.

4. An Act to confer certain powers upon the Governor-in-Council.

5. An Act respecting a Volunteer Force in this Colony.

6. An Act respecting the Exportation of Timber.

7. An Act to authorise the Governor-in-Council to raise a Temporary Loan in certain cases.

8. An Act for raising a sum of Money by Loan for the maintenance and equipment of a Volunteer Force.

9. An Act to increase the Revenue by the imposition of certain duties on the Estates of Deceased Persons.

10. An Act further to amend the Revenue Act 1905.

11. An Act to conserve the Commercial and Financial Interests of the Colony.

12. An Act respecting Stamp Duties.

SPEECH FROM THE THRONE

Mr. President and Honourable Gentlemen of the Legislative Council:

Mr. Speaker and Gentlemen of the Honourable House of Assembly:

I thank you for the speedy and effective manner in which you have dealt with the various matters submitted to you. I earnestly trust the duration of the war may be so brief as to render it unnecessary to invoke the aid of some of these wise measures, though they have been all framed with a view to stabilitate the country and the Empire of which we are a part: It has been a special gratification to me to observe the splendid unanimity existing among your members. The example thus set cannot but be of great value, not alone for our own people in the period of trial which confronts us, but to the whole Empire, as further evidence of the unity of the British Dominions.

Mr. Speaker and Gentlemen of the Hon. House of Assembly:

I thank you for the appropriations you have made, not alone to cover our defence contribution, but for the maintenance

of the Public Service, as the impairment of the provision previously assured is so seriously threatened by the war.

Mr. President and Honourable Gentlemen of the Legislative Council :

Mr. Speaker and Gentlemen of the Honourable House of Assembly :

In relieving you from further attendance upon a session which, though short, must at this season have greatly inconvenienced many of you, I fervently trust that Divine Providence may ever guide you and all upon whom rests the responsibility of directing the affairs of our Empire and ensuring the peace and happiness of those who dwell therein. I further hope that before we meet again victory will crown the arms of Great Britain and her Allies

OTHER SPEECHES, STATEMENTS, AND PUBLIC NOTICES

July 31, 1914.

Yesterday afternoon Mr. George M. Barr received the accompanying message from his Liverpool agents :— *St. John's Daily News,* Aug. 1, '14.

'Stop buying lobsters; developments justify now. If war is declared, Germany and all other European powers will be involved. Not possible to insure, blockade and development of affairs will cause complete stoppage of trade. Insure against war risks all your fish shipments. Telegraph particulars of goods on passage to Continent. Discontinue shipping till insurance has been effected on shipments. Await instructions before proceeding further. German bankers have withdrawn banking facilities owing to the existing conditions. Germany and Russia are principal markets and war now looked on as inevitable. Impossible to carry shipment into North Sea ports or to obtain banking facilities. Outlook for lobster trade very bad.'

August 2, 1914.

NOTICE TO ROYAL NAVAL RESERVE

Early yesterday morning, Commander MacDermott of H.M.S. *Calypso* was apprised that the Admiralty had issued an order calling the Royal Naval Reserves to active duty, and was instructed to put the order in force here forthwith. . . . *St. John's Daily News,* Aug. 3, '14.

The order posted about the city, and as issued by the Admiralty, reads as follows :—

Special Admiralty Order—Mobilisation of Royal Naval Reserve Men called out for service in the Royal Navy.

His Majesty the King having issued his proclamation ordering and directing that Royal Naval Volunteers (commonly known as the Royal Naval Reserve) under the Royal Naval Reserve Act 1859, or so many or such part of them as the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty may direct, be called into

active service. Notice is hereby given that the men in the Newfoundland Royal Naval Reserve are required to report themselves in person forthwith on board His Majesty's ship *Calypso*.

Men at sea, or for other unavoidable cause unable to attend as above, must report themselves as soon as possible on board His Majesty's ship *Calypso*. Men are to appear in uniform and bring their certificates R.N. 2 and any necessaries with them. Reasonable expenses incurred in travelling to the rendezvous will be allowed. Men serving in the Royal Navy for a period of naval training will continue in active service. Any man failing to report without delay in compliance with this order will be liable to arrest as a deserter.

By command of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty.

NOTICE TO FRENCH RESERVISTS

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 3, '14.

General mobilisation of the French Army and Navy commenced yesterday, and at the request of the French Consul, M. Suzor, we take this opportunity to inform French residents or fishermen in Newfoundland, that every available reserve man must report himself to his home quarters, according to the instructions of his military papers. Full information and passage money, if required, will be provided at once by the French Consulate in St. John's. So far as Newfoundland is concerned, this call to the colours will affect few, as the number of French subjects engaged in the fisheries is small; but similar instructions have gone to St. Pierre, and are being spread abroad on the Grand Banks. Almost every man of the French banking fleet belongs to the Naval Reserve of the Republic, and the issuing of this order will involve the virtual abandonment of the French fishery for 1914. Newfoundlanders will wish the fishing fleet *bon voyage* and good fortune.

August 4, 1914.

MESSAGE OF SIR E. P. MORRIS, PRIME MINISTER

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 4, '14.

To Sir Hugh Graham, *Montreal Star*, Montreal.

Newfoundland is one with the whole Empire to-night. Naval Reserves are coming in from all quarters of the country,

and are ready to go on board Britain's Dreadnoughts to fight the battles of the Empire, and we are one with the British Government in the position they have taken to-night. No part of the Empire is more loyal to the flag than the oldest and most loyal portion of Britain's Dominions, Newfoundland.

E. P. MORRIS.

NOTICE TO LEGION OF FRONTIERSMEN

All members of the above corps will report for duty, if required, and give present address not later than Tuesday, 4th August (to-day) at 8 P.M. Special drill. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 4, '14.

E. W. VERE HOLLOWAY, *Lieutenant Q.M., Secretary.*

August 5, 1914.

An official announcement from His Excellency the Governor, received last night, states that war has been declared; the customary proclamation will be issued this morning. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 5, '14.

LETTER FROM FRENCH CONSUL, CONCERNING FRENCH NAVAL RESERVISTS

Editor, 'St. John's Daily News.'

DEAR SIR,—I read in some papers of this capital an announcement that 'the French Consul has received a message advising him that orders have been sent from Paris not to proceed with the mobilisation of the French Naval Reserves.' *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 6, '14.

Although it is true that—for obvious reasons—the fishermen actually on the banks have been left free of their movements, I need hardly say that this special and very limited order has nothing to do with the general mobilisation of Naval Reserves, which are responding to the call in the noblest manner.

Moreover, judging by the reports from St. Pierre, and by the attitude of the French Reserves at present in St. John's, it will now be, even for the fishermen on the banks, a matter of voluntary instead of compulsory service.—Very sincerely,

P. SUZOR, *French Consul.*

St. John's, August 5, 1914.

WARNING FROM LLOYD'S

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 6, '14.

Lloyd's Agents here, Bowring Bros., Ltd., have received the following message from Lloyd's, London :—

'Notify British shipping Admiralty advise all ships to abandon regular tracks and advise other British ships.'

NOTICE OF GENERAL AMNESTY TO FRENCH DESERTERS

August 10, 1914.

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 11, '14.

A general amnesty for all acts anterior to the 2nd of August 1914 is granted to all deserters of the French Army and Navy, as well as of merchant vessels, that have reported or will report voluntarily to this Consulate before the 15th of September 1914.

Besides passage money for the reserves, this Consulate will provide the financial aid that may be necessary for the support of the families of reserve men.

P. SUZOR,
French Consul for Newfoundland and Dependencies.

SPEECH OF SIR E. P. MORRIS, PRIME MINISTER

ibid.

Sir E. P. Morris pointed out that the object of the meeting, [in the Council Chamber], which was merely preliminary, was to arrange for a public meeting to be held on Wednesday night in the Church Lads' Brigade Armoury, to be presided over by His Excellency the Governor. He pointed out that England was now in a state of war, fighting with France and Russia against Germany and Austria; that in the struggle was involved the existence of the British Empire of 500,000,000 people, and that less than one-tenth of that number were paying the cost of the whole defence of the Empire. Also that the trade disorganisation and other evil effects which must flow from the war, creating national and individual damage, will be minimised to a very large extent by the ready con-

tribution which can be given His Majesty's Government in bringing about victory.

The Prime Minister felt satisfied that, as far as trade and commerce were concerned, in a very short time there would be a decisive naval battle in favour of England, which would confine the theatre of war to the Continent and [Germany] would then in no way harass the trade, as the British Navy would be able to patrol, with perfect safety, the trade routes of the Empire; that already we were contributing to the defence of the Empire by our Naval Reserves, which had now been in existence about twenty years, but that further aid was necessary. He read correspondence which had taken place between the Governor and the Secretary of State for the Colonies, and he proposed that a public meeting should be held on Wednesday next in order to give the citizens themselves an opportunity of dealing with the matter, and at which meeting a citizens' defence association or volunteer corps could be formally established.

August 12, 1914.

FORMATION OF PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION OF NEWFOUNDLAND

SPEECHES OF THE GOVERNOR OF NEWFOUNDLAND, THE PRIME MINISTER, THE FRENCH CONSUL, AND OTHERS, AT THE CHURCH LADS' BRIGADE ARMOURY, ST. JOHN'S

The Prime Minister briefly stated the object of the meeting, and requested that His Excellency take the chair. The Governor did so, and thanked the gathering for the reception accorded him. He stated the present question was the most momentous one in the history of our country. England had been forced into war by Germany, but she would take up the challenge and give her war with full and overwhelming measure and show that we are Britons of the old stamp. The German people, he believed, did not want to fight, but were driven into it by a military clique, and when she sues for peace, as undoubtedly she will, the people will demand a democratic government. They have been forced to duty with but little heart. Their Government is a curse to the world, and has allowed the people no voice in such issues as the present. The mailed fist has been raised by imitators, but really unworthy

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 13, '14.

followers of the great Bismarck who are swollen with vanity. Bismarck took care to attack weaker people in his footpad business, but his successors now have met their match, their bluff has been called. We have to arm in self-defence. Germany's dream was to seize the north of France, later distribute it among her little friends as she thought fit, garrison England, and make Britons her subjects. From recent despatches we learn that the military leaders of Germany proposed to be in Brussels by August 5, but they have been disappointed. The splendid pluck of the Belgians has disposed otherwise. It behoves all Britishers to aid the Mother Country in speedily settling the trouble, so that the world may again progress peaceably, and Newfoundland should do her part. If we do not, then, good-bye to our claim of the oldest and most loyal Colony. 'In my telegram to the Home Government,' continued His Excellency, 'I stated we were poor in money and rich in men; men who are accustomed to meet all difficulties without wavering. I pledged myself that Newfoundland would furnish 500 men, but I hope the number will be 5000. The struggle may be desperate, but we will win "hands down" and I hope our folks will get in the front so they may have a chance to uphold our reputation.' He then called upon Lieutenant-Colonel Rendell, of the Church Lads' Brigade, to move the first resolution.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL RENDELL had no doubt of the patriotic sentiments throughout the island, and believed there would be no difficulty in forming such a body as called for. Our lads, through their drilling in the armouries and their sports, were in splendid condition to go to the front. Differences as to athletics must be laid aside, and all should now join in upholding the prestige of the Empire. The Church Lads' Brigade armoury and equipment he then offered for the use of the proposed force as long as needed, after which he proposed the following resolution:—

'Whereas, in common with every other portion of the British Empire, Newfoundland is anxious to assist in every possible way in the justifiable war in which the Empire, of which we are proud to be a part, is now engaged: And whereas this Colony, through His Excellency the Governor, has offered several hundred efficient trained men for enlistment for service abroad in the present war: And whereas it is desirable that

steps should be taken to provide for the enlistment of these men, as well as their equipment and maintenance: Be it therefore resolved that a Committee of twenty-five citizens, with power to add to their numbers, be appointed to take such steps as may be deemed necessary for enlisting and equipping these men, and in this respect to act in conjunction with the Government of the Colony and His Excellency the Governor, and that the magistrates in the outports be asked to take similar steps. Be it further resolved that the appointment of this Committee be left in the hands of His Excellency the Governor.'

HON. R. A. SQUIRES, in seconding the motion in place of Major Hutchings of the Methodist Guards, who was unavoidably absent, referred to the enthusiasm of that body, and of their commander. As a Colony, he said, we are indebted to the Governor for his interest in this movement. This meeting was a direct result of his personal efforts, and he believed all would carry the resolution enthusiastically. It was a shame that one tenth of Britain should be called upon to defend the Empire. It was now up to us to play our part and show more than lip loyalty by personal sacrifice if necessary. He had received a message from a northern town that ten of the men there had been called to the reserves. As they joined ship for here they were cheered by the whole population, and no regret at their leaving was expressed because they left to fight for the Empire. That 's the true spirit. We are not fighting for self-aggrandisement, but because of the insults heaped upon us by a nation aiming at the destruction of England's power at sea. This is a war of defence, not of offence, and we have to hold the supremacy of the seas. He then asked that all join in fighting for the Empire in the war which had been thrust on her, and hoped the resolution would be passed.

CAPTAIN WAKEFIELD supported the motion, stating the Empire was now fighting for her existence. Canada is sending volunteers: 'where are we to come in?' Referring to the Frontiersmen, which he represented, he believed at least 150 of them were ready to fight as soon as they got the word. The services of some were lost through their joining the Naval Reserve, but they could not fight in two forces. He estimated it would take $30,000 to send 200 men to England and make some provision for their families. He thought Newfoundland

would fully prove her devotion as ever to the Motherland. His Excellency then put the resolution, referring in praiseworthy terms to the proposer, seconder, and supporter, and it was passed amid deafening applause.

MAJOR CARTY stated the C.C.C.[1] would stand shoulder to shoulder with the other brigades in the fight, sinking whatever differences may exist between them, and offered the use of the Armoury and the services of the C.C.C. officers as trainers for the new force. He then proposed the resolution given below.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL PATERSON, in a brief address, referred to the situation, and said all should act on Nelson's famous signal, 'England expects that every man this day will do his duty.'

DR. MACPHERSON, on behalf of the St. John's Ambulance Brigade Overseas, said he had pledges from enough of the local divisions to fully bear our portion of treatment of the injured at home or abroad.

His Excellency then read the following resolution proposed by Major Carty:—'Whereas, in common with every other portion of the British Empire, Newfoundland is anxious to assist in every possible way in the justifiable war in which the Empire, of which we are proud to be a part, is now engaged: And whereas this Colony, through His Excellency the Governor, has offered to recruit serviceable men between eighteen and thirty-six years of age to enrol themselves in training for home defence, wherever corps instructors are available: And whereas it is desirable that steps should be taken to provide for the enlistment of these men as well as their equipment and maintenance: Be it resolved that the Committee provided for in the former resolution be empowered to take such steps as may be deemed necessary for enlisting and equipping these men; and also, in this respect, to act in conjunction with the Government of the Colony and His Excellency the Governor.'

RIGHT HON. SIR E. P. MORRIS followed, and pointed out that the meeting had been called to endorse what the Government had already decided on. As soon as war was declared they had pledged the assistance of Newfoundland, and we now had the opportunity of earning in the future the claim that we had stood by Britain when needed. The Naval Reserve had been formed and carried on under great financial difficulties,

[1] [Catholic Cadet Corps.]

but when despotism represented by Germany is overthrown, we can claim a share in the victory. This war, as His Excellency stated, was provoked, not by the common people but by a despot, and England was now engaged to defend herself. It is dreadful to consider the consequences if we lose, but we cannot lose. We have the ships, men, and money, and the assistance of France and Russia, the latter being the only country which in 1812 withstood the advance of Napoleon. After this war Britain will see to it that nothing similar will take place in the future. We have to rely on friends here for money to send men to the front, but every resource will be called on for the purpose. He hoped all would become recruiting officers, and later be able to congratulate ourselves on the great victory.

M. SUZOR, the French Consul, who was present, was introduced to the gathering by His Excellency, and received a tremendous ovation. It was hoped the band would have been able to play the 'Marseillaise' in his honour, but failing that, the audience started to sing it. Unfortunately it was not well known, but what was lost in words or tune was made up in vigour and enthusiasm. At the request of M. Suzor, His Excellency thanked the gathering for the reception accorded him, and took advantage of the opportunity to pay a glowing tribute to the great French Army.

August 14, 1914.

INTERVIEW OF THE EDITOR OF *ST. JOHN'S DAILY NEWS* WITH THE PRIME MINISTER

As far as the commercial position of this country being at present seriously affected by the war now in progress is concerned, nothing has yet happened to create alarm. It is essentially a time when people should keep their heads and make haste slowly, at the same time doing everything possible to ease the situation in the interests of all. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 15, '14.

Since the outbreak of the war I have been in daily touch and communication with the managers of our banks and the members of the trade who move the produce of the country. I am daily advised as to what is being done in London, New York, Montreal, and other places. Only last Wednesday I had a long interview with the President of the Board of Trade,

Mr. J. S. Munn, and on Thursday with a deputation of the Board of Trade, consisting of the President of the Board of Trade, Mr. Munn, ex-President Mr. W. G. Gosling, Messrs. Charles P. Ayre and John Browning, at which conference all the questions now outstanding were discussed. On last Sunday I arranged for a meeting, presided over by the Minister of Finance and Customs, Hon. M. P. Cashin, at which were present the bank managers, as well as the Hon. John Harvey, Hon. John Harris, and Hon. R. K. Bishop. I have also had the advantage of discussing the situation with the Hon. Edgar Bowring, Hon. A. F. Goodridge, Hon. John Anderson, Mr. A. E. Hickman, Mr. Hawes, and others. Up to the present time, however, no recommendation or no suggestion has been made to justify the Government in adopting any extraordinary measures.

In England, at the outbreak of the war, the Government authorised the postponement of the payment of bills of exchange for one month. This is generally known as a moratorium. In Canada no such moratorium has been proclaimed. The Government in Canada, however, have taken power to declare a moratorium if circumstances should arise hereafter to justify it, but so far it has not been proclaimed. They have, however, permitted banks in Canada to make payment in bank notes instead of gold, and have declared the notes of the Canadian banks legal tender.

I learn, also, to-day, that arrangements have been made by the British Government to facilitate the financing of the Anglo-North American commerce. What the extent of this is I am unable to say at present, but it is in some way connected with the transfer of gold, due by the United States since the outbreak of war, for exchange in England, and which is now being sent to Ottawa.

If, at any time, a feeling of unrest or disquiet should arise, the Government are ready to adopt any reasonable measures on the lines of the action taken by the British and Canadian Governments to ease the financial situation in this country; and I have so informed the trade, the individual members of the trade, the Board of Trade, and the bank managers of this city.

The matter of supreme importance for Newfoundland to-day, however, is the purchase and sale of our fishery

produce. Cod-fishing is our currency, and every obstacle in the way of fullest realisation by our people of their harvest of the sea must be removed, and to aid in this the Government will assist the trade by every facility at their disposal to prevent any reduction in the price of fish. Up to the present time the matter has not become acute, but the Government are carefully watching the situation, and are in touch with the banks and the business men who purchase and move our fish, and we are prepared to put into effect any measure tending in any way to improve the situation which the consensus of opinion considers to be desirable.

As I have already said at the beginning, it is a time when we must all keep our heads and work together, and, by keeping calm and working in the common cause, I anticipate that ultimately we will come out all right. The situation is not of our own making; it has been produced by causes in the making of which we have had no say, and their evil effects will only be minimised and lessened by co-operation and trust in one another. The man who acts the part of the alarmist, the person who tightens the strings of commerce, is no friend of Newfoundland to-day. If ever there was a time in our history when we have to be generous and lenient in business transactions, and when party prejudice should be buried for the general interest, that time has now arrived. Even at the risk of this statement being misrepresented, I would point out that in the Mother Country, Government and Opposition, the Nationalist and Ulsterite have combined together for the general wellbeing. In Canada the Leader of the Opposition, Sir Wilfrid Laurier, has publicly proclaimed his intention of supporting the Borden Government in everything it does in this crisis. What the Government of Newfoundland has done thus far has been for the purpose of showing that this, the oldest Colony of the Empire, is in complete concord with the Mother Country and the Overseas Dominions, and if the Government's course is made the subject of partisan criticism they can only leave it to the people of the country to be the judges in the matter, and go on in the course they have pursued, and with the confidence that the loyal and patriotic people of Newfoundland will endorse their action.

August 18, 1914.

THE PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION: MEETING AND REPORTS

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 19, '14.

The second meeting of the Patriotic Committee was held in the Church Lads' Brigade Armoury last night, His Excellency the Governor taking the chair at 8.10 o'clock. The following report was presented by the Nominating Committee :—

TO HIS EXCELLENCY SIR WALTER E. DAVIDSON, K.C.M.G., CHAIRMAN OF THE PATRIOTIC COMMITTEE

May it please your Excellency,—The Sub-Committee appointed to nominate additional members to serve on the Patriotic Committee respectfully beg to report :—

(1) Your Sub-committee are of opinion that the Patriotic Committee should, as far as possible, be general and representative of all interests in the community: to that end we append hereto a list of the names of those gentlemen whom we would nominate as additional members. This list is not, however, by any means complete, and we beg to be permitted to propose some further names at a subsequent meeting.

(2) Your Sub-committee have nominated only those who are resident in St. John's, but we are of opinion that branches should also be established in the various electoral districts, and that such branches should be called after the name of the district in which they are respectively situated.

(3) We are of opinion that the various magistrates throughout the island should be requested to call meetings at their several centres for this purpose; and if this suggestion meet with the approval of your Excellency and the Committee we are prepared as a Sub-committee to communicate with the magistrates and co-operate with them in the work of organisation.

Dated at St. John's, this 18th day of August 1914.

Respectfuly submitted.

J. A. CLIFT. F. J. MORRIS. W. J. ELLIS.

Appended to the report, which was received and adopted, was a list of some 250 names, comprising those of the Premier,

ex-Premier, members of the Legislature, the City Commissioner, city clergymen, officers of societies and unions, and citizens.

The report of the Finance Committee was then presented by the Hon. Edgar Bowring, and read by the Hon. Secretary, Dr. Burke, as follows :—

The Finance Committee appointed by the Patriotic Committee of Newfoundland beg to report that, having held two meetings, they recommend the following for approval :—

(1) That funds for the recruiting, training, equipment, transport, and pay of the proposed Newfoundland Regiment be provided by the Government until the force be handed over to the British Government.

(2) That in support of any obligations assumed by the Government, the Patriotic Committee undertake to raise, by voluntary contributions, a fund which may be set aside for the purpose of assisting the families of those at the front (both soldiers and sailors), or for any other object or purpose in connection with the movement.

(3) That Volunteers forwarded by the proper authorities from the outports be given free passage to St. John's.

(4) That any applicant for service forwarded by the proper authorities but not accepted at headquarters, be given free passage back to his home.

(5) That the question of insurance against death or injury should be taken into consideration.

The report was discussed section by section, amongst the speakers being Sir Joseph Outerbridge, Messrs. John Harvey, John Browning, P. T. McGrath, and Captain M'Kay. Sir Joseph urged that provision should be made for the families of the Naval Reservists, and asked that the Finance Committee should take this matter under consideration. This will be done.

Hon. J. R. Bennett, convener of the Proclamation Committee, said that the Committee was not yet in a position to give a final report.

Major Franklin, for the Recruiting Committee, presented an interim report, and said that the Committee would await the issuing of the proclamation before finalising their report.

Both the Nominating and the Recruiting Committees asked for franking privileges.

Mr. Herbert Outerbridge stated that the Equipment Committee was not yet ready to report.

Mr. W. H. Rennie handed in the report of the Musketry Committee, which was approved. He asked for authority for certain necessary expenditures. Permission was given.

Hon. E. R. Bowring, W. D. Reid, and J. C. Crosbie have offered free transportation on their steamboat and railway lines for Volunteers.

Meeting adjourned at 9.35 until to-morrow, Thursday, at 8 o'clock.

August 20, 1914.

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 21, '14.

The Patriotic Committee, to the number of about one hundred, met pursuant to adjournment, at the Church Lads' Brigade Armoury last night, His Excellency the Governor presiding. Seated at the Governor's right was Sir Joseph Outerbridge, and at the end of the table were the Prime Minister, Sir Edward Morris, and the Leader of the Opposition, Mr. Kent. . . . The Government's offer was confirmed by the following letters from the Colonial Secretary :—

Department Colonial Secretary,
August 20, 1914.

SIR,—I have the honour to inform you that the Executive Government have decided to pay for the equipment, transportation, and other expenses in connection with the Newfoundland Regiment, and also to pay the men composing the same, who go to the front, the sum of $1 per day. The Government have decided not to ask the British Government to contribute anything towards the cost of this regiment while on service.—I have the honour to be, Sir, your obedient servant, . . .

JOHN R. BENNETT, *Colonial Secretary.*

HON. E. R. BOWRING, Chairman Finance Committee,
Patriotic Committee.

Department Colonial Secretary,
August 20, 1914.

SIR,—Referring to my letter addressed to you this afternoon, I would add, that payment of the amounts required in

connection with the expense and maintenance of the Newfoundland Regiment will be made by the Government to the Finance Committee from time to time as required, the administration of the said fund being in the hands of the Finance Committee, subject to the audit of the Auditor-General for the Colony.

JOHN R. BENNETT, *Colonial Secretary.*

HON. E. R. BOWRING, Chairman Finance Committee, Patriotic Committee.

Before the meeting concluded, His Excellency read the following despatch which he was sending to the Secretary of State for the Colonies, which he hoped would meet with approval :—

'SECRETARY OF STATE, London.

'With reference to my telegram of August 8, Newfoundland Regiment, my Ministers desire me to state that the Newfoundland Government will meet the full cost of the contingent of 500 men. This contingent will leave at the end of September. It is my earnest request that they may be sent to the Guards Depot and attached to the Foot Guards. The rank and file are specially selected men, hardy and handy, enduring and disciplined, and crack shots. The officers with local ranks of captains, lieutenants, and sub-lieutenants hope to be granted substantive rank for the period of the war.'

He also referred to the latest news from the front, which he thought was not too good, suggesting that the Germans, finding themselves unable to penetrate through Luxemburg on the south of Belgium, had made a big turning movement north of Brussels, where the resistance was not so great, the French apparently anticipating that their invasion would take place through Alsace-Lorraine. He anticipated that the first blow of the war would fall on the British Expeditionary Force, numbering about 120,000, who might probably be compelled to fall back on other defences, because of the weight of numbers against them. He thought, therefore, we might be prepared to learn of some reverses at first.

The meeting then adjourned *sine die.*

August 22, 1914.

APPEAL FOR SUBSCRIPTIONS TO PATRIOTIC FUND[1]

[1] [See p. 64.]

TO THE PEOPLE OF NEWFOUNDLAND

St. John's Daily News, Aug. 29, '14.

FELLOW COUNTRYMEN,—The Mother Country has been compelled to go to war to preserve, among other things, the rights and liberties which we all enjoy as citizens of the Empire. Newfoundland, in common with the other Overseas Dominions, has pledged itself to assist the Mother Country with material help in the present extremity.

This is to take the form of an increase of the Naval Reserve from 600 to 1000 men, and the raising of a regiment of 500 men for land service abroad, and the Colony has further undertaken to assume the full cost of this contingent of 500 men during the course of the war.

It is our duty and privilege, as loyal and patriotic citizens of the Empire, to voluntarily assist in supporting this movement and to raise a fund for that purpose. This Patriotic Fund will be applied primarily in making provision for the dependent relatives of those who undertake to fight the battles of the country and the Empire by land and sea, and afterwards to such other objects connected therewith as may be deemed desirable.

The need is great, and, in the confident expectation that this appeal will evoke a prompt and generous response, we respectfully but strongly urge all who can to give as liberally as possible towards this most deserving object.

The undersigned, on behalf of the Patriotic Committee appointed to undertake the organisation and despatching of this Regiment, appeal for subscriptions towards this Fund. Contributions may be sent to the nearest Magistrate, to the branches of any of the Banks doing business in the Colony, or to the Treasurer, J. S. Munn, Esq., and they will be gratefully acknowledged.

[SIR] W. E. DAVIDSON, *Governor.*
[SIR] E. P. MORRIS, *Prime Minister.*
J. M. KENT, *Leader of the Opposition.*
E. R. BOWRING, *Chairman Finance Committee.*

August 25, 1914.

NOTICE TO APPLICANTS FOR COMMISSIONS IN FIRST NEWFOUNDLAND REGIMENT

Applicants for commissions in the 1st Newfoundland Regiment will apply by letter to His Excellency the Governor through the Recruiting Committee. In the application full particulars of age and record of any service in His Majesty's Forces or Brigades should be stated. Applicants should state in their letter whether they volunteer for foreign or for home service. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 25, '14.

[SIR] W. E. DAVIDSON,
Governor.

NOTICE TO MOTOR CAR AND MOTOR CYCLE OWNERS

As there will be considerable work of all kinds to be done before the contingent for Foreign Service can be ready for embarkation, I would be obliged if all owners of motor cars and motor cycles, who are willing to help the training camp in orderly and other work, will send in their names to the A.D.C. Government House; they will then be notified of days and hours during which they will be useful for duty. *St. John's Daily News*, Aug. 25, '14.

[SIR] W. E. DAVIDSON,
Governor.

August 31, 1914.

WOMEN'S PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION MEETING: SPEECHES OF LADY DAVIDSON AND THE GOVERNOR

LADY DAVIDSON: Friends, let me first say how very glad I am to welcome you all here to-day, and to see how many have responded to my appeal—an appeal which I verily believe was not necessary; for I am convinced that it was only a call that was required, and you were all waiting ready to respond. I felt sure that there were many wishing to work or do something for our brave soldiers and sailors, who are risking their very *St. John's Daily News*, Sept. 1, '14.

lives for us, and who yet do not know the best ways of helping, or what the needs of those at the front might be. That this is a unique time, when we are required to make personal sacrifices such as we have never thought or dreamt of before, there can be no doubt. It is the best we can offer those who are enduring daily hardships and giving their health and their strength for our beloved Empire. In the Mother Country, the Queen and Queen Alexandra have sent out urgent appeals that all women should help to their utmost and in every way that is possible. The Queen herself is the organiser of a large working guild; she started it when she was Princess of Wales, and in November of each year, when all the presidents throughout England have to collect and send in their country contributions to St. James' Palace, where the Queen has her collecting and distributing centre, she goes there daily herself and inspects the articles sent in, supervising their unpacking and arranging and organising their distribution. I have been told by one of her Ladies-in-Waiting, that the Queen knows quite well, and remembers, which districts send in good and which bad contributions, and occasionally she requests that such and such president should be told that the contribution from her district is not up to the mark. My mother is a president of a Surrey district, and when I was at home we all had to help, when her contributions came in, to arrange and repack them—generally about 1000 articles, and she would get fussed, and worried as to whether her contribution to Q.M.N.G. was up to the mark. I am glad to say she never had any adverse criticism. Now the Queen has asked the presidents of this Guild to send in double the quantity and to bear in mind that a large quantity of articles are now required for the sick and wounded. We have received an appeal from the St. John Ambulance Association, asking for things for the sick and wounded, and they send a list of the things required, which comprise shirts, cotton and flannel, not flannelette, bed jackets, pyjama sleeping suits, pillows, pillow slips and old linen, not old clothes. Now I feel sure we women in Newfoundland can help in this way with our work, as well as in other ways, and we shall do so best and most effectively if we join together and co-operate. To do this I consider that we shall do best to organise ourselves into an association. If all those who are here this afternoon will join this association, and will enter their names and addresses and

the class of work they will do—either sewing or knitting, or both —in the book that will be handed round at the close of this meeting, it will help matters very considerably, and it will thus enable us to judge to a certain degree how much work we shall be able to undertake and arrange to provide materials accordingly. Later on, there will be our own Newfoundland regiment to think of and to provide for; the least they can do with will be two pairs of socks apiece per quarter—that is eight pairs of socks apiece a year and about six shirts. This means 4000 pairs of socks alone. I read a letter from Mrs. Harcourt, wife of the Secretary of State for the Colonies, in which she says that arrangements have been made between the Colonial Office, the Victoria League, and the War Office that contributions of necessary articles sent from the Colonies for their own contingents will be received by the Victoria League, and forwarded by them through the War Office to the desired Colonial contingent at the front. I feel sure this will ease the minds of relatives and friends of our splendid little corps going from here, and it will also, I feel sure, serve as an impetus to the relations and friends here to provide the necessary articles, which we ought to have ready to send off in the early months of next year. Now I feel sure that many are thinking,—How are we going to provide the materials required? Well, of course, that is a consideration. I certainly hope that all who can will send in their contributions to those who will be appointed to receive donations. We want them both large and small; and, please take note, nothing is too small if you cannot afford to give more. . . . Then, as the St. John Ambulance Association points out, there is other work for women to-day. Those qualified as nurses should volunteer, and their places be filled during their absence—gratis—by either married nurses who have husbands and families whom they cannot leave, but who can give half a day's work every day in the week, or by retired nurses who have ties here which prevent them from going themselves. Then all those who can should take advantage of the St. John Ambulance Association classes, and train and fit themselves to be of use. They have only to send in their names and classes would soon be arranged. My sister started training by attending the St. John Ambulance Association First-Aid Class; she continued through the whole course as required, and when I was at home last April she was

finishing her training in residence at the Charing Cross Hospital —she had to attend on duty six operations before she got her qualification. I heard from her last mail that she was leaving the very next morning, viz. August 12th, with nineteen other nurses, for the front—their first destination being Brussels, from which place they would be despatched to where they were required. All the best kind of men either have volunteered, or, if they only realised how desperate the situation was, would volunteer, and I feel sure will still do so, and it is the duty of us women to cheer them on and encourage them to go. I do feel this so very strongly. I am a soldier's daughter, a soldier's sister, besides having many other relations and a very great number of friends in the Army, and have spent the greater part of my life among soldiers, and I do feel the call to arms very strongly, and the call comes to us women just as much to do our duty, and there are many ways in which we can and should answer it. I will not keep you any longer now. I know perfectly well how every woman in Newfoundland is going to help, and we will all do our best. We in Newfoundland are all true Britishers through and through, dogged and resolute—and if we start a job we see it through, so let us to work. I will now ask the Governor to give us a short address on the cost of the war and how it may affect Newfoundland.

SIR W. E. DAVIDSON, in opening, read a very inspiring letter from a young woman now in the States, offering her services, in place of those of her aged father residing at Clarke's Beach. She said she had had experience in nursing, and could do many things impossible to the father in raising the flag of old England to victory. She was young, strong and healthy, and would take his place. Continuing, His Excellency said we will win; chiefly because as freemen we will never be slaves. The one idea of this war was to subjugate Britain and take away the wealth of her Empire. On August 4th, the Kaiser said, 'Now we will strike for the supremacy of the world,' and about the same time his Chancellor stated 'necessity knows no law,' meaning that they had been forced into conflict—simply hypocrisy. The Germans claim they can beat France, but that remains to be seen. The Russians will be felt later at the finish of the war, which will be probably the last. No soldiers will ever again consent to being driven into combat as the Germans are at present at the mouth of guns. They

have a large Army on active service, and others, artisans of all classes, preparing to furnish supplies. The naval war, His Excellency said, goes well enough and we will win; that will be mainly British. It was possible a few ships had escaped from the North Sea during darkness, but these will be hunted down. Britain has been on the alert, and two ships to Germany's one were sent to watch them when they visited the Mediterranean, Mexican, and other centres, the past year. At present, we have six British warships practically in speaking distance of St. John's, any one of which can take on two of the Germans. The seizure of ports may not be impossible, but he had no doubt the first clasp would be given our regiment for its relief and the second for the taking of Berlin. He then spoke of the Indian and Irish support. Canada, he believed, would put forward 200,000 men, while Australia and South Africa, our recent enemy, would come forward with larger contingents than expected. He then pointed out the terrible things which would befall us should the Germans win; the officialdom, conscription, and degradations forced upon us, the latter being that we would not be looked upon as soldiers, and would be asked to pay only a stipulated sum while they would find the 'fighters' elsewhere. This idea has been promulgated by leading German military men and writers against Britain. We here will send 500 and may be 2500 to the defence of the Motherland. St. John's alone has furnished the required number 500, but when the people now at the fisheries realised the crisis fully, they will rally to the colours. The Governor closed by stating that the objection of some to the training of our regiment on Sundays had been withdrawn, when it was pointed out that we should lose no opportunity to prepare, and that it would be better in defence of the Empire to shoot than to be shot.

The following resolutions were then moved by Lady Morris, seconded by Lady Horwood, supported by Mrs. W. G. Gosling, and put and adopted:—'Resolved that we do hereby form ourselves into the "Patriotic Association of the Women of Newfoundland," whose object shall be by our work and by all means in our power, to help our men in the defence of the British Empire, and that all women here present shall subscribe their names as members of the Patriotic League of the Women of Newfoundland.'

Mrs. Clift moved, Mrs. V. P. Burke seconded, and Mrs. C. P. Ayre supported the accompanying resolution, which was also adopted :—' Resolved that the Patriotic Association of the Women of Newfoundland does hereby consent to the nomination of the following persons to be on the general committee, with power to add to their number and to form special committees for various purposes.'

September 9, 1914.

PRIME MINISTER'S VISIT TO THE CAMP AT PLEASANTVILLE

St. John's Daily News, Sept. 10, '14.

The Prime Minister spent the afternoon at Pleasantville yesterday, and made a complete inspection of all and every one of its departments. Accompanied by Hon. Mr. Emerson, Sir Edward met the Commandant, Major Franklin, at headquarters at 4 P.M., and under his guidance made a complete examination of the commissariat, the tents where the men live, and particularly the way in which their health is looked after.

A representative of the *Daily News* saw the Prime Minister on his return to town, and learned from him that everything at headquarters was proceeding favourably.

'I was agreeably surprised,' said the Premier, 'at the thoroughness with which everything is being done. I was anxious to learn for myself that there was no serious complaint from the Volunteers — particularly as to the water supply, sanitary matters, their hospital, the food, their bed clothing, the cooking, the clothes they are being supplied with, and their general surroundings, and on the whole, I must say that, as far as a layman can judge of such matters, every department seemed to me to be well supplied and well in hand. The privates all appeared happy and pleased with their treatment, and the officers, understanding that nothing but the best is to be served, are seeing that those furnishing the food and clothes are living up to their contracts. So far everything furnished is of the best. There will be, of course, complaints from time to time, but these will be adjusted as they arise, and each day will witness improvement in every department.

'The main work, learning to shoot straight, is being attended to, and the drill and marches, and exercises taken

regularly, and the fine bracing air will very soon tell on the whole company, and all will realise the moral and physical advantages of the training. I was in converse with a great many of our young soldiers, and all are imbued with the splendid spirit of loyalty to King and Country, and are anxious only to take part in defence of the Empire. A month from now will show a wonderful improvement, but there must be no haste; the work they are embarking on is the most serious they will ever be called on to perform, and it is only just that every opportunity should be given them to properly equip themselves for their task.'

NEWFOUNDLAND PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION

REPORT of His Excellency Sir W. E. DAVIDSON, K.C.M.G., Governor, Chairman of the Patriotic Association of Newfoundland, March 31st, 1915

HONOURABLE MEMBERS OF THE LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL:
MEMBERS OF THE HONOURABLE HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY:

I have the honour, in my capacity as Chairman of the Patriotic Association of Newfoundland, to lay before the Legislature a Report covering the course of the whole 'Volunteer' movement from its inception on August 12th, 1914, to the end of March 1915.

2.—Notification was received on the night of August 4th that war had been forced upon Great Britain by Germany. The Government, having taken counsel as to the duty of the Colony in this supreme crisis in the history of our race, authorised on the 8th *idem* the despatch to the Secretary of State of a telegram in these terms:—

[See p. 2.]

> 'Ministers desire authority to enlist special men for service abroad, by land and sea. Ministers undertake to raise the force of Naval Reservists by October 31st to 1000 efficient men available for Naval Service abroad for one year, and are willing to meet all local expenses.
>
> 'Several hundred men with efficient local Brigade training offer themselves for enlistment for land service abroad. Believe that 500 could be enlisted within one month. Propose to induce serviceable men between eighteen and thirty-six years to enrol themselves in training for home defence wherever corps instructors are available. These would form material for further drafts.'

The Secretary of State, on the 9th *idem*, responded to the offer of Ministers in terms of the following telegram:—

[See p. 3.]

> 'Referring to your telegram of August 8th, His Majesty's Government gladly avail themselves of offer of your

Government to raise troops for land service abroad. Will telegraph later as to Naval Reserve.'

The acceptance of the Government's offer by the Lords Commissioners of Admiralty was received on August 14th, and the action taken thereon is reviewed under paragraphs 11 to 15 of this report. [See p. 4.]

Land Forces

3.—Immediately on the receipt of the acceptance by His Majesty's Government of the Colony's offer to raise troops for the defence of the Empire, steps were taken to convene a public meeting at which should be taken into consideration the question of enlisting citizens for land service abroad and also for the establishment of a Corps for home defence.

The public meeting was held at the Armoury of the Church Lads' Brigade on August 12th, the Governor being in the Chair. . . . [See pp. 37-41.]

4. The Patriotic Committee, having been nominated by the Governor in terms of the first resolution of the public meeting, met for the first time on August 16th in order to give effect to the policy of the Government as endorsed at the public meeting on August 12th. At this meeting the Governor was invited to join the Committee and was appointed Chairman, Sir Joseph Outerbridge was elected Vice-Chairman, and Dr. Vincent Burke Honorary Secretary. At subsequent meetings the chair received the support of the Prime Minister (Sir E. P. Morris), the Leader of the Opposition (Mr. J. M. Kent, K.C.), and the Chief-Justice.

As soon as it was appreciated that the action of the Government would be given the general support of the people, the Committee was designated the 'Patriotic Association of Newfoundland,' and its membership was enlarged as became the importance of an organisation which embraced every town and settlement in the Colony. The important duty of enlarging the membership of the Association was assigned to the Nomination Committee, which was composed of Mr. J. A. Clift, K.C., M.H.A.,* Mr. W. J. Ellis, ex-Mayor of St. John's, and Mr. F. J. Morris, K.C., M.H.A. These gentlemen carried

* [Member of the House of Assembly.]

through their difficult and onerous duties with consummate tact and skill.

5. At the first session of the Association (August 16th) it was decided that its immediate duty was to enlist, equip, and despatch a Newfoundland Contingent, 500 strong, for service abroad. With this object committees were nominated for the following purposes :—(1) To draft a Proclamation calling for Volunteers ; (2) To enlarge the membership of the Association as to cause it to be thoroughly representative ; (3) To organise recruiting and to train Volunteers in military duties ; (4) To examine Volunteers as to their physical fitness for active service ; (5) To provide for their equipment ; (6) To instruct them in musketry ; (7) To devise methods to finance the movement and to control expenditure.

Of these committees, the chief burden both in work and in responsibility has fallen on the Finance Committee, of which the Hon. Edgar Bowring was the first chairman, being succeeded when other public duties called him to England by the Hon. M. P. Cashin, and on the Reserve Force Committee, of which Sir Joseph Outerbridge has been chairman, being replaced during a temporary absence from the Colony by Mr. J. A. Clift, K.C., M.H.A.

[See pp. 46-7.]

6. At its second meeting (August 17th [*sic*]) the Association adopted the recommendations from the Finance Committee, and it is on the lines of these recommendations that the monetary charges incurred in raising the First Newfoundland Regiment have been met. . . .

7. The Newfoundland Government had originally offered to defray the whole cost of a contingent of 500 men ; but the Imperial Government, on the motion of the Army Council, undertook (telegram No. 189 of November 7th) to defray out of Army funds the cost of rations and maintenance and the supply of equipment for the contingent from the date of arrival in the United Kingdom. The Governor was authorised by Ministers to convey their cordial thanks for this generous offer, which they appreciated and accepted. Accordingly, the charges which fall upon the general revenue of Newfoundland are limited to the expenditure within the Colony and to the cost of the transport of the troops by sea to the United Kingdom, together with the pay of the men on active service and any pensions or allowances which may hereafter be

approved by the Legislature. This division of expenditure not only simplifies the system of accounts but also enables the Finance Committee to estimate with some degree of precision the initial and running expenses to be defrayed by the Colony out of the War Budget. These expenses are set out in detail in the Report of the Finance Committee which is hereto appended. (*Annexure No.* 2.[1]) To put the figures briefly, the expenditure incurred until the 19th of March in raising the land forces (the strength of which has risen to a present total of 1273 officers and men) is about $320,000; which sum includes the cost of the original outfit, of preliminary training, and of sea transport. The running expenses of the First Newfoundland Regiment, reckoned at 1000 officers and men, are estimated at a yearly total of $600,000, or $600.00 per man. (*See Annexure No.* 2.)

[1] [Pp. 67-70.]

The scale of pay of all ranks, based on that fixed for the land forces of the Dominion of Canada, is set out in Annexure No. 3. (*See Annexure No.* 3.[2])

[2] [P. 71.]

8. His Majesty's Government, recognising the advantage which the United Kingdom possesses in being able to raise funds on the London market at the cheapest rate, has further undertaken to make advances to the Dominions overseas to cover military expenditure in terms of Treasury Minute of November 17th, 1914 (recorded in Annexure No. 4[3]). The sum allotted to the Colony of Newfoundland (telegram No. 246 of December 24th) under this Minute—which has received the approval of the Imperial Government—is £200,000, which may be drawn whenever required by this Government, and of which £100,000 has been transferred to the credit of the Colonial Government on March 27th. (*See Annexure No.* 4.)

[3] [Pp. 71-3.]

9. The original offer of a land contingent of 500 men has developed into the provision of a much larger force than was originally contemplated, at the outbreak of war.

The original contingent, numbering 540 of all ranks, was immediately raised, and, after six weeks in camp at Quidi Vidi, left St. John's on October 5th. After undergoing further training on Salisbury Plains and at Fort George near Inverness, this First Contingent has now gone into garrison at Edinburgh Castle. In November the Army Council intimated that, after experience during three months of war, reinforcements should be available to replace casualties, and that in the case of

infantry the reserve should amount to fifty per cent. when troops take the field; and the Secretary of State on behalf of the Army Council inquired if the Government could supply the necessary quota, and, if so, when the first reinforcements would be available. The question being referred to the Association, it was decided on November 30th, with the approval of the Government, which had through the action of His Majesty's Government been relieved of the cost of the maintenance of the contingent, to reopen enlistment for foreign service.

The response to the second call to arms exceeded all anticipation, and it soon became clear that, while maintaining a very high standard of physical fitness, the number of Volunteers offering would far exceed the 250 men immediately required. It was then decided, in order to obviate the grave disadvantages under which our contingent laboured of not being a complete unit, to accept recruits so as to raise the contingent to the strength of a complete battalion of 1080 officers and men, together with—at all events—one reserve company of 250 officers and men.

The Reports of the Reserve Force Committee and of the Musketry Instruction Committee, containing a great deal of interesting matter succinctly put, appear in Annexures Nos. 5 [1] and 6.[2] (*See Annexures Nos. 5 and 6.*)

[1] [Pp.73-5.]

10. It must afford to the people of Newfoundland legitimate pride to know from the subjoined telegram (No. 213 of Nov. 27th) how fully the assistance which the Colony has been able to render is recognised in the Motherland. The Secretary of State telegraphs :—

[2] [Not reproduced here.]

> 'I am about to lay before Parliament further correspondence regarding the magnificent gifts which have so far been offered from the various parts of the Empire, and before doing so I desire on behalf of His Majesty's Government again to express their deep gratitude to all who have so generously and in such diverse ways both publicly and privately contributed to the requirements of His Majesty's Government and their Allies for purposes of alleviating the distress caused by the war and bringing it to a successful issue.'

In closing this section of the Report, it is appropriate to record the terms in which the Government recorded its appreciation of the financial aid proffered by His Majesty's

Government. The Governor was authorised to telegraph as follows :—

> 'My Ministers desire to express to you their deep appreciation of the offer conveyed in your telegram of 24th December, which affords them welcome facilities in meeting their current war expenditure. They desire further to express the keen wish of all in Newfoundland in such little measure as is possible to perform their duty to the Empire.'

Sea Forces

11. In response to the Government's offer of August 8th (*vide* paragraph 2) to raise the force of Newfoundland Royal Naval Reservists to 1000 men available for Naval Service abroad for one year, the Lords Commissioners of Admiralty intimated their acceptance on August 14th in the following telegram (No. 31) from the Secretary of State for the Colonies :

> 'Referring to my telegram 9th August, Lords Commissioners of Admiralty accept with gratitude offer of your Government to raise force of Naval Reservists to 1000. It has been already arranged to utilise part of Reserve to complete H.M.S. *Niobe*, and additional numbers will be valuable for later requirements.' [See p. 4.]

The Naval authorities had promptly taken the steps necessary to safeguard this Colony and its trade routes from all danger of attack, and had called out the Naval Reservists (August 2nd), making arrangements (August 6th) whereby the commission of H.M.S. *Niobe* should be completed by drafts from our Naval Reservists. [See p. 33.]

The Admiralty mobilisation being completed, the Lords Commissioners were in a position to modify their telegram (No. 31) of August 14th, by a telegram (No. 46) of August 21st to this effect :—

> 'With reference to your telegram; Royal Naval Reserve men not immediately required should be allowed to return home.' [See p. 5.]

In consequence of this order the officer commanding H.M.S. *Calypso* was in a position to grant leave of absence on full pay to the Reservists to return to their own homes. The number of Reservists on the roll at the date of the declaration

of war was 535, of whom a considerable proportion was employed on long sea voyages, or at the Labrador fishery, with which telegraphic communication had been suspended. All those within call had promptly responded to the summons. The men appreciated the consideration shown to them in their being permitted to return to their homes and complete the details of the fishing voyage; but the concession led to a temporary check on the volunteering movement, as the seamen naturally assumed that the Admiralty had no immediate need of their services and that they could in consequence close up their business for the autumn.

On September 6th, H.M.S. *Niobe* embarked 100 Newfoundland Reservists at St. John's.

On the 31st October, the Admiralty issued a fresh summons to the Newfoundland Naval Reserve, whereupon this Association formed a special committee to organise the spread of information to the out-harbours all along the coast, in order to stimulate recruiting. A great many public men and leaders among the community volunteered, at much inconvenience to themselves, to form parties under the general direction of the Hon. W. C. Job, Mr. A. W. Piccott, M.H.A., and Mr. F. J. Morris, K.C., M.H.A., to spread knowledge of the gravity of the crisis to the towns and villages in remoter parts. In this work all the friendly and benevolent societies co-operated, special mention being due to the Society of United Fishermen, under the presidency of Mr. J. A. Clift, K.C., M.H.A.

13. The response has been satisfactory, and 989 Naval Reservists are now serving His Majesty afloat on active service. Of this 505 belonged to the list of five years' Reservists and 484 are new Volunteers for one year. The available force has in fact been doubled.

The number of recruits who presented themselves for entry was 817, of whom one-third (271) were rejected by the Naval Medical Officer; defective vision and defective teeth being the principal causes of rejection. Lieutenant-Commander A. MacDermott reports that the class of men recruited has been thoroughly satisfactory; and that the conduct of the men has been uniformly excellent throughout. From the 31st December last there has not been a single case of misconduct or breach of discipline reported. Lieutenant-Commander

MacDermott adds: 'This I consider a remarkable record and reflecting the greatest credit not only on the men themselves, but also on the officers and petty officers under my command.'

The Right Honourable the Secretary of State for the Colonies (on behalf of the Lords Commissioners of Admiralty) having inquired (by despatch No. 98 of the 2nd March) whether the Government of Newfoundland would agree to the present establishment of 1000 Royal Naval Reserve men being exceeded, the Government has by Executive Council resolution authorised the continuation of recruiting for the Royal Naval Reserve so long as Volunteers offer themselves for active service. The Minute from Committee of Council, dated March 29th, on which the decision of the Government to continue the enlistment of both sailors and soldiers as long as the King has need of them, is subjoined in full. It is a declaration of which the Colony has the right to feel proud:—

Prime Minister's Office,
St. John's, Newfoundland, 30th March 1915.

His Excellency the Governor:

At a meeting of Committee of Council last evening, I brought before them the despatch from the Right Hon. the Secretary of State for the Colonies of date 2nd of March, in which he desired to know, on behalf of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, whether the Newfoundland Government would agree to the present establishment of 1000 Royal Naval Reserve men being exceeded, with a view to the replacement of any losses that may be sustained by the force.

Concurrently with this matter the question as to whether further recruiting of volunteer soldiers for the front should be encouraged also came up for discussion, and Ministers were unanimous in the opinion that, as regards Naval Reservists and Volunteers for the Army, the recruiting of both should continue for the duration of the war or until such a time as His Majesty's Government would be of the opinion that no further contribution was required from this country.

Ministers were pleased to notice the recognition by His Majesty's Government of the services of our men.

(Signed) E. P. MORRIS, *Prime Minister.*

14. The financial agreement entered into with the Admiralty when the Naval Reserve was first established limited the pecuniary liability of this Government to the payment of a sum of £3000 sterling per annum. That agreement still holds good; and the financial liability involved in an increase in the number of Reservists is met by His Majesty's Government.

15. The death roll among Newfoundlanders who are serving in His Majesty's Navy has been very severe: so far, 61 men have perished. When H.M.S. *Viknor* foundered on January 30th with all hands, there were 25 Newfoundlanders aboard. On February 25th H.M.S. *Clan MacNaughton* went down, carrying among her ship's complement 22 Newfoundlanders. On 17th March the loss of H.M.S. *Bayano* involved the end of eleven more. In addition to these deaths on active service, three more men have died in hospital, one at Chatham, one at Plymouth, and one in St. John's.

The land forces have been less unfortunate, only two deaths having occurred, one at Fort George and the other at Edinburgh.

General

[See pp. 10-11.]

16. By Proclamation under the hand of the Governor, Sunday, October 18th, was set apart as a day of Universal Prayer and Supplication to Almighty God for the protection of the British Empire and for the success of the British Arms and Allied Forces. The form of Proclamation appears in *Annexure 7*.

[See p. 48.]

17. Patriotic Fund. This Fund was launched in terms of the appeal (issued August 22nd) to be applied primarily in making provision for the dependent relatives of those who should undertake to fight the battles of the country and the Empire by land and sea and afterwards to such other objects connected therewith as may be deemed desirable. . . .

The response to this appeal has placed the Committee nominated to the control of the Fund in possession of donations which amounted on March 19th to nearly $88,000, out of which grants have been awarded in aid of ninety-two claimants to the value of $500 monthly. The original Chairman of the Committee was the Hon. Edgar Bowring, to whose initiative it was mainly due. In the unavoidable absence from the Colony of Mr. Bowring, the Hon. M. P. Cashin (Minister of

Finance) has since presided, and the Hon. Secretary throughout has been the Hon. P. T. McGrath. Mr. J. S. Munn has undertaken the onerous duties of Treasurer to both the Finance Committee of the Patriotic Association and the Patriotic Fund.

The Trustees of the Patriotic Fund—which is the designation suggested by the Patriotic Association—have formulated the subjoined statement—amplifying the terms contained in the original appeal—which was adopted by the Patriotic Association in general meeting on the 29th instant :—

1. To augment, if possible, the resources of the families of Volunteers and Reservists who have gone on active service, where such families are unable to adequately maintain themselves without such aid.

2. To assist, if possible, men invalided from active service, until they can secure employment or until the State makes provision for them by pension or otherwise.

3. To assist, if possible, widows and other dependants of those who lose their lives while on active service, until they become the beneficiaries under Legislative enactment.

4. To afford help, if possible, in such cases as do not come within the scope of the Legislative enactment, but which have a moral claim upon the generosity of the public.

The Patriotic Association would view with satisfaction the incorporation of the Patriotic Fund by Act of the Legislature in terms similar to those contained in a Bill [1] before the Dominion Parliament for the incorporation of the Canadian Patriotic Fund. At the present time, the work is falling on those citizens who were nominated by the Patriotic Association in August last, and it appears desirable that legislation should be passed empowering these citizens to administer this Fund, which has reached a considerable sum (nearly $100,000) and may be doubled if the war continues for a lengthened period. It is felt to be hardly fair to cast upon them the work of investigating each claim for assistance as it arises. They would, no doubt, be prepared to carry out the general administration of the Fund if the clerical labour were handed over to one or other of the public departments.

[1] [See *Overseas*, 1, pp. 225-9.]

The last Report of the Trustees to the Patriotic Association,

dated the 19th instant and adopted by the Patriotic Association on the 29th *idem*, appears in *Annexure No.* 8.[1]

[1] [Pp. 76-8.]

18. It is not possible to make a record of the gifts which have been showered upon our Volunteers by the universal sympathy of those who, whether they be Newfoundlanders born or otherwise associated with the Colony, have helped in this loyal movement. Among the largest benefactors may be mentioned Lord Northcliffe and Lord Rothermere and the Anglo-Newfoundland Development Company of Grand Falls; the house of Bowring and the house of Reid, and all the other old names so closely allied with the fortunes of Newfoundland. There is hardly a house or family in the Colony which has not given of its best, its sons, to uphold the honour and high traditions of its hardy people; and other gifts count less than the offering of the lives of its bravest men.

19. While the men of Newfoundland have endeavoured to the best of their resources to perform their duty by their King and the British Empire, the women have also shown patriotism of the highest quality. An organisation has been formed under the name of the Patriotic Association of the Women of Newfoundland,[2] which, in its 151 branches established in every group of homes in the Colony, has worked with admirable unity and industry to alleviate the misery and hardship arising from the war.

[2] [See pp. 49 *et seq.*]

A brief epitome of the work done by the W.P.A. as recorded in *Annexure* 9,[3] represents very inadequately one side only of the self-denying courage shown by the women of the Loyal Colony, for they have with brave hearts sent their sons and their husbands and brothers to offer their lives for our just cause. (See *Annexure No.* 9.)

[3] [Pp. 78-81.]

Respectfully submitted.

[SIR] W. E. DAVIDSON,
Chairman of the Patriotic Association of Newfoundland.

March 31*st*, 1915.

ANNEXURES

1. REPORT OF THE INAUGURATION MEETING, AUGUST 12TH, 1914.
2. REPORT OF THE FINANCE COMMITTEE, MARCH 19TH, 1915.
3. SCALE OF PAY OF THE NEWFOUNDLAND REGIMENT.

4. TREASURY MINUTE, NOVEMBER 17TH, 1914.
5. REPORT OF THE RESERVE FORCE COMMITTEE.
6. REPORT OF THE MUSKETRY INSTRUCTION COMMITTEE.
7. PROCLAMATION FOR UNIVERSAL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION, OCTOBER 18TH, 1914.
8. REPORT OF THE TRUSTEES OF THE PATRIOTIC FUND, MARCH 19TH, 1915.
9. ABSTRACT OF WORK PERFORMED BY THE WOMEN'S PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION.

ANNEXURE No. 1

[See pp. 37-41.]

ANNEXURE No. 2

REPORT OF FINANCE COMMITTEE OF THE PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION

St. John's, N.F., March 30th, 1915.

To the Newfoundland Patriotic Association:

YOUR EXCELLENCY AND GENTLEMEN,—The Finance Committee as originally named on August 12th consisted of Hons. E. R. Bowring, M. P. Cashin, J. R. Bennett, John Harris, Geo. Knowling, J. D. Ryan, John Harvey, M. G. Winter, Messrs. C. P. Ayre, D. Baird, John Browning, V. P. Burke, W. J. Ellis, W. B. Grieve, J. M. Kent, A. McPherson, and W. D. Reid.

The Committee organised on August 18th, and appointed Hon. E. R. Bowring as Chairman; and subsequently chose Hon. M. P. Cashin as Vice-Chairman, while Hon. P. T. McGrath was added to the Committee to act as Hon. Secretary and Mr. J. S. Munn to act as Hon. Treasurer, and, later, Mr. H. A. Timewell was included, on taking over the Hon. Paymastership in this Colony, and subsequently, Capt. A. Montgomerie was likewise added when he was appointed Deputy Paymaster on Capt. Timewell proceeding to England.

The branch in St. John's of G. N. Read, Son and Watson, chartered accountants of London, kindly undertook, free of cost, the performance of the clerical work incidental to the Treasurership; and the parent house of that firm in London undertook to do the auditing work in connection with the Regiment's accounts oversea, without charge.

Hon. E. R. Bowring stated at the opening session that the Government would meet the Committee that afternoon and discuss the nature

of its work, the principal features of which were set out to be, according to a preliminary draft report by a sub-committee :—

(1) That funds for the recruiting, training, equipment, transport and pay of the proposed Newfoundland Regiment be provided by the Government until the force be handed over to the British Government.

(2) That in support of any obligations assumed by the Government, the Patriotic Committee undertake to raise, by voluntary subscriptions, a fund which may be set aside for the purpose of assisting the families of those at the front, or for any other object or purpose in connection with the movement.

(3) That the question of insurance against death or injury should be taken into consideration.

The Prime Minister, on behalf of the Government, at the conference which the Committee had with the Executive Council, concurred in his representation, and stated that the Government's intention was to entrust the Finance Committee with the disbursing of the necessary funds which the Government would provide for the raising and maintaining of the Regiment.

On August 20th the Finance Committee further reported :

(*a*) That in their opinion the Canadian precedent already established be adhered to, and that the regimental pay be fixed at $1.00 a day from time of enrolment.

(*b*) That arrangements be made whereby such portions of the pay of the men who wish to make provision for their families shall be available in this Colony ; and it was suggested that forty cents a day be paid the men at the front and that sixty cents be retained for the use of their families or dependants, or to accumulate for their own benefit.

(*c*) That a communication had been received from the Government intimating that the Executive Council had decided to provide for the equipment, transportation, and other expenses in connection with the Newfoundland Regiment, and also to pay the men composing the same, who go to the front, the sum of $1.00 per day ; that the Government had decided not to ask the British Government to contribute anything towards the cost of the Regiment while on service ; and that payment of the amounts required in connection with the expenses and maintenance of the Newfoundland Regiment would be made by the Government to the Finance Committee from time to time, as required, the administration of the said funds being in the hands of the Finance Committee subject to audit of the Auditor-General of this Colony.

Accordingly, in pursuance of the duty thus entrusted to it, the

Committee undertook the task of administering the funds provided by the Government for the financing of the Colony's military enterprise in the present war and between that time and March 19th, or the day before the Third Contingent left for foreign service, obtained by requisitions from the Treasury, the sum of $310,000, which it has disbursed as follows :—

Statement of Disbursements on behalf of the First Newfoundland Regiment

PAY		
First Contingent, including all Allotments	$53,756.98	
Reserve Force	40,108.35	
Remittance to Paymaster in England presumed to be for pay of officers and men	102,427.00	
		$196,289.33
EQUIPMENT		
First Contingent	$39,304.11	
Reserve Force	19,300.13	
		$58,604.24
TRANSPORTATION		
First Contingent	$23,244.98	
Reserve Force (first 250 only)	9,716.30	
		$32,961.28
CAMP EQUIPMENT AND FOOD		
First Contingent Equipment	$3,129.33	
Food	6,648.72	
		$9,778.05
MISCELLANEOUS		
First Contingent	$4,580.97	
Reserve Force	4,401.25	
		$8,892.22
		$306,615.12
Leaving a balance on hand at this date to March 19th, of		3,384.88

These figures do not include obligations estimated at about $10,000 for the conveyance of the Third Contingent from here to England *viâ* steamers *Stephano* and *Orduna*.

COST OF REGIMENT

An instruction from the Patriotic Association on November 19th, 1914, to the Finance Committee, to prepare estimates of the cost of the maintenance of the First Newfoundland Regiment, both as regards the contingent actually raised and at the front, and of the Reserve Force, was considered, and the officers (Messrs. Cashin, Munn and McGrath), and the Deputy Paymaster (Captain Montgomerie) were appointed to revise the figures of the cost, in the light of the undertaking by the British Government to provide for the maintenance and equipment of our men while oversea previously notified to the Colony. The sub-committee has dealt with the subject, and reported that the cost of the training, local equipment, transport, and pay, for a year, may be set down, roundly, at $600,000 for a battalion of 1000 men, and proportionately for smaller contingents.

This, in other words, means that every Volunteer enlisted and sent forward will cost the Colony $600 for the first year, as follows :—

Pay (365 days at $1.10)	$401.50
Board while training here (say 60 days at 50 cents)	30.00
Equipment provided at St. John's . . .	50.00
Transport to England	40.00
Incidentals (including proportion of cost of instruction, officering, administration, etc.), say . .	78.50
	$600.00

PENSIONS

Another instruction from the Patriotic Association of November 19th, 1914, to the Finance Committee, was that it consider the question of pensions, and accordingly a sub-committee consisting of Hon. J. Harvey (Convener), Mr. J. M. Kent, Mr. W. J. Ellis, the Secretary (Mr. McGrath), and the Deputy Paymaster (Capt. Montgomerie), were appointed to consider this matter. The Committee has given such consideration to the subject as has been possible with very meagre information available, as the details of the proposed Canadian enactment in this direction, to be submitted to the present session of the Dominion Parliament, have not yet been tabled. The sub-committee, therefore, asked leave to postpone a definite report on the matter until it is further advised; and, in view of the matter involving the Government's participation, asked that Hon. M. P. Cashin, the Minister of Finance and Customs, be added to the Committee.

Respectfully submitted.

M. P. CASHIN, *Vice-Chairman.*
J. S. MUNN, *Hon. Treasurer.*
P. T. MCGRATH, *Hon. Secretary.*

ANNEXURE No. 3

REPORT TO THE LEGISLATURE *re* REGIMENTAL RATES—ALL ARMS

	Pay.	Field Allowance.
Colonel	$6.00	$1.50
Lieut.-Colonel	5.00	1.25
Majors	4.00	1.00
Captains	3.00	75
Lieutenants	2.00	60
Adjutants, in addition to pay of Rank	50	—
Paymasters	3.00	75
Quartermasters	3.00	75
Warrant Officers	2.00	30
Quartermaster-Sergeants	1.80	20
Pay Sergeants	1.50	20
Orderly Room Clerks	1.50	20
Squadron, Battery, or Company Sergeant-Major	1.60	20
Squadron, Battery, or Co. Quartermaster-Sergeant	1.50	20
Colour-Sergeant or Staff Sergeant	1.60	20
Sergeants	1.35	15
Corporals	1.10	10
Bombardiers or 2nd Corporals	1.05	10
Trumpeters, Buglers, and Drummers	1.00	10
Privates, Gunners, Drivers, Sappers, Batmen, Cooks, etc.	1.00	10

NOTE.—Commissioned Officers also receive 5s. 6d. ($1.32) a day as an allowance towards their mess account.

ANNEXURE No. 4

REPORT TO LEGISLATURE *re* ADVANCES TO HIS MAJESTY'S SELF-GOVERNING DOMINIONS

(Treasury Minute dated the 17th November 1914, relating to Advances to His Majesty's Self-Governing Dominions.)

The Chancellor of the Exchequer calls the attention of the Board to the arrangements which have been made with the Governments of certain of the Dominions with a view to avoiding the disadvantages of the separate flotation by each Dominion of the loans required to meet the heavy expenditure entailed by the present crisis.

So far as they can be estimated at present, the amounts required are :—

Dominion of Canada	£12,000,000
Commonwealth of Australia . . .	18,000,000
Dominion of New Zealand	5,250,000
Union of South Africa	7,000,000

It is proposed that the sums required by the Dominion Governments from time to time should be advanced to them out of the proceeds of any general war loan or loans which may be raised by His Majesty's Government, *i.e.* of any loan raised otherwise than by short-term securities, such as the six or twelve months Treasury Bills by which the cost of the war has hitherto been provided for.

The object of these advances is to provide funds to meet the Naval and Military expenditure incurred by the Dominions and other charges directly due to the crisis. They are not intended to be applied to financing development services.

The sums advanced are to be applied primarily to meet the obligations of the Dominions in the United Kingdom in respect of debt services and purchases in the English market, thus setting free (in so far as these obligations represent expenditure not arising out of the crisis) a corresponding sum in the Dominions for local war expenditure. Save in very exceptional circumstances (*e.g.*, where separate naval or military operations are being carried on by the Dominion itself), no part of the advances is to be used for cash remittances from the United Kingdom.

The money will be lent to the four Dominions named at the rate of interest at which His Majesty's Government itself will have borrowed, the discount on any interest-bearing securities issued at a discount being added to the capital of the debt. The amounts paid over to the Dominions from time to time in respect of the advances will be charged to the Vote of Credit.

The debts due to His Majesty's Government from each of the Dominions will be paid off out of public issues of stock or securities to be made at such times as may be agreed upon as suitable between the Chancellor of the Exchequer and the Dominion Government.

If at the time of repayment the securities out of the proceeds of which the original advance was made stand at a discount, a corresponding abatement, and if they stand at a premium a corresponding increase, will be made in the amount repayable.

Pending the issue of a general war loan, arrangements have been made where necessary for the Bank of England to make temporary advances to the Dominions in anticipation of the loan upon the understanding that such temporary advances (which will be included in the totals specified above) will be repaid by the Treasury to the Bank of

England on behalf of the Dominions concerned so soon as the proceeds of the first general war loan are available.

My Lords approve.

Let directions be given accordingly and let a copy of this Minute be transmitted through the Colonial Office to the Governments of the Dominions concerned.

NOTE.—The sum subsequently assigned to the Colony of Newfoundland is £200,000. W. E. D.

ANNEXURE No. 5

REPORT TO LEGISLATURE OF RESERVE FORCE COMMITTEE

Furnished on March 18th, 1915

At a meeting of the Patriotic Association held on the 23rd October 1914, the Reserve Force Committee was appointed, consisting of:—E. Ayre, Esq.; J. A. Clift, Esq., K.C.; C. O'Neil Conroy, Esq., K.C.; W. J. Higgins, Esq.; C. H. Hutchings, Esq., K.C.; J. J. MacKay, Esq.; C. MacPherson, Esq., M.D.; A. G. Montgomerie, Esq.; L. Patterson, Esq., M.D.; R. G. Rendell, Esq.; W. H. Rennie, Esq.; Dr. V. P. Burke, Secretary; Sir Joseph Outerbridge, Chairman; with power to add to their numbers.

The first meeting was called by the Governor, and was held in the Board of Trade Rooms, Water Street, St. John's, on the 26th of October 1914.

The duty of this Committee, as first defined, was to raise a force of 250 men to act as a Reserve in support of the 500 men offered by the Colony and known as the First Newfoundland Regiment. Subsequently the scope of the operations of the Committee was extended to cover the enlisting, up to 1330 men, so as to form a full battalion of 1080 strong, with one company of 250 of reserve, all to be available abroad for active service.

The Chairmen of all the sub-committees of the Patriotic Association were added to the Reserve Force Committee, and that Committee was constituted an Executive Committee with full powers to make all necessary arrangements for the enlistment, training, equipping, and transport of the contingents. In addition to the above names the Committee now included:—Hon. J. R. Bennett; Hon. M. P. Cashin; A. J. Harvey, Esq.; J. W. N. Johnstone, Esq.; F. J. Morris, Esq., K.C.; J. W. Morris, Esq.; H. A. Outerbridge, Esq.; W. D. Reid, Esq.

A Proclamation was issued calling for Volunteers, and a Recruiting Office was opened in the C.L.B. Armoury. The work of enlisting Volunteers was carried out exactly on the lines adopted in the case of those who had already gone to the front. It was arranged that, as

soon as Volunteers were enlisted and had passed the Medical Examination, they should be sworn in, and come under pay at the same rate as the First Contingent, with the exception that, as weather conditions made it impossible to establish a Field Camp, an allowance should be given for board and lodging while here at St. John's.

EQUIPMENT

In view of the fact that Members of the Reserve Force were obliged to take their training here and also to make the passage to England, under weather conditions more or less severe, it was found necessary to have the uniforms and general equipments in the way of clothing provided for the use of the men. It was understood that the rifles and all the field outfit would be supplied by the War Authorities in England.

INSTRUCTION

Arrangements were made for the training of the recruits in drill and musketry. At first the Commanding Officers of the different Brigades arranged for the training of recruits under Brigade officers at night in the different Armouries (C.L.B., C.C.C., N.H.), free of charge, and these officers devoted much of their time and attention to the subject. It being found necessary to drill the men during the day, paid instructors were provided to assist in the work of training. Meanwhile, as soon as the day unit was formed, regular officers who had volunteered for service were appointed and these also took charge of the training.

The Musketry Committee had shelters erected over the firing points of the rifle range at the South Side Hill, and they and the members of the Rifle Association were assiduous in giving instruction to the recruits in shooting out of doors. In addition to the training given at the rifle range, instruction was also given in miniature rifle shooting at the C.C.C. and N.H. Armouries.

Mr. W. D. Reid most generously presented the Regiment with two Colt Automatic quick-firing guns, instruction in the use of which was furnished by an expert brought here especially for that purpose from Canada by Mr. Reid. Mr. Reid also placed the services of Mr. John Moore and Mr. John Baxter at the disposal of the Committee, the former acting as Drill Instructor and the latter as Musketry Instructor, free of expense to the Committee.

OFFICERS' COMMISSION

An advertisement was inserted in the daily papers requesting applications from any young men who desired to become officers in the Regiment. The qualifications of all applicants for commissions were

very carefully considered by a specially appointed Committee before suggesting names to His Excellency the Governor.

ENLISTMENT

Up to the end of February 1224 men had volunteered for the Reserve Force, and of these 834 came from the city of St. John's. Altogether 650 passed the medical examination, and 556 were sworn in for active service.

TRANSPORT

On February 5th, 243 men (being the third company of the battalion) embarked on the s.s. *Dominion* and arrived safely in Liverpool on February 16th. Owing to ice conditions the s.s. *Dominion* was unable to enter the harbour at St. John's, and the contingent was taken out to the s.s. *Dominion* by the s.s. *Neptune*, which ship was very generously placed at the disposal of the Committee by Messrs. Job Bros. and Co., Ltd. The Newfoundland Steam Screw Tug Co. also placed their boats at the disposal of the Committee free of charge. The Third Company was placed for transport duty under the charge of Captain Montgomerie.

Arrangements are in progress for the forwarding of the Third Contingent, viz. :—the Fourth Company, which consists of about 252 men.

The Fifth or Reserve Company is now in course of formation.

The Committee recommended that five officers should be brought from England, two to accompany the next contingent and three to assist in the training here and to accompany the last contingent. This recommendation has been adopted, and the officers are expected to arrive shortly.

Up to the end of February fifteen (15) meetings of the Reserve Force Committee were held, and there were numerous meetings of the various sub-committees.

[SIR] JOSEPH OUTERBRIDGE, *Chairman.*
VINCENT P. BURKE, *Hon. Secretary.*

ANNEXURE No. 6

[Not reproduced here.]

ANNEXURE No. 7

[See pp. 10-11.]

ANNEXURE No. 8

REPORT OF THE TRUSTEES OF THE PATRIOTIC FUND

St. John's, N.F., March 19th, 1915.

To the Newfoundland Patriotic Association:

YOUR EXCELLENCY AND GENTLEMEN,—The Trustees of the Patriotic Fund, to use the term suggested by your Excellency at the last meeting, are the same as compose the Finance Committee of this Association; but their work in the former capacity is independent altogether of that performed by them in the latter relation, and the moneys of the Patriotic Fund are deposited in and its business is done with a different bank.

The idea of a Patriotic Fund may be said to have grown out of a recommendation included in the first report of the Finance Committee to the Patriotic Association on August 18th, namely:—

'That in support of any obligations assumed by the Government, the Patriotic Committee undertake to raise, by voluntary contributions, a fund which may be set aside for the purpose of assisting the families of those at the front, or for any other object or purpose in connection with the movement.'

On August 21st the question of raising a Fund by public subscriptions in aid of the movement was discussed, and it was resolved that an appeal for funds be made, 'to carry out the objects for which this Committee was appointed,' and that such appeal should be addressed to the general public in accordance with the terms of an announcement to be drafted by a sub-committee appointed for the purpose.

On August 22nd a draft appeal was reported by the Committee and considered, together with a letter from your Excellency. . . .

The draft appeal was approved for submission to the General Association, which endorsed it, and it was then published and circulated in various ways throughout the Colony.

The Patriotic Fund having been launched, the various banks doing business in this city were interviewed with regard to the securing of the best terms possible for the moneys which would be collected thereunder, and ultimately, the Royal Bank offering the best terms, it was decided to place the amounts subscribed for the fund on deposit with this Bank.

The text of the appeal to the public on behalf of the Patriotic Fund is as follows:—[See p. 48.]

At the last meeting of the Patriotic Association it was agreed to refer to the Finance Committee the matter of amplifying the statement of the objects of the Patriotic Fund as originally set out. The Committee, after consideration of this matter, beg to report the following as a suggested form for such amplification:

1. To augment, if possible, the resources of the families of Volunteers

and Reservists who have gone on active service, where such families are unable to adequately maintain themselves without such aid.

2. To assist, if possible, men invalided from active service until they can secure employment or until the State makes provision for them by pension or otherwise.

3. To assist, if possible, widows and other dependants of those who lose their lives while on active service, until they become the beneficiaries of Legislative enactment.

4. To afford help, if possible, in such cases as do not come within the scope of the Legislative enactment, but which have a moral claim upon the generosity of the public.

The following is a statement of the Newfoundland Patriotic Fund to March 19th :—

RECEIPTS

Donations	$87,799.76	
Interest from Royal Bank of Canada	1,369.90	
Total receipts	$89,169.66	

EXPENDITURE

Expenses	149.50	
Payments to relatives of dependants on Members of the Royal Naval Reserve, and First Newfoundland Regiment	1,456.00	
		$1,605.5
Balance in hand		$87,564.16

The total number of claims considered has been 92, of which 76 have been allowed and help given to the claimants, 60 of whom are in receipt of monthly grants, totalling $501.00, or an average per person of $6.35 per month.

Of these 20 are dependants of Regimental Volunteers and 56 are dependants of Naval Reservists.

The smaller pay received by the Reservists and their consequent inability to make proportionately adequate provision for their dependants, accounts, in part, for the larger number in the Naval category.

In some of these cases the relief afforded has been of such a character that a revision of the allotments will be made at the end of April, with possibly a reduction of the amounts in some instances and the terminating of the grants in others, but on the other hand, as the numbers who enlist for active service grow and the other resources of the families become diminished, other cases will probably be arising.

In this connection it may be of interest to state that the following are the numbers and amounts of those who made allotments to their families out of their pay :—

First Contingent—Out of 540 men, 370 made allotments totalling $6,858.75 per month.

Second Contingent—Out of 245 men, 207 made allotments totalling $4,583.95.

Third Contingent—Out of 240 men, 237 made allotments totalling $3,955.35.

Steps have been taken, by means of circulars addressed to Clergymen, Magistrates, or other representative citizens, to ascertain the circumstances of those families who lost members by the Naval disasters thus far, or by deaths in the Naval hospitals ; and those cases are being dealt with, according to their merits, as the necessary information is secured.

Respectfully submitted.

M. CASHIN, *Vice Chairman.*
J. S. MUNN, *Hon. Treasurer.*
P. T. MCGRATH, *Hon. Secretary.*

ANNEXURE No. 9

REPORT OF THE PATRIOTIC ASSOCIATION OF THE WOMEN OF NEWFOUNDLAND

On the last day of August 1914, a general meeting was called at the British Hall, at which all the women of St. John's who were willing and anxious to do their bit of work to help their country were invited to attend. A large meeting was not anticipated, but when many hundreds of women responded to the call it was manifest that the women of Newfoundland were not going to be backward in lending a hand where it was needed. To quote the account in the *Daily News* the next morning :—' If the attendance at yesterday's meeting convened by Lady Davidson be any criterion of the willingness of Newfoundland Women to assist in aiding Britain in the present crisis by providing for our soldiers at the front, then such assistance is assured ; for, long before the appointed hour, the hall was thronged.' At this meeting nearly 700 women, in every station of life, signed their names as willing workers.

2. The Patriotic Association of the Women of Newfoundland being thus successfully launched, a general Committee was nominated as well as an Executive, and it was arranged that Government House should be the headquarters of the Association. On the following morning, September 1st, a meeting was held at Government House and a Finance

Committee was elected, and it was decided not to make any systematic house-to-house collection—but only to appeal through the Press for funds. This was done, and in the first week $423 were voluntarily sent in. A Buying Committee was also elected, and the stores in the city visited, and in a very short while every yard of suitable flannel was bought up throughout the city by the Association for the making up into shirts. It was also decided to purchase all knitting yarn from the two local Wool Mills—that near Clarke's Beach and the one in Alexander Street—as the Association was anxious to spend as much as possible of the funds in buying materials locally. The Association received assistance on every side and from every quarter—the Newfoundland Clothing Factory and the Royal Stores both offering to cut out our material for us free of charge. It was decided to work in connection with the St. John Ambulance Association—they being willing to be our agents in London—buying the necessary materials for us, and receiving and warehousing our garments and arranging for their distribution where necessary. The Order of St. John works in concert with the Red Cross Society and with the Queen Mary Needlework Guild. A notice was sent to all the Magistrates and wives of the Clergy throughout the Colony inviting them to form Branches, and to work in concert with the centre at St. John's, and the response was astonishing. At the end of the first month the sum subscribed in St. John's was $4,298, and 58 Outport Branches had been formed, and it became hard work to keep pace in answering the numerous inquiries for instructions as to work patterns and materials. It was also at this time decided to place collecting boxes all over the city—to collect money for the supplying of materials for the service of the Hospital Branch of the St. John Association, *i.e.* for making dressings, etc., bandages for the wounded. These were generously supplied by the Horwood Lumber Company, Limited, and by Mr. George Davey and some lads of the C.L.B., who made them in their spare time, to all of whom warm thanks are due—as these boxes were the channel through which a substantial sum of money was collected for this special purpose.

3. All expenses of postage and transport in the Colony have been defrayed by the Government (through the Postmaster-General), by the Reid Newfoundland Company (both by rail and by sea), by the Messrs. Bowring Bros. and the Newfoundland Produce Co. Ltd. (by steamer), The Furness Withy Steamship Company and the Allan Line Steamship Company most generously conveying all cases of garments from St. John's to Liverpool free of charge, and at Liverpool defraying all expenses for clearing, etc., Messrs. Job Bros. warehousing and forwarding the same to the St. John Ambulance Warehouse in London. The first shipment was despatched on November 2nd on the s.s. *Tabasco* consisting of 18 cases, which included contributions from twenty-eight branches.

4. Working parties were in progress four afternoons a week at Government House—besides many working bees at the private houses of ladies throughout the city. The workers at Government House consisted of about 550 regular attendants, and the routine settled down as follows :—On Mondays, Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Fridays work is in progress in the drawing-room and ballroom, supervised by the work directors. On Saturdays the young girls came and worked for the Belgian refugee children. The hearty thanks of the Association are due to Mrs. M. F. Smythe and to the Singer Company for so kindly lending a number of excellent sewing machines free of charge. While sewing is in progress in the workrooms a committee of lady 'cutters out' are at work in the billiard-room. These ladies have got through an immense amount of work, cutting out all the shirts and night shirts that have gone forward after November 2nd. All work done during the week is examined on Wednesdays by the examining Committee, and tied up into bundles of ten. Under the direction of their Convener, with the willing assistance of a number of the young ladies of St. John's, these garments are all packed on Thursdays ; the cases and casks which are provided are nailed down and addressed on Fridays, and despatched to the wharf on Saturdays.

5. Two important branches run independently on parallel lines under the same central executive control, viz. :—(*a*) A branch for assisting the Belgian Refugees. (*b*) A branch for visiting and keeping in friendly touch with the parents or near relatives of our Volunteers and Naval Reservists, who had left their home at the call to arms. The Belgian Branch has fallen into two divisions, viz. :—The W. P. A. Belgian Refugee Branch, and the Alliance Française Belgian Fund.

6. The visiting Committee is admirably directed and has proved a real success. The visits, which are purely of a friendly nature, have been much appreciated, and have done good to both the visitors and the visited by drawing more closely the common bonds of sympathy which appeal in unison to all the women of Newfoundland in this great affair of our race.

7. The clerical work in the office has been particularly heavy, at one time as many as thirty-five letters a day arriving, all of which required attention and immediate answers, and the Hon. Secretary had to seek assistance in an assistant Hon. Secretary.

8. At the time of writing this report, the Association has 151 branches, and has sent forward five shipments as follows :—

Socks	17,843
Flannel Shirts	2,833
Pillow Slips	1,839
Mitts (pairs)	1,760
Handkerchiefs	1614

Mufflers	1130
Night Shirts	842
Housewives	791
Cholera Belts	727
Pillows	677
Pyjamas	357
Balaclava Helmets	143
Surgical Socks	125
Bed Jackets	64
Bed Socks	24
Sheets	8

Shipments from Hospital Committee :—

Bandages (various kinds)	3500

Dressings for 6472 patients.

Besides various other things for Hospital use.

COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA

GOVERNOR-GENERAL AND COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF:
RIGHT HON. SIR R. C. MUNRO-FERGUSON, G.C.M.G.

THE MINISTRY

FORMED JUNE 24, 1913

Prime Minister and Minister for Home Affairs	Hon. J. COOK.
Treasurer	Rt. Hon. SIR JOHN FORREST, P.C., G.C.M.G.
Attorney-General	Hon. W. H. IRVINE, K.C.
External Affairs	Hon. P. M. GLYNN, K.C.
Postmaster-General	Hon. A. WYNNE.
Minister of Defence	Senator the Hon. E. D. MILLEN.
Minister of Trade and Customs	Hon. L. E. GROOM.
Vice-President of the Executive Council	Senator the Hon. J. H. MCCALL.
Honorary Ministers	Senator the Hon. J. S. CLEMONS and the Hon. W. H. KELLY.
High Commissioner for Australia in London	Rt. Hon. SIR GEORGE HOUSTON REID, P.C., K.C., G.C.M.G.

THE MINISTRY

FORMED SEPTEMBER 17, 1914.

Prime Minister and Treasurer	Rt. Hon. A. FISHER, P.C.
Attorney-General	Hon. W. M. HUGHES.
External Affairs	Hon. HUGH MAHON.
Home Affairs	Hon. W. O. ARCHIBALD.
Postmaster-General	Hon. W. G. SPENCE.
Minister of Defence	Senator the Hon. G. F. PEARCE.
Minister of Trade and Customs	Hon. F. G. TUDOR.
Vice-President of the Executive Council	Senator the Hon. A. GARDINER.
Honorary Members	Senator the Hon. E. J. RUSSELL, and the Hon. J. A. JENSEN.
High Commissioner for Australia in London	Rt. Hon. SIR GEORGE HOUSTON REID, P.C., K.C., G.C.M.G.

CORRESPONDENCE WITH HIS MAJESTY'S GOVERNMENT

NAVAL AND MILITARY ASSISTANCE OF AUSTRALIA

No. 1

The Governor-General of Australia to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 6.20 P.M., *August* 3, 1914.

In the event of war Commonwealth of Australia prepared A. to place vessels of Australian Navy under control of British Admiralty when desired. Further prepared to despatch expeditionary force 20,000 men of any suggested composition to any destination desired by Home Government. Force to be at complete disposal Home Government. Cost of despatch and maintenance would be borne by this Government. Australian Press notified accordingly. FERGUSON.

No. 2

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor-General

(Cablegram.) *London*, 1.45 P.M., *August* 4, 1914.

I think your Ministers would be wise, in view of their A. generous offer, although there seems to be no immediate necessity for any request on our part for an expeditionary force from Australia, to take the necessary administrative steps by which they would be enabled without delay, in case it should hereafter be required, to provide such a force.

HARCOURT.

No. 3

The Governor-General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 5.47 P.M., *August* 5, 1914.

With reference to your telegram of 4th August,[1] prepara- A. tion here would be greatly facilitated if the desired composi-

[1] No. 2.

tion, divisional or otherwise, of expeditionary force is indicated. FERGUSON.

No. 4

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor-General

(Cablegram.) *London*, 7.30 P.M., *August* 6, 1914.

A. His Majesty's Government gratefully accept offer of your Ministers to send force of 20,000 men to this country, and would be glad if it could be despatched as soon as possible.

HARCOURT.

No. 5

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor-General

(Cablegram.) *London*, 12.33 P.M., *August* 7, 1914.

A. With reference to my telegram of 6th August,[1] it is suggested by the Army Council that the following would be a suitable composition of the expeditionary force:—

1 Field Artillery Brigade.
1 Light Horse Brigade.
2 Infantry Brigades.

HARCOURT.

No. 6

The Governor-General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 11.4 A.M., *August* 8, 1914.

A. Your telegram of 7th August;[2] we fully expected 20,000 men to go, and have begun organising division on that basis on Home Regular Army establishments, with three brigades of four-gun batteries, but without howitzer brigade and heavy battery. We are also organising Light Horse Brigade on Australian establishments, namely, 2226 *personnel* and 2315 horses. Do you concur or still wish your proposal adopted? We anticipate men embarking in four to six weeks. We should be glad of a reply as soon as possible.

FERGUSON.

[1] No. 4. [2] No. 5.

No. 7

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor-General

(Cablegram.) *London*, 4.5 P.M., *August* 9, 1914.

With reference to your telegram 8th August,[1] His Majesty's Government will be glad to avail themselves, in place of force suggested in my telegram 7th August [2] of the offer of your Government of one division and of one Light Horse Brigade. A.

HARCOURT.

No. 8

The Governor-General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 6.50 A.M., *August* 11, 1914.

Order issued 10th August transferring all vessels of Commonwealth naval forces and all officers and seamen to King's naval forces. Such transfer to continue in force until Proclamation is issued declaring that war no longer exists. A.

FERGUSON.

No. 9

The Governor-General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 11.35 A.M., *August* 11, 1914.

Arrangements being made for despatch of expeditionary force to England in accordance with your telegram of 9th August.[3] A.

FERGUSON.

No. 10

The Governor-General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 3.28 P.M., *September* 3, 1914.

Commonwealth Government is arranging for the despatch early in November of another Infantry Brigade and a Light Horse Brigade, total 6383, with 2386 horses, and 181 vehicles. These are in addition to the first expeditionary force of 20,000, with reinforcements from time to time. A.

FERGUSON.

[1] No. 6. [2] No 5. [3] No. 7.

No. 11

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor-General

(Cablegram.) *London*, 6.26 P.M., *September* 3, 1914.

A. Your telegram 3rd September.[1] His Majesty's Government have learned with much gratification of generous measure of further assistance which Commonwealth will afford the Empire. HARCOURT.

GIFTS OF FOOD-STUFFS AND OTHER SUPPLIES FROM AUSTRALIA

No. 1

The Governor-General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 6.10 A.M., *August* 28, 1914.

B. Messrs. Cullen and Wallace, Fairfield Vineyard, Rutherglen, Victoria, offer 1000 gallons port wine for sick wounded soldiers in hospitals delivered free port Melbourne.

R. M. FERGUSON.

No. 2

The Agent-General for Queensland to Colonial Office

Queensland Government Office, 409 and 410 Strand, London, W.C., September 2, 1914.

Queensland. B. SIR,—I am pleased to advise you that I am in receipt of telegraphic information from my Government to the effect that by the s.s. *Morayshire*, which sailed from Brisbane on the 27th ultimo, a shipment of food-stuffs has been consigned to me, which is to be placed at the disposal of the British Government. These goods are a present from Queensland to the motherland, and include :—

5,600 lbs. butter,
16,220 lbs. bacon,
550 cases of compressed and rounds beef,
9,600 lbs. condensed milk,
2½ tons arrowroot.

[1] No. 10.

These goods, the Government advise, are considered suitable for army purposes.

In addition to the goods above listed, the shipment also includes 50 cases of condensed milk, 'contributed for the benefit of children of the Empire.' The purpose for which this particular item is intended will doubtless be more fully explained by letter.

I understand from the cabled advice that these goods have been collected by the Brisbane Newspaper Company, Limited, in whose papers the proposal was presumably given publicity.

I shall have pleasure in communicating with you again on receipt of particulars by mail from Queensland. —I have, etc.,

T. B. ROBINSON,
Agent-General.

No. 3

Colonial Office to the Agent-General for Queensland

Downing Street, September 4, 1914.

SIR,—I am directed by Mr. Secretary Harcourt to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 2nd instant,[1] giving particulars of a consignment of food-stuffs shipped from Brisbane by the s.s. *Morayshire,* which has been collected by the Brisbane Newspaper Company, Limited, as a present from Queensland to this country. *Queensland.* B.

2. I am to thank you for this information, and to ask you that you will be good enough to convey to the donors by telegraph an expression of the grateful thanks of His Majesty's Government for this gift.—I am, etc.,

HENRY LAMBERT,
for Under-Secretary of State.

No. 4

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor-General

(Cablegram.) *London,* 3.20 P.M., *September* 9, 1914.

Your telegram of 28th August.[2] Army Council gratefully accept Messrs. Cullen and Wallace's generous gift of wine, *Victoria.* B.

[1] No. 2. [2] No. 1.

which should be forwarded to Officer-in-Charge, Supply Reserve Depot, Woolwich. HARCOURT.

No. 5

The Agent-General for Queensland to Colonial Office

Queensland Government Offices, 409 and 410 Strand, London, W.C., September 9, 1914.

Queensland. C.

SIR,—I have the honour to inform you that I am in receipt of a cablegram from my Government intimating that the Patriotic Committee, Brisbane, purposes shipping, about the end of the month, frozen meat to the value of £10,000.

The Committee invites suggestions as to what further commodities are most needed, and asks that, in the event of tinned meats being required, the size of the tins be furnished. The message adds that at least a further sum of £10,000 is available.—I have, etc., T. B. ROBINSON,

Agent-General.

ENCLOSURE IN NO. 5

(Cablegram received 8th September 1914, dated Brisbane, 8th September 1914)

'Patriotic Committee purpose shipping if freight available about end of month frozen meat to the value of £10,000. Committee invites suggestions as to what further commodities most needed. If tinned meat, give size of tins. At least a further sum of £10,000 available.'

CHIEF-SECRETARY, *Brisbane.*

No. 6

Colonial Office to the Agent-General for Queensland

Downing Street, September 11, 1914.

Queensland. C.

SIR,—I am directed by Mr. Secretary Harcourt to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 9th instant, and to state that he has learnt with much pleasure that His Majesty's Government are to be presented by the Patriotic Committee, Brisbane, with food-stuffs to the value of at least £20,000.

2. Mr. Harcourt will be obliged if you will request your Government to inform the Committee that His Majesty's

Government gratefully accept this generous and welcome gift, and highly appreciate the sentiments of affectionate regard for the mother country which animate the citizens of Brisbane.

3. Mr. Harcourt would propose, if you consider that such an arrangement would be acceptable to the Committee, that the frozen meat and the other commodities to be sent should be devoted to the relief of distress in this country. Pending the receipt of your reply on this point, he will defer making inquiries as to the commodities to the purchase of which it is considered that the second £10,000 might most usefully be devoted.—I am, etc., H. W. JUST.

No. 7

The High Commissioner for Australia to Colonial Office

High Commissioner's Offices,
72 Victoria Street, Westminster, London, S.W.,
September 14, 1914.

SIR,—I am directed by the High Commissioner to state, C.
for the information of the Secretary of State, that we have received the following cablegram from the Department of External Affairs :—

> 'One ton butter was shipped to London Office, Western District Co-operative Produce Company, which has been instructed to hand over to you. Butter has been given by Mrs. Hindson and family, Colac, for presentation to Imperial Government for use of wounded British soldiers. Take necessary action on arrival.'

2. Sir George Reid has much pleasure in forwarding this communication for the information of the Secretary of State for War, and asks that we may be favoured as early as possible with the wishes of the War Office as to delivery.—I am, etc.,
R. MUIRHEAD COLLINS.

No. 8

Colonial Office to the High Commissioner for Australia

Downing Street, September 17, 1914.

SIR,—I am directed by Mr. Secretary Harcourt to request C.
you to inform the High Commissioner that the Army Council

gratefully accept the gift of one ton of butter presented by Mrs. Hindson and family, Colac, and that they would be glad if a suitable acknowledgment could be sent to her.

2. The Army Council add that the butter should be consigned to the Officer-in-Charge, Supply Reserve Depôt, Deptford Cattle Market, and that on receipt it will be distributed to the hospitals in which wounded soldiers from the front are being treated.—I am, etc.,

HENRY LAMBERT,
for the Under-Secretary of State.

No. 9

The Agent-General for Queensland to Colonial Office

Queensland Government Offices, 409 and 410 Strand, London, W.C., September 21, 1914.

Queensland. C.

SIR,—I have the honour to inform you that I have received telegraphic information from my Government to the effect that the s.s. *Port Albany*, which sailed from Brisbane on the 9th instant, carries a consignment of food-stuffs valued at £6200 as a gift to the Imperial Government. This is the second shipment of goods collected by the Brisbane Newspaper Company, Limited, and includes :—

23,000 lbs. bacon,
68 cwts. butter,
1 ton cheese,
1,500 cases of boiled beef,
40 cases of dripping,
700 dozen tinned pineapples,
6,000 lbs. cornflour,
40 dozen tins pineapple jam,
3,500 lbs. honey,
6¼ tons golden syrup,
21 cwts. flour,
220 dozen tins corned beef,
280 dozen tins assorted meat products,
24,000 lbs. condensed milk.

I have, etc.,
T. B. ROBINSON, *Agent-General.*

No. 10

Colonial Office to the Agent-General for Queensland

Downing Street, September 25, 1914.

SIR,—I am directed by Mr. Secretary Harcourt to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 21st instant,[1] notifying the shipment from Brisbane of a further consignment of food-stuffs collected by the Brisbane Newspaper Company, Limited, as a gift to the Imperial Government. *Queensland.* C.

2. Mr. Harcourt has learnt of this further gift with much pleasure, and will be obliged if you will inform the Company that it is gratefully accepted by His Majesty's Government.

3. I am to inquire whether you are in a position to say whether the donors would approve of this gift being devoted to the relief of distress, or would prefer that it should be used for military purposes.—I am, etc.,

HENRY LAMBERT,
for the Under-Secretary of State.

No. 11

The Agent-General for Queensland to Colonial Office

Queensland Government Offices, 409 *and* 410 *Strand, London, W.C., September* 28, 1914.

SIR,—I have the honour to inform you that I have received telegraphic communication from my Government to the effect that the s.s. *Anchises* carries a consignment of food-stuffs valued at £1950 for Imperial purposes. This is the third shipment of food-stuffs collected by the Brisbane Newspaper Company, Limited, and consists of :— *Queensland.* C.

1,600 dozen tins of various meat,
1,500 lbs. corned meat,
10,060 lbs. condensed milk,
5 cwt. golden syrup,
374 dozen tins of jam and preserved pineapples,
14,400 tins of condensed milk for the babies of Great Britain.

I have, etc.,

T. B. ROBINSON, *Agent-General.*

[1] [No. 9.]

No. 12

Colonial Office to the Agent-General for Queensland

Downing Street, October 1, 1914.

Queensland. C. SIR,—I am directed by Mr. Secretary Harcourt to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 28th ultimo,[1] notifying the shipment of a further consignment of food-stuffs collected by the Brisbane Newspaper Company, Limited, for presentation to His Majesty's Government.

2. I am to state that His Majesty's Government gratefully accept this further welcome gift from the readers of the *Brisbane Courier*, and I am at the same time to ask that the inquiry made in the third paragraph of the letter from this Department of the 25th September[2] may be regarded as applying to this gift also.—I am, etc., HENRY LAMBERT,

for the Under-Secretary of State.

No. 13

The Agent-General for Queensland to Colonial Office

Queensland Government Offices, 409 and 410 Strand, London, W.C., October 1, 1914.

Queensland. C. SIR,—I have the honour, by direction of the Agent-General, to enclose, for the information of the Right Honourable the Secretary of State, a copy of a telegram which was despatched to the Chief-Secretary, Brisbane, relative to the presentation of food-stuffs to His Majesty's Government by the Patriotic Committee, Brisbane, and also a copy of a telegram in reply thereto, received under yesterday's date. The latter communication notifies, as you will perceive, the acceptance by the Committee of the proposal of Mr. Harcourt set out in paragraph 3 of your letter of the 11th ultimo.[3]—I have, etc.,

P. J. DILLON, *Secretary.*

ENCLOSURE 1 IN NO. 13

(Cablegram sent to Chief-Secretary, Brisbane)

September 12, 1914.

Referring to your telegram of 8th, Mr. Harcourt wishes me to request you to inform the Committee that His Majesty's

[1] [No. 11.] [2] [No. 10.] [3] No. 6.

Government gratefully accept this generous and welcome gift and highly appreciate the sentiments of affectionate regard for the Mother Country which animate the citizens of Brisbane. Mr. Harcourt would propose, if you consider that such an arrangement would be acceptable to the Committee, that the frozen meat and the other commodities to be sent should be devoted to the relief of distress in this country. Pending the receipt of your reply on this point, he will defer making inquiries as to the commodities to the purchase of which it is considered that the second £10,000 might most usefully be devoted. AGENT-GENERAL, *London.*

ENCLOSURE 2 IN NO. 13

(Cablegram received by the Agent-General)

September 30, 1914.

Referring to your telegram of 12th September. Committee approve of Mr. Harcourt's proposal or any other arrangements approved by you. Suggestions appreciated.

CHIEF-SECRETARY. *Brisbane.*

PROCLAMATIONS, ORDERS IN COUNCIL, AND PUBLIC NOTICES

August 3, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

DANGER OF WAR

BY HIS EXCELLENCY THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR RONALD CRAUFURD MUNRO-FERGUSON, a Member of His Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Council, Knight Grand Cross of the Most Distinguished Order of Saint Michael and Saint George, Governor-General and Commander-in-Chief of the Commonwealth of Australia.[1]

Australia Commonwealth Gazette.

WHEREAS by the Defence Act, 1903-1912, it is enacted that the expression 'time of war' used in that Act means any time during which a state of war actually exists, and includes the time between the issue of a Proclamation of the existence of war or of danger thereof, and the issue of a Proclamation declaring that the war or danger thereof, declared in the prior Proclamation, no longer exists:

Now, therefore, I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, the Governor-General aforesaid, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby proclaim the existence of the danger of a war.

Given under my Hand and the Seal of the Commonwealth, at Melbourne, this third day of August, in the year of our Lord One thousand nine hundred and fourteen, and in the fifth year of His Majesty's reign.

By His Excellency's Command,

E. D. MILLEN,
Minister of State for Defence.

God save the King!

[1] [The formal parts of subsequent Proclamations are omitted.]

PROCLAMATION

Calling out of Citizen Forces

Whereas by the Defence Act, 1903-1912, it is amongst other things enacted that the Governor-General may, in time of war, by Proclamation, call out the Citizen Forces, or any part thereof, for active service, and that the Proclamation shall state the reason for calling out the Forces : *Australia Commonwealth Gazette.*

And Whereas, by a Proclamation dated the third day of August 1914, the Governor-General has proclaimed that a danger of state of war exists, and it is, in the opinion of the Governor-General, essential in the interests of the Commonwealth that some part of the Citizen Forces should be called out for active service :

Now, therefore, I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, in exercise of the power conferred by the said Act, do by this my Proclamation call out such part of the Citizen Forces as are required to fulfil the precautionary measures laid down in Defence Schemes.

ESTABLISHMENT OF CENSORSHIP OF CABLE AND WIRELESS COMMUNICATIONS

His Excellency the Governor-General, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, has been pleased to approve of the establishment of censorship of all cable and wireless telegraph communications throughout the Commonwealth, being proclaimed as from five o'clock P.M. of 3rd August. . . . *ibid.*

E. D. Millen,
Minister of State for Defence.

ORDER IN COUNCIL

Examination Service established for Mercantile Traffic

I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, the Governor-General, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby direct that the Examination Service for *ibid.*

the control of mercantile traffic shall be established at the ports set forth in the Schedule hereto from the third day of August 1914, and that all merchant ships entering the said ports on and after that date shall be subject to examination in accordance with the Examination Service for the control of mercantile traffic.

THE SCHEDULE

Sydney (including Port Jackson).
Melbourne (including Port Phillip).
Brisbane.
Port Adelaide.
Fremantle.
Hobart.
Thursday Island.
Newcastle.

[Proclamations with regard to 'days of grace' for enemy merchant ships were issued on August 5 and 6. Proclamations forbidding the export of specified arms, explosives, and military and naval stores were issued on August 6 and 10.]

August 6, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

CALLING OUT OF CITIZEN FORCES

Australia Commonwealth Gazette.

I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, do by this my Proclamation call out for active service such part of the Citizen Forces as may be notified by their Commanding Officer or by the District Commandant that their services are required.

August 10, 1914.

ORDER IN COUNCIL

TRANSFER OF NAVAL FORCES TO IMPERIAL GOVERNMENT

ibid.

I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, the Governor-General, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby order that from and after the publication of this Order all the vessels of the Commonwealth Naval Forces, and all the officers and seamen of those vessels, shall

be transferred to the King's Naval Forces, and that such transfer shall continue in force until the issue of a Proclamation declaring that the war no longer exists.

PROCLAMATION

GERMAN SUBJECTS TO REPORT THEMSELVES

I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, the Governor-General, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby call upon all persons who are subjects of the German Empire, and who are resident in the Commonwealth, to forthwith report themselves to the officer of police nearest to the place in which such persons reside, and to supply to such officer particulars as to their names, places of residence, and occupations or businesses, and such other matters as such police officer thinks fit to require : *Australia Commonwealth Gazette.*

And I do further call upon all such persons immediately before changing their place of residence to notify to the nearest officer of police their intention so to change their place of residence, and forthwith upon arrival at their fresh place of residence to notify such arrival to the officer of police nearest to such fresh place of residence.

[A similar Proclamation with regard to Austro-Hungarian subjects was issued on August 13.]

August 15, 1914.

MILITARY FORCES OF THE COMMONWEALTH

AUSTRALIAN IMPERIAL FORCE

Department of Defence,
Melbourne, August 15, 1914.

His Excellency the Governor-General, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, has been pleased to approve of a Military Force being formed of persons who voluntarily agree to serve beyond the limits of the Commonwealth, to be designated the 'AUSTRALIAN IMPERIAL FORCE,' consisting of One Division, one Light Horse Brigade ; that Brigadier-General W. T. Bridges, C.M.G., Inspector-General, *ibid.*

be appointed to organise and command the Force; that the under-mentioned be appointed to be Officers of the Force :—

Rank.	Name.	Corps.	Present Appointment.
Colonel . .	Ryan, C. S., V.D.	Army Medical Corps	Principal Medical Officer 3rd Military District.
Colonel . .	Hobbs, J. J. T., V.D. . . .	.....	Commanding 22nd Infantry Brigade.
Colonel . .	Sellheim, V. C. M., C.B. . . .	Administrative and Instructional Staff	Adjutant-General.
Lieut.-Colonel	Patterson, W. G.	Administrative and Instructional Staff	Staff Officer to Inspector-General.
Lieut.-Colonel	Forsyth, J. K. .	Administrative and Instructional Staff	Quartermaster-General (temporary).
Major . . .	Austin, J. G. .	Army Ordnance Department . .	Director of Ordnance Services.
Major . . .	White, C. B. B. .	Royal Australian Garrison Artillery	Director of Military Operations.
Major . . .	Glasfurd, D. J. .	Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders	Director of Military Training.
Captain . .	Marsh, J. T. .	Army Service Corps	Director of Supply and Transport.
Captain . .	Foster, W. J. .	Administrative and Instructional Staff	General Staff Officer, Grade III., Headquarters.
Hon. Lt.-Col.	Thomas, T. J. .	.....	Officer-in-Charge Administration, Royal Military College.
Hon. Captain .	Griffiths, T. .	.....	Secretary, Military Board.
Warrant Officer	Maycock, W. C.	Army Service Corps	Quartermaster-General's Department, Headquarters.

[Warrant Officer Maycock is granted the rank of Lieutenant whilst employed with the Australian Imperial Force.]

And that the under-mentioned officers be appointed to command brigades as shown hereunder of the Australian Imperial Force :—

Brigade.	Rank and Name.	Corps.	Present Appointment.
1st Infantry Brigade	Lieut.-Colonel MacLaurin, H. M.	26th Infantry Regiment	Commanding 26th Infantry.
2nd Infantry Brigade	Colonel McCay, The Hon. J. W., V.D.	Unattached List	
3rd Infantry Brigade	Lieut.-Colonel Sinclair-MacLagan, E. G., D.S.O.	Yorkshire Regiment	Director of Drill, Royal Military College.

E. D. MILLEN,
Minister of State for Defence.

[Proclamations forbidding the export of wheat and flour, of meat and of sugar, were issued on September 7, 8, 9, and 23.]

September 17, 1914.

ORDER IN COUNCIL

Powers of General Officer Commanding Australian Imperial Force

I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, do hereby order that, subject to such arrangements as may be made by His Majesty's Secretary of State for War while the Australian Imperial Force is in England, and to the Orders and Regulations issued by the Commander-in-Chief of the Imperial Forces while abroad, the General Officer Commanding the Australian Imperial Force shall have and may exercise any or all of the following powers in relation to such Force, that is to say :— *Australia Commonwealth Gazette.*

(*a*) The power within the authorised establishment to change, vary, or group units in such manner as he considers expedient from time to time ;

(*b*) The power to transfer officers and men when necessary from one corps or unit to another, and to detail them for any duty in any place which he considers expedient from time to time ;

(*c*) The power to appoint and promote subject to confirmation officers who, in his opinion, are suitable and qualified to fill vacancies in the authorised establishment ;

(*d*) The power to remove officers and men who are unfit by reason of wounds, sickness, or other causes, and to arrange with the High Commissioner in London for their return to Australia ;

(*e*) The power to detail to units the *personnel* of first and other reinforcements in order to make good wastage due to any cause ; and to delegate such power if necessary ; and

(*f*) The power to employ, discharge, attach, or remove civilian *personnel* required from time to time.

September 23, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

Prohibition of Exportation of Mares

Australia Commonwealth Gazette.

I, Sir Arthur Lyulph Stanley, duly appointed, and acting as the Deputy of the Governor-General in accordance with the provisions of the Constitution, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby prohibit the exportation of mares from the Commonwealth unless the consent in writing of the Minister of State for Trade and Customs has first been obtained.

[A Press Censorship was established by Order in Council, dated September 24.]

September 30, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

Prohibiting Importation of the Hindustan 'Ghadr'

ibid.

Whereas it is desirable to prohibit the importation into the Commonwealth of any copy in any language of a paper called the *Ghadr* (Mutiny), or *Hindustan Ghadr*, published at San Francisco, United States of America :

Now therefore I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, the Governor-General aforesaid, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby prohibit the importation into the Commonwealth of any copy in any language of a paper called the *Ghadr* (Mutiny), or *Hindustan Ghadr*, published at San Francisco, United States of America.

ORDER IN COUNCIL

Wireless Telegraphy

ibid.

I, Sir Ronald Craufurd Munro-Ferguson, the Governor-General, acting with the advice of the Federal Executive Council, do hereby order as follows :—

1. That the Officer in Command of the Military Forces in any Military District or any officer acting under his authority may take possession of any wireless telegraphs in the Military District in which he exercises his command.

2. That the Lieutenant-Governor of Papua, or any other officer acting under his authority, may take possession of any wireless telegraph in such Territory.

3. That any officer or person acting under the authority of this Order may require the owner of any wireless telegraph station or plant, whether for transmitting and receiving, or for transmitting or for receiving, and whether on land or on any ship, to dismantle such station or plant, and to place such parts of the apparatus used thereon or therewith as he may require in the custody of some officer of the Commonwealth, and may also require such owner to take down any mast and aerial wires used in connection with such station or plant.

4. That in the event of the owner of any wireless telegraph station or plant on land or on any ship failing to comply with any requirement under the preceding paragraph, the officer or person acting under the authority of this Order may dismantle such station or plant, and take down any mast, and remove or sever any aerial wires used in connection with such station or plant, and may place any parts of the apparatus used in connection with such station or plant in such place of safety as he may think fit.

106833

SPEECHES AND STATEMENTS

July 27, 1914.

AUSTRO-HUNGARIAN MOBILISATION ORDER

ANNOUNCEMENT

Sydney Morning Herald, July 28, '14.

A partial mobilisation has been ordered in Austria-Hungary. Those subject to military duty who have to return to the monarchy for this purpose will be notified by notice to call to arms (*einberufungskarten*).

Their travelling expenses will be refunded.

Those called who do not possess the necessary means for the voyage will have to apply personally at the I. and R. Austro-Hungarian Consulate-General, 24 Castlereagh Street, Sydney, producing their respective call to arms.

To all the others called their travelling expenses will be refunded subsequently, according to the existing compensation rates.

An amnesty has been granted to all deserters, and to all those who have presented themselves for military examination, provided they return to the monarchy at once, whether they have been called in or not.

FREYESLEBEN, *I. and R. Consul-General.*

Sydney, July 27, 1914.

July 30, 1914.

SPEECH OF THE AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER (MR. COOK) AT HORSHAM

Melbourne Argus, July 31, '14.

'Whatever happens, Australia is a part of the Empire right to the full. Remember that when the Empire is at war, so is Australia at war. That being so, you will see how grave is the situation. 'So far as the defences go here and now in Australia, I want to make it quite clear that all our

resources in Australia are in the Empire and for the Empire, and for the preservation and the security of the Empire.'

July 31, 1914.

SPEECH OF LEADER OF FEDERAL LABOUR PARTY (MR. FISHER) AT COLAC

'Turn your eyes to the European situation, and give the kindest feelings towards the Mother Country at this time. . . . Should the worst happen after everything has been done that honour will permit, Australians will stand beside our own to help and defend her to our last man and our last shilling.' *Melbourne Argus,* July 31,'14.

SPEECHES OF GOVERNOR AND PREMIER OF NEW SOUTH WALES, AT THE SYDNEY CHAMBER OF COMMERCE

SIR GERALD STRICKLAND: The greatest ally of commerce is undoubtedly peace; and the objective of the leaders and the statesmen of the greatest of commercial nations to-day is undoubtedly to ensure peace—peace on business lines, and for business purposes. The Empire is to be congratulated that there is at the head of the Foreign Office in England to-day, a great statesman, Sir Edward Grey, who before he came to the Foreign Office was earning, as manager of a large business concern, a salary at least equal to that he receives as Foreign Secretary. That will show we are fortunate in the training and qualifications of the most important man to-day on the face of the whole earth. We have to thank the wise experience to which accidents have been turned. The accidents of financial difficulties half a generation ago have given us a magnificent collection of patriotic, experienced, and trusted men as managers and chairmen of our banks; and, perhaps, never was the banking position so full of solidity as it is to-day in the face of so important a crisis. If the trouble is short, it will hurt nobody; if it is long, it will hurt Australia less than anybody else. The control of paper money in Australia is in the hands of one authority. It is a very great standby if the worst becomes very bad. There is something in connection with commerce which is even more valuable *Sydney Morning Herald,* July 31,'14.

than gold—and that is financial integrity. It is the secret of British success in trade. That integrity, and that loyalty to allies as well as competitors, have made the Anglo-Saxon race great; but that integrity, so precious in peace, is more valuable in war.

MR. HOLMAN: I feel like Sir Gerald Strickland, how greatly changed the position of Government, of commerce, and of public affairs has been during the last week. We know not what the day or the hour may bring forth. The last hours have brought forth great happenings, fraught, possibly, with great evils to mankind at large, and to Australians in particular. I venture to say—and I believe Sir Gerald will assent to this proposition—that the day has not yet arrived for us to abandon hope, firstly, for the confining of the struggle now going on in Europe to compafatively small dimensions, and secondly, for its speedy and happy termination. I am an optimist, possibly a foolish one, but I do believe in the progressive determination of humanity to diminish, and so far as possible, abolish the horrors and miseries of war. I have a deep-rooted confidence in the sound sense of Western Europe; I believe the Governments there will go to very great lengths before they see the world plunged into the atrocities of the general struggle which is being forecasted in certain directions. I appeal to the Sydney Chamber of Commerce to exercise its influence to prevent the spread of any bellicose spirit, and urge all Australians to sink political and sectional difference in this time of crisis, for the good of Australia.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 1, '14.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (SENATOR MILLEN) yesterday was shown the cable message regarding Canada's readiness to send 30,000 troops to assist Great Britain. He was asked how Australia stood in this respect.

'If the necessity arose,' he said, 'I am quite convinced that Australia would recognise that she was not merely a fair-weather partner of the Empire, but a component member in all circumstances. Australia's loyalty and willingness to co-operate have been very conspicuously in evidence on previous

occasions, and there is no reason to suppose that any other attitude is likely to be manifested should any future emergency arise.'

August 1, 1914.

SPEECH OF AUSTRALIAN ATTORNEY-GENERAL AT SYDNEY

SIR WILLIAM IRVINE: If ever there was a time when the Australian people should be united it is the present. The world is on the brink of one of the greatest convulsions of modern times. We hope still that Britain—that grand old country from which we have sprung—will not be drawn into the present terrible conflict; but I am confident that the people of Australia, no matter what be their political colour, desire to convey to those statesmen who have the control of the affairs of the Empire the assurance that, whatever course they may adopt in the present grave crisis, they will have behind them our patriotic and loyal support. They may be assured of this, the Australian people will unite to place their resources, both of men and money, at the disposal of the statesmen of the Mother Country. *Sydney Morning Herald,* Aug. 3, '14.

August 2, 1914.

STATEMENT OF LEADER OF FEDERAL LABOUR PARTY

Melbourne, Sunday.

Speaking with an evidently deep sense of responsibility, Mr. Fisher made the following statement:— *ibid.*

'In a state of affairs like this there are no parties. The safety and welfare of our country, and all near and dear to us is our first consideration. Mr. Cook knows my views.'

STATEMENT OF MR. W. M. HUGHES

Whatever needs to be done to defend the interests of the Commonwealth and of the Empire must be done. War is a dreadful—an awful thing. This war is a crime against civilisation, but our hands at least are free from guilt in the matter. If, as unhappily appears to be now the case, Britain is involved and war is upon us, then we must face it and do our part in *Melbourne Argus,* Aug. 3, '14.

a fashion worthy of the traditions and spirit of our race, and do what has to be done with inflexible resolution and purpose, and we must face it unitedly. For this, indeed, is the occasion when none shall be for the Party, but all be for the State.

August 3, 1914.

STATEMENT OF PREMIER OF NEW SOUTH WALES

Sydney Sun, Aug. 4, '14.

Cabinet was summoned to consider the position generally in consequence of the war; first to consider the general problem of defence, and secondly the special matter of the effects of the present crisis upon the financial situation.

As the first matter—that of defence—is entirely in the hands of the Federal Government, all that we have done is to communicate with the Prime Minister offering our unreserved co-operation in any measures judged to be necessary for the national safety at this moment.

In that matter we considered ourselves to be ordinary citizens wielding considerable authority, and we propose to exercise that, if called upon, in any way which in the judgment of those responsible will conduce to the efficiency of the national powers.

STATEMENT BY VICTORIAN PREMIER

Melbourne Argus, Aug. 4, '14.

'As State Ministers we are satisfied that the Federal Executive will do its duty in the present situation. The State Government is prepared to co-operate with the Federal Government in every way possible,' declared the Premier (Sir Alexander Peacock) at the close of yesterday's meeting of the State Cabinet.

'While we discussed routine business to-day,' said the Premier, 'we could not but consider the greater question which is paramount in everybody's mind just now, and give thought to the difficulties looming ahead. We know that the Federal Ministry met this afternoon. We are satisfied that the Prime Minister (Mr. Cook) and his colleagues will do everything that is necessary to show the people of the Mother Country, and her enemies too, that, so far as this part of the Empire is concerned, Australia will act promptly and de-

cisively. Australia recognises her responsibilities to the Empire.

'I as Premier, and my colleagues as State Ministers, were pleased and grateful when we learned of the note struck by Mr. Fisher and Mr. Hughes, that this was the time when all parties should combine and show to the world that we are a united people. With these sentiments we entirely agree. There may be differences in our political opinions, but there are no differences in our views concerning our duty to the British Empire, and particularly to this part of it, which has received so much help and such kindly consideration from the motherland. We are satisfied the Federal Executive will do its duty. We, on our part, will give a full and complete co-operation, and we are sure the other State Governments of Australia will do the same.'

NOTIFICATION BY GERMAN CONSUL-GENERAL

The IMPERIAL GERMAN CONSUL-GENERAL, HERR KILIANI, yesterday issued the following notification :— *Sydney Morning Herald,* Aug. 3, '14.

'The mobilisation has been ordered in Germany. All Germans subject to military duty according to the prescription in their military passports, have to return and to present themselves at the Bezirkskommando in the first German port reached.'

August 4, 1914.

SPEECHES IN NEW SOUTH WALES LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY

MR. WADE: I desire to ask the Premier, can he give the House any information with regard to the European crisis, and whether it is a fact that England is involved in the war? *New South Wales Hansard.*

MR. HOLMAN: No. I regret to say that I have no more information than is available to hon. members generally through the Press. Any opinions which the Government may have formed are almost entirely speculative, as are the opinions of hon. members themselves. I may say that I was in communication with the Federal Government this afternoon at quite a recent hour, but no information was

forthcoming then. I should like to say, however, that if any definite information does reach me, I think I should not be exceeding my duty, as head of the Government, if I promised that the Leader of the Opposition would be made aware of it at once. In view of the general gravity of the situation, my colleagues have met and taken such steps as suggested themselves as desirable. But we have no more information—I say it once again—than is generally available to hon. members on both sides through the public Press. . . .

MR. WADE: Perhaps I might be allowed to say a few words in the form of a statement rather than a question at this particular juncture. I want to say, on behalf of my party, that we appreciate to the fullest the unparalleled gravity of the present situation in Europe and reflected in Australia. This is an occasion when war seems to be almost unavoidable, in which the Empire will be involved, and it is an occasion when we, in Opposition, feel that under those conditions party divisions should be sunk, in view of the larger issues entirely overshadowing them. Anything we can do under those conditions to strengthen the hands of the Government in voicing the sentiments of the Empire, or in helping them to maintain financial confidence and stability, the Premier can be assured of our readiness to do.

MR. HOLMAN: I need not assure the hon. member and the House on behalf of my colleagues that we entirely appreciate the spirit of the remarks he has just made, and we shall not hesitate to avail ourselves of the offer of assistance which the hon. member has given us.

[Members rising in their places, sang the National Anthem and 'Rule, Britannia,' and gave three cheers for the King.]

MR. D. STOREY: In view of the unsettled condition of Europe, and the probability of the Empire being involved in war, I would suggest to the Premier that it would be unwise to go on with any business to-night, and that we should therefore adjourn.

MR. WADE: Might I put the matter to the Premier by way of indorsement? I am sure that I can say with official indorsement that the general temper of the House is unsettled owing to the unfortunate crisis which has arisen, and that it is the desire of hon. members that we should adjourn till to-morrow.

MR. MCGOWEN: I quite agree with hon. members who say that the temper of the House is unsettled, but, at the same time, I would point out that we have not received any definite information that the Empire is at war. In view of the generous offer made by the Leader of the Opposition, I think we might very well leave it to the good sense of the Cabinet not to bring forward public business unless it is absolutely necessary.

MR. HOLMAN: . . . After having consulted the hon. member for Macquarie, in whose name the first business for to-night stands, I may say that I am perfectly willing, if it is the general desire of hon. members, to adjourn at once, and to allow the night for the consideration of the new position that has arisen. At the same time, I would submit that, whilst naturally and necessarily the plunging of the Empire into a state of war will have a deeply unsettling effect on the public mind, and upon the minds of public men like ourselves who represent the public, nevertheless the preparations for war, and the arrangements for war, are not our essential business, and I believe we shall contribute most effectively to the safety of the whole Commonwealth—I speak not merely of the Commonwealth of Australia, but of the commonwealth of the English race and the Empire—if in troublous times like this we calmly and resolutely continue to discharge our duties. We should take it upon ourselves to set an example to the general community by refusing to be perturbed or panic-stricken, and by going deliberately and rationally about our affairs, confiding, as we all do, in the ultimate strength of the nation and the success of the cause in which our nation's arms are engaged. I may mention that I have just been informed that one of the leading newspapers has received a cablegram of the gravest possible description, intimating that the Imperial authorities have ordered the general mobilisation of the British Army for to-night, presumably owing to the declaration of war by Great Britain. Under the circumstances, I think I shall be expressing the sentiments of hon. members generally if I move the adjournment. I move:—

That this House do now adjourn.

Question resolved in the affirmative.

SPEECHES IN VICTORIAN LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

Victoria Hansard.

The HON. W. L. BAILLIEU (Honorary Minister): I intend to move that the House, at its rising, adjourn until Tuesday next; but, before doing so, it will be appropriate for me to read an announcement which has been made in another place. The statement, which was made by the Premier, is as follows:—[See below, p. 111.]

I understand from my colleague, the Minister of Mines, that in another place the Premier moved, and the Leader of the Opposition (Mr. Elmslie) seconded, a motion for the adjournment of the Legislative Assembly for a week. This is not an occasion for a lengthy speech, and all I desire to say is that I feel that the present is a time for the display of coolness. It is possible that calm consideration in another part of the world may yet be able to avert the terrible disaster that seems to be looming over us. It is not easy to fully realise the stupendous consequences to the world and the Empire which will result from a war, but if we find ourselves forced into a conflict, I think we will know how to do our duty.

The HON. A. A. AUSTIN.—To the British Empire.

The HON. W. L. BAILLIEU: To the British Empire, of which we form a part. It is idle for a certain section of the community to say that we do not want war. No one wants war, with all its evil consequences; but if, by the decree of those in high places, we find ourselves involved in war, we will behave like Englishmen. My thoughts fly particularly to the working classes, who will be most seriously affected by hostilities; but if we keep our heads cool in this continent of Australia, we may be able to lessen the consequences of a great conflict, and prevent them from being as severely felt as they would be by those who were closer to the theatre of operations. It certainly will be the duty, and, I am sure, it will be the earnest desire, of all those who are employers, whether as public bodies or as individuals, to carry on work as far as they possibly can, so that the evils of the conflict may be reduced to a minimum. I move:—

> That the House, at its rising, adjourn until this day week.

The motion was agreed to.

SPEECHES IN VICTORIAN LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY

Victoria Hansard.

SIR ALEXANDER PEACOCK (Premier): The circumstances in which we meet to-day are known to all of us. There is no need to emphasise the existence of such a crisis as the civilised world has probably never seen before. The Government feel, and they are sure that all honourable members share the sentiment, that neither our minds nor our inclinations are in a condition for the discharge of ordinary legislative duties. The issues are so grave, and the considerations so momentous, that it is impossible to compose our minds for the minor matters of politics and legislation. I have had a consultation with the Leader of the Opposition in regard to the step I propose to take; and I think honourable members generally will agree that it is appropriate to adjourn until this day week. I beg to move, therefore—

> That the House, at its rising, adjourn until this day week.

MR. ELMSLIE: On behalf of this (the Opposition) side of the House, I have to say that we are quite in accord with the sentiments expressed, and the proposal made by the Premier for the adjournment of the House. I therefore second the motion.

The motion was agreed to.

SPEECHES IN SOUTH AUSTRALIAN LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

South Australia Hansard.

The HON. A. W. STYLES: It is not my intention to-day to speak at any great length, nor do I wish at this critical juncture even to take the opportunity afforded me to criticise the Governor's Speech, as presented to this Council a few days ago. It seems to me that the international crisis makes it necessary, for the time being, at any rate, to facilitate the Government in any desire they may have to prepare for this great emergency. I do not, neither do any members of my party, desire to put any obstacle in the way of the Government whatever, or to hinder or harass them at this particular time. Never before, I suppose, in the history of the people of this Commonwealth, have they been so deeply moved as

they have been by the importance of the great issue which is now before us, and it is because we recognise how closely we may be drawn into warfare to help the motherland and her glorious empire at this particular time, that we can say to the Government that we shall support the adoption of the Address in Reply to the Governor's Speech, and enable them to go on as speedily as they desire with the business which must exercise the minds of the Government of the country. We know that there are issues at work to-day which are likely to bring about a tremendous amount of unemployment within our area. Broken Hill, Port Pirie, and in fact every one of our mining towns, and not they alone, but every commercial and industrial interest, will feel the shock of this big warfare. Rumour has already come to this Council that England has declared war against Germany, and this I regret exceedingly, but while—

The HON. A. R. ADDISON: It is Germany's fault.

The HON. A. W. STYLES: I do not want to go into the merits and demerits of the position at this juncture, but there is one thing which we desire, and for which we should strive, and that is the peace of the world. I am proud to find that the British Government have been using every endeavour to prevent warfare, and because we realise the importance of the situation, we are not at this juncture going to do other than facilitate the Government in their desire to push on with the necessary work essential at the present time. The Government may be assured of this—that in such a crisis as the present they will have the hearty co-operation of every member of this side of the House, who, although active political opponents, in time of warfare are prepared to stand shoulder to shoulder with the Government supporters in doing the best not only for the Commonwealth, and in particular for South Australia, but for the whole of the Empire and the British race.

The HON. E. LUCAS: Pursuant to a conversation which I had with the Hon. Mr. Styles prior to the meeting of this House, I desire to adopt the action which he has already taken, namely, to forego my right to speak on the Address in Reply. It appears that the affairs of the Empire at the moment so completely overshadow our State concerns that it would ill become this Chamber to have a lengthy debate upon matters that, after all, are of minor importance. I am sure that the

feeling throughout the civilised world to-day, particularly throughout the Empire of which we form a portion, is of the keenest tension. It is one of the most anxious times the nation has ever experienced. There is not the slightest doubt that the Mother Country and the British Ministry have gone as far as they could in the endeavour to secure international peace. Unfortunately, however, the cablegrams which arrived to-day are of a most portentous character, and if the latest report be true, the whole world will have cause to regret the blaze which began over a comparatively trivial matter in the Balkans. If that report is correct, I feel convinced that the course entered upon by the Mother Country has been adopted only from a keen sense of her obligations to the other Powers, and of her duty to the British Empire itself. Our country is not aggressive in regard to warfare, and I hope the time will never come when she will adopt such an attitude, but, when it comes to carrying out treaty obligations, she has a solemn duty to perform. To-day it may be true, as in the past, that

> Not once or twice in our fair island-story,
> The path of duty was the way to glory.

It may be hard and difficult, and nearly always it involves personal and national sacrifices, but in the end it invariably has proved the very best course that could possibly be adopted. I cordially support the adoption of the Address in Reply, and I sincerely trust that although this State, in common with every other part of the Empire, will have to suffer in her commercial and personal relationships, and that although this war promises to be one of the greatest that have shaken the world, peace, and peace with honour, may be speedily brought about.

The CHIEF-SECRETARY[1]: I appreciate very deeply the remarks made by honourable members, and the expression of their desire to help the Government in this time of crisis. We are faced by the most awful catastrophe that has ever befallen the world in its history. The Government recognises the difficulty that will be before them in a very short time. We are already faced by some aspects of it in the cessation of some of our industries in this State, and in the State im-

[1] [Hon. J. G. Bice.]

mediately adjoining, which affects the work of our people and the earning capacity of the Government to such a large degree. I am sure that the action of the party leaders in this House is an exceedingly wise one. Important as our own affairs and concerns are, they fall into insignificance in face of the momentous trouble now threatening us. I appreciate highly the action taken, and with a view to show that the Government are realising their obligation to the Empire and the Commonwealth, I will read a telegram which we sent this morning to the Prime Minister :—'My Government wish to express keen satisfaction at the action taken by your Government in offering navy and men to the Motherland. This State will heartily co-operate with the Federal Government for the good of the Empire.'

I purpose asking members to come to-morrow in view of any contingency that may arise, not that there will be much business to do, but in case of anything arising that will require our assistance and deliberations. I again express the hope that anything and everything we can do will be done to minimise the trouble, feeling assured that whatever may befall us will be met with that calm dignity which has always characterised the British nation in victory or defeat.

Motion carried.

SPEECHES IN SOUTH AUSTRALIAN HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY

The International Crisis

South Australia Hansard.

Mr. Vaughan : By leave of the House I desire to say that in view of the international crisis that has arisen, and the necessity for Parliament setting an example to our people of an undivided front at this juncture, I have decided, with the unanimous approval of my party, and I might say, of those outside as well as inside the House—and I believe it will be in accordance with the feeling of the people generally, and of all parties—to ask leave to withdraw the amendment which I moved to the Address in Reply. Further, I desire to say it is the intention of members on this side of the House, in order to facilitate public business, to refrain from further discussing the Address in Reply. I desire to assure the Premier that

anything that members of this side can do to assist the Government at the present juncture, will be freely done in order to secure the safety of this State. At a time like this we all realise and appreciate the fact that none are for the party, but all are for the State.

The TREASURER (HON. A. H. PEAKE) : I will deal with the proposal to which the honourable member has referred when I am speaking a little later on.

MR. MCDONALD : Has the attention of the Premier been drawn to the proposal by the Leader of the Federal Parliament in the event of England being drawn into the international struggle ?

The TREASURER : Yes, my attention was called to the proposal made by the Prime Minister, and I sent this telegram to him this morning :—'My Government wishes to express keen satisfaction at the action taken by your Government in offering navy and men to the Motherland. This State will heartily co-operate with the Federal Government for the good of the Empire.'

ADDRESS IN REPLY

South Australia Hansard.

The TREASURER (HON. A. H. PEAKE) : . . . During the last few days events of world-wide significance and concern have been hurried on with hurricane rapidity, and the developments that have taken place have such close relationship to our State and national life as to alter the whole course of thought and action. We have been caught by the outer edge of a tremendous maelstrom in which the great nations of the world have become deeply involved. They have been clutched so suddenly and so fiercely as to excite our greatest amazement and awe. It is as if the world in which we exist has lurched, leaving us for the moment in a stupor as to what has really happened, and filled with apprehension as to what the next eccentric motion of the planet may be. People may well be asking with feelings of dismay as to where solid ground may be discovered when they see the strong and powerful empires of Europe rocking with war and commotions. We can but earnestly pray that Great Britain may be steered in safety through the tempest, and that her power and influence may be so directed as to bring the blessings of tranquillity and

peace to the distracted nations. Whatever may betide the Mother Country, whether in peace or war, we shall stand or fall with her. . . . We do not desire to raise any false alarm, nor to bring about anything in the nature of a panic. But it is undoubtedly our duty to state that difficulties of great gravity confront us, and that all the wisdom and courage of Parliament and our people will be required to cope with them. . . . If it should be found necessary to ask for power which would not be sought in other than extraordinary circumstances, the Government will not scruple to do so, having full confidence in the patriotism of both Parliament and people. There is another matter to which I would like to refer. We are a mixed community, and our country has been pioneered and developed by men of different nationalities, and it is by their assistance to our efforts that this State has done so well as we all know it has done. In such a time as this there is, unfortunately, a danger that racial animosities may be awakened. That is to be deprecated, and it will be deprecated by every right-feeling man in the community. I hope that it will be borne in mind that we are all fellow-citizens, and that the loyalty of South Australians, no matter from what stock they may have come, is thorough and undoubted.

SPEECH OF THE LEADER OF OPPOSITION IN NEW SOUTH WALES

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 5, '14.

MR. WADE: So far as one can see, there is an obligation on the part of England to join in as well. What does this mean to Australia? We rely upon the primary products for the chief source of wealth, and until the supremacy of the sea is determined there will naturally be a very serious interference with our trade and commerce, and on the issue of the first great naval battle will depend the future not only of Australia, but of the British Empire. Situated as we are in the outlying portions of the British Empire, with a vast shore to protect, with immense possibilities of wealth stored up in the soil, and with a mere handful of people for the purpose of defence, we realise, with all its intensity, how important it is to maintain the supremacy of the old country. On the narrowest grounds of self-interest we are impelled to support the nation which has given us the privileges we are now en-

joying, but there is a far higher motive promoted by the sense of common kinship, common interest, and common sentiment, to respond with one voice, to the appeal of the old country for the Empire in the hour of trial. Under such conditions England's quarrel is, and must be, our quarrel; her success is our success; if she is defeated there is a gloomy prospect for Australia. War is at all times horrible, and with the perfection of death-dealing weapons it becomes more devastating. The possibilities of desolation, ruin, and bloodshed consequent upon the present crisis are incalculable. It is a fight to the death, and England wants, not only the actual physical numbers of her sons throughout the Empire, but the moral effect of the united Overseas Dominions. Perhaps Germany never thought that Russia would refuse her ultimatum, perhaps she never considered that the British Dominions would rise as one man to offer assistance in the hour of need. It is such crises as this that bring home to every man's mind the immensity of the British Empire, and every young Australian should be thrilled with pride in offering a helping hand to the Mother Country.

August 5, 1914.

SPEECHES IN NEW SOUTH WALES LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

Declaration of War by Great Britain

The Hon. F. Flowers: I am desired to announce, with the consent of the Premier, that the legislation we forecasted a few weeks ago at the opening of Parliament will stand postponed for some little time, in view of the very serious nature of the information we have received in connection with the declaration of war by Great Britain, to which we are proud to belong. We feel that it would be folly to adjourn to any definite period, in view of the probability that legislation of an urgent character may be required for the protection of our commerce. I propose that the House shall adjourn, and meet again at the usual hour to-morrow. The Government have done everything to play a loyal and faithful part to our great Empire by assisting her in this very trying period in offering to the Commonwealth Government the whole of the resources of the State, the Commonwealth, on its part, having offered the

New South Wales Hansard.

whole of its resources to Great Britain. Words are altogether inadequate to describe one's feelings in connection with a crisis of this character—a crisis which, I think, is unparalleled in the history of the British people. It is a matter of great satisfaction, however, that right throughout the Empire there has not been one false note. All parties stand united. No matter what our differences may be, nor how strong our party prejudices, the solidarity which has been evidenced from one end of the Empire to the other is magnificent. I feel there is no need for us to express any sentiments on this occasion. We have done all that we could be expected to do. Every shilling we possess, every ounce of our determination and energy, are at the disposal of Great Britain in the defence of the great Empire to which we belong. I am delighted to think that the statement of the Premier in the other Chamber was received with such satisfaction. The Opposition and the Government stand together as one, although the cleavage of party politics is great. In this House there is no strong party spirit, and we can only add the expression of our determination to stand by Great Britain in her trouble. We express the earnest hope that she will come out of it triumphant, and that the issue will be to the advantage of civilisation from one end of the earth to the other. I move—

That this House do now adjourn.

The HON J. GARLAND: I am sure that we welcome the words which the Vice-President of the Executive Council has used. Every one of us here agrees with what the Government has done, and we are all proud of it. We now recognise no party. We are all for the Empire. Party lines have been blotted out; and from now till the end of the war we are Australians, who are doing our best to bear our share of the Empire's mighty burden.

Question resolved in the affirmative.

SPEECHES OF PREMIER AND LEADER OF OPPOSITION IN NEW SOUTH WALES LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY

New South Wales Hansard.

MR. HOLMAN: I desire to inform the House that to-day—as hon. members are no doubt aware, from the information

published in the Press—a special intimation has been received by his Excellency the Governor to the effect that war has definitely broken out between Great Britain and Germany. . . . We have offered unreservedly to place the whole of the resources of the Government of this State at the command of the Commonwealth authorities, who are charged under our Constitution with the responsibility of arranging for the effective defence of the nation, and I think I may say that we have received from the Prime Minister a cordial acceptance of our offer, and an assurance that in the immediate future certain requisitions will be made upon us. I propose to invite the cordial co-operation of all hon. members in maintaining the public well-being, and in co-operating as far as we are called upon in securing the public safety. I can only beg hon. members generally to realise that whilst these are stirring and difficult times, there is, so far as we can see at present, no occasion for hysteria or panic. But I invite hon. members on both sides of the House to unite with the Ministry in expressing a loyal and resolute determination to remain united in front of the common danger and in opposition to the common enemy.

MR. WADE: The announcement made by the Premier can scarcely have come as a surprise to hon. members, as it seemed inevitable in view of the developments in Europe within the last few days that the Mother Country would become embroiled in war. At the same time, although the announcement was not unexpected, its gravity cannot be overestimated, and I am sure that I voice the feelings of not only hon. members but the public outside when I say that the Premier's announcement will be received with satisfaction everywhere. Primarily the responsibility for rendering assistance to the Motherland in a concrete form rests upon the Commonwealth Government. But there are many functions and spheres of action over which the Federal authorities have no jurisdiction, and in respect to which the State can be of the utmost assistance indirectly as well as directly in helping a united Empire to establish concrete factors for meeting and alleviating difficulties which must crop up under these novel circumstances. In this State much good may be done as the result of the moral effect of a Parliament united on one question and for one purpose only, namely, that of preserving

the nation's weal, and advancing the best interests of this portion of His Majesty's dominions. We are confronted with a period of trial involving sacrifices on the part of every section of the community. We have taken our own part as politicians by sinking all party issues and lines of party cleavage, but we cannot close our eyes to the fact that with the declaration of war the means of transport must at all events for some time be crippled, and the volume of trade and industry, which has reached large dimensions in the Commonwealth of recent years, must, for the time being, be brought, more or less, to a standstill. That inevitably involves a curtailment of profits, a shrinkage in the volume of business, and a curtailment in the channels of employment. I, therefore, say that one and all should be prepared for some sort of sacrifice in the near future, and I only hope and trust that every section of New South Wales will be prepared to share the sacrifices with each other. I might throw out a suggestion of an entirely friendly nature; if it is inevitable that hands must be shortened owing to the reduction in business and trade, let that be done as softly as possible without any indication or suggestion of panic, and avoiding all conduct which may lead to the creation of any unpleasantness, soreness, and even class feeling. If these things must take place, let us hope, trust, and pray that it will be for a short time only, and we will watch with anxious eyes the announcement from across the seas that England is once again mistress of the seas. With that proud announcement we may look forward to the restoration of the ordinary channels of trade and commerce, and as far as is possible under those conditions a revival of the full volume of employment within our borders. But let me make this request to those who are employers of labour or who are purveyors of goods—not to seize the opportunity for their own benefit of making undue profits at the expense of the community. I say that because I have noticed with some apprehension, in the Press during the last day or two, indications of a rise in the prices of commodities. If our prospects and our forecasts are correct, there may be a reduction in employment, but no curtailment of the volume of supplies, and on all economical grounds there should be no reason for an increase in prices to the people of New South Wales. If, through the ordinary development of trade opportunities, increased prices are

realised for goods from oversea, there can be no fair ground for imposing penalties on the consumers here who are the victims of suffering and hardship for which they are not responsible, and which, in the common interests, and as patriots of the great Empire, we ought, as far as possible, to share in common. Let us at this crisis be calm and cool, and act with a clear conscience.

SPEECHES IN SOUTH AUSTRALIAN LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

Address in Reply

South Australia Hansard.

The President: I beg to inform hon. members that, accompanied by the mover and seconder, and other members of the Council, I waited upon his Excellency the Governor, and received the following reply to the Address from the Council:—

The Honourable the President and Honourable Members of the Legislative Council

In thanking you for the Address in Reply to my Speech at the opening of the present session of Parliament, I accept with satisfaction the assurances that you will give every consideration to the measures which will be laid before you. I pray that, with God's help, South Australia may be guided safely through the crisis into which our Empire has been drawn, and that His blessing may rest both upon the people of this land during the days of trial ahead and upon your efforts to preserve the well-being of this State. [Sir] H. L. Galway, *Governor.*

August 5, 1914.

The International Crisis

The Hon A. W. Styles: I ask the Chief-Secretary, as Leader of the Council, whether he has any statement to make with reference to public affairs, and in particular to the present European crisis?

The Chief-Secretary (Hon. J. G. Bice): For the information of hon. members, I have to bring under their notice

a minute which the Premier has received from his Excellency the Governor. It reads :—

> I have just received the following telegram from the Governor-General of the Commonwealth :—'War has broken out between Great Britain and Germany.' I would suggest that you announce the news in the House this afternoon. I feel confident that the grand spirit of patriotism and brotherhood which binds together the peoples of the many component parts of the British Empire will carry our country triumphantly through the great ordeal, and make that Empire stronger and more confident than ever.
>
> (Signed) [SIR] H. L. GALWAY, *Governor.*
>
> GOVERNMENT HOUSE,
> *August* 5, 1914.

LETTER OF GOVERNOR-GENERAL OF AUSTRALIA TO THE MAYOR OF NEWCASTLE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 6, '14.

MR. MAYOR,—I very much regret that, being unable to leave Melbourne during the present crisis, I am obliged to postpone my visit to Newcastle, and to forego, for the present at any rate, your kind hospitality.

I had been looking forward with lively interest to visiting the Newcastle of the Pacific, the namesake of the greatest coal exporting port in the North Sea, but the outbreak of war in Europe has diverted our thoughts to other channels.

We all realise that, though the immediate cause of war is remote from our interests, its consequences may be vital to the Empire, threatening, as it does, the position of the two great friendly Powers whose understanding with us has, till now, secured the peace of the world, and given to the Empire that security which is essential to her prosperity. The British Government has the unanimous support of all parties and of all classes, and we are confident that Great Britain has only intervened to avert a situation gravely menacing to the interests and stability of the whole Empire.

From every one of the Dominions has come tidings of the same steadfast unanimity, of the same firm resolution to defend our common cause. Here in Australia the action of the Government, the attitude of the Opposition, the loyal co-operation of the States, testify that the same spirit animates her people.

This enables the Commonwealth to take prompt and effective action for the defence of our shores. Australia speaks with one voice, and stands shoulder to shoulder with the other Dominions in defence of the Empire.

(Signed) [SIR] R. M. FERGUSON, *Governor-General.*

SPEECH OF THE MINISTER OF DEFENCE

MR. E. D. MILLEN: Much as we deplore the ravages and waste of war, Australia applauds the decision of the Imperial Government. Any other course would have been received with undoubted disappointment. In the midst of the gloomy international firmament there is one bright star. United, enthusiastic, almost passionate is the desire of the Dominions to rally to the support of the Motherland in this her hour of trial, and to unite with her in the preservation of the common traditions and the joint inheritance. Because Australia is proceeding with the development of a strong and vigorous nationhood within the Empire, she appreciates the noble stand taken by Great Britain on behalf of the smaller nationalities, struggling to remain free, which have appealed not in vain for the protection of the might and power of the great liberty-loving Empire, of which the Commonwealth forms part, and she joins with the statesmen of the Mother Country in protesting against the unprovoked aggression against the friends of Great Britain, and the attempted domination by one power of the destinies of the whole world. This is a fight for freedom, and no more inspiring battle-cry could be given in this momentous struggle than that of 'Empire,' which has been built up on the basis of freedom. Here in Australia we are blessed with sunny skies and natural resources such as few parts of the Empire possess, but we shall be the more ready to make all the sacrifices of life and money which may be demanded. Speaking as Defence Minister of the Commonwealth, I can confidently state that Australia is ready—aye ready!

Melbourne Argus, Aug. 6, '14.

SPEECH OF PREMIER OF WESTERN AUSTRALIA IN LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY

MR. SCADDAN (The Premier) said: I received this morning from the Prime Minister, the following telegram:—'Official 123

Perth Western Mail, Aug. 7, '14.

information has been received that war has broken out with Germany.—(Signed) JOSEPH COOK.' I immediately called into my office Ministers representing the Executive Council and the Leader of the Opposition. I recognised the fact that the trying circumstances of the day made it one in which no thought could be given to any matters from a party point of view. I therefore asked the Leader of the Opposition to join with us in the consideration of those various matters which may, and no doubt will, require our quick and urgent attention in the near future. I recognise further that this crisis in which we have been plunged is probably the most critical in the history of the Empire, and that the time has passed when we can look upon the issues that confront us with party eyes. I think I may say that so far as Western Australia is concerned, and the rest of the British Dominions generally, we will not only be loyal, but will do our part in maintaining the integrity of the British Empire. So far as Western Australia is concerned—and I can speak only from the point of view as head of the Government—I recognise that we can do but little to assist the Motherland at this critical juncture. But there are many things which can be done, and will at the same time be of assistance. These we can do by thoroughly protecting our own interests in the direction of preventing, if possible, anything in the nature of a panic. This, I urge, should be done. I urge, too, that the people should place absolute reliance in those who are entrusted with the government of the State for the time being, just as we, as an Executive, are prepared to place implicit faith in those at the metropolis of the Empire, and who will be responsible for the proper conduct of the war. No person abhors war more than I do. I regret, and we all regret, the critical position which has arisen, but now we are faced with it every one will, I think, join with me in expressing the hope that the Empire of which we form a part will emerge from the struggle eminently successful. There is the common and devout hope also that the war will be attended with as little suffering and loss of life as possible. I do not know that I can say a great deal more. In circumstances such as those which have arisen, it will be recognised that there will be very many problems which the Executive will be called upon to deal with during the next few weeks or months; on some occasions we will probably

have to act spontaneously. Possibly our actions sometimes may not be thoroughly understood at the moment, and we may be subjected to severe criticism, but all I ask at the present juncture is that this House, and through it the public, will accept from me, and also, I think, from the Leader of the Opposition, an assurance that our one desire is to protect the interests of our people as a whole. That we can do by acting calmly, after full consideration of the matters which come before us, and also by showing the public that, with proper confidence reposed in those at the head of affairs, we are likely to avoid what might otherwise be a calamity. The question of the defence of Australia as part of the Empire is one controlled by the Commonwealth, but there are other matters which require some consideration. It is a matter not merely of military defence, for there is the position of those who, through misfortune, will find themselves out of employment. If unemployment does arise, I hope that it will be as light as possible; so far as we as an Executive are concerned, we propose to try to obviate any undue hardships being placed upon the citizens. Unless things remain normal, we hope, by mere adjourning the House until to-morrow, to take action which we trust will receive the endorsement of all members of the House, and which will prevent anything being done to our detriment as a State and as portion of the Empire. On Monday last I telegraphed to the Prime Minister on behalf of the Executive Council, informing him that we are at his call at any moment, and are prepared to set aside every other consideration to do as the Executive consider necessary. In conclusion I can only hope that the outcome of this terrible war—it will probably be the worst war known in history—will at least tend to adjust some of the differences which unfortunately exist, and will have the effect also of lesser demands being made upon the people to provide armaments for one Christian nation against another. May it also tend to bring about a better feeling. In closing, I can only express the hope that the Empire will come out of the struggle with glory and honour to herself, and to all concerned.

SPEECH OF MAYOR OF BRISBANE AT QUEENSLAND VOLUNTEERS' MEETING IN BRISBANE

Brisbane Daily Mail, Aug. 6, '14.

To the quiet and intent assembly the Mayor [Alderman C. M. Jenkinson] explained that as the Chief Magistrate of the city he considered it his duty to do all in his power to aid the State and the Mother Country in emergency; he had been greatly heartened in that respect, because since the first announcement the registration of volunteers had been of a magnitude that was positively soul-stirring. Even now Queensland could throw in its full force to aid the Home Land. In addition he had during the day received numerous telegrams from all parts of the State, intimating that every available eligible man would be placed at the disposal of the military authorities. The time had not yet arrived when Queenslanders should lose their heads. The wise nation always took the precaution to be prepared for any emergency. That was why the movement had been instituted. He thought that he could see his way clear to ask all who were willing to volunteer to register at the Town Hall after the meeting, or on the morrow. If they had not had a great deal of military training, they would get it now. Under such circumstances it was only natural and reasonable that all Britishers should be somewhat excited, but they had to be ready so that, when the crucial critical moment came, victory would be theirs. (A voice: 'We 're all ready.') The thin red line of kinship with those at home made it imperative that, when called, Australians all would defend their homes, territory, women and children. In any case, concluded the Mayor, you will all conduct yourselves in a manner befitting the stock from which you have sprung.

SPEECH OF THE ACTING PREMIER OF TASMANIA

Hobart Town Daily Post, Aug. 6, '14.

The Acting Premier (Hon. J. E. Ogden) of Tasmania made the following statement yesterday: 'The Government has cabled to the King through the Governor an expression of loyalty of the people of Tasmania, pledging themselves to do all in our power to assist the Empire during the present crisis.'

Mr. Ogden also wired the Prime Minister (Right Hon.

Joseph Cook), stating that the Tasmanian Government was prepared to co-operate with the military authorities, and to render every assistance in its power.

August 6, 1914.

STATEMENT OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER

MR. COOK: The whole of the State Governments have notified their full co-operation with the Commonwealth Government to render every assistance in their power, and generally unreservedly to place all their resources at the service of the Commonwealth and the Mother Country. The Government of Victoria has further offered the use of the police stables at the rear of the barracks, together with the large drill hall connected with the police depot, for military purposes, and the Government of New South Wales has drawn attention to the State bakery, where, if necessary, rations of bread could be prepared. The Lord Mayors of Sydney and Melbourne have communicated on behalf of their respective Councils, offering all the facilities those cities can give. The executive of the Motor Traders' Association of New South Wales has unanimously carried a resolution expressing its unswerving loyalty to the British Empire, and places at the disposal of the Government all the resources of the Association. The Commonwealth Government greatly appreciates the spirit which prompts all these splendid and patriotic offers. We have just to sit tight now and see the thing through. Whatever the difficulty and whatever the cost, we must be steadfast in our determination. Our resources are great, and the British spirit is not dead. We owe it to those who have gone before to preserve the great fabric of British freedom, and hand it on to our children. Our ancestral home is the repository of great liberties, great traditions, and great piety, and on our very lives we must cherish them. Our duty is quite clear, namely, to gird up our loins, and remember that we are Britons.

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 7, '14.

SPEECH OF THE VICTORIAN PREMIER AT THE TOWN HALL, MELBOURNE

SIR ALEXANDER PEACOCK moved:—'That this meeting expresses its deepest sorrow at the terrible outbreak of war

Melbourne Argus, Aug. 7, '14.

among the European nations; its fullest admiration and appreciation of the efforts of the British Government in the cause of peace, and regrets that their efforts were not crowned with success.' He spoke as one of many millions in the great British Empire. When those in the far-off dependencies thought of the wonderful efforts made by their forefathers to build up the Empire, and for the peace of the world, they must recognise that tremendous sacrifices had been endured. Soldiers and sailors of the present generation recognised the responsibility of making good the work of the generations which had preceded them. What a fine thing it was that Federation had become an accomplished fact! Now Australians were speaking with one voice to deal with their common interests, and not with six voices. This was no time to talk about State and Federal politics. All were united now. No matter what position in public or private life—no matter whether wealthy or otherwise—all were now together. They had to hang together and, if needs be, they would die together. What was the right of talking about State rights when all their rights were in jeopardy—the rights of the States, the Commonwealth and the Empire? When he and his colleagues, with the full concurrence of the Leader of the Opposition (Mr. Elmslie) offered to place at the disposal of the Prime Minister all that the State had, he felt sure that the people would respond and endorse the action. Was it not a grand thing to know that not only the Parliament of Victoria, but the Parliaments of all the States, had acted similarly by placing all the resources of their States at the disposal of the Prime Minister to help him and his colleagues in this trying situation? The people trusted the Prime Minister to do the right thing. They asked no question, but they would follow, no matter what political party they had assisted previously. As Treasurer of the State, he must inform them that the Ministry had great responsibilities in a time like this, but he thought he knew the people of Victoria and of Australia, and he felt they would be prepared to stand behind the Government. Mr. Elmslie had given hearty co-operation, and had been in consultation with him daily. At a time like this the financial stability of the country must be the first consideration, and he and his colleagues were prepared to lead the way in maintaining credit and public employment.

STATEMENT OF PREMIER OF TASMANIA

HON. JOHN EARLE: During my visit to the west coast, I had an opportunity of realising what the effect of the present war might be. At Rosebery I was met by a number of men who appealed to the Government, through the Premier, for relief in the way of employment, the mines having closed, and there being no other industry in the district. There was every indication of absolute want in the near future. I desire to impress on the people of the State the wisdom of serious consideration of the present crisis. Our people are rather prone, under certain circumstances, to allow the feeling of patriotism to carry them away to an excessive demonstration, and to neglect the more serious question of industries. The real demonstration of patriotism by the people of Australia at the present time, would be a stolid determination to carry on the industries in which they are engaged. If the war is going to be a protracted struggle, which we all hope it will not be, it will not be by flag-flapping or singing patriotic songs that we will be useful to the Empire. It will be by an industrious following of their trades and callings that our people will be placed in a position to assist the Mother Country in bearing the brunt of battle. I therefore hope that particularly the agriculturists of our State will not waste time seeking enlistment in the army, or consider their reluctance to enlist as a demonstration of disloyalty, but will stick to the plough, where they will be able to show the Empire the most useful side of patriotism.

Hobart Town Daily Post, Aug. 7, '14.

August 10, 1914.

SPEECHES OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER AND LEADER OF OPPOSITION

MR. COOK, responding for the Commonwealth, said that over the festivities hung the shadow of war. For the first time in our history we were faced with a war which threatened our own individual existence. He wondered whether we realised the fact that we were at war with this great nation of Europe as much as Great Britain was at war. The Empire was at war, and therefore we were at war. Were we not

Melbourne Argus, Aug. 11, '14.

fortunate in having our warfare at such a distance from Australia; but we must not imagine for one moment that we were out of it. It was a pride and honour to Australia that behind us and about us were forces which were helping us to maintain the supremacy of the Empire—the land we lived in and loved. The fact that the war was so far away ought not to help us to lose sight of the fact that it was a war to the death, and that we were in it if necessary. In Australia for a century and a quarter, never a shot had been fired. The hoisting of a flag had been sufficient through all those years, and now for the first time the tocsin of war had sounded. Around our coasts were prowling somewhere a few of those German gunboats; but he hoped they were not going to do much damage. He believed they would not; but the menace was there. There was a quiet confidence in Australia that showed that we would be able to protect our own shores, and may be have something to say to the foe that was prowling about in this predatory fashion. It seemed inevitable that this intentional blood-letting should occur, and he was not sure that the outbreak of war did not come to many people, in the Old Country in particular, as a relief, for he would even believe that the result of it would be to stop that mad race of armaments that had been going on for so long, and which could only issue in one way, and that was the way in which it had come about. We were in it, and we had to see it through right to the end. It was his first experience of war, and when he told them that for a week now he had been living either at his office or in bed, they would see what it meant to gather up the ends of things, and see them through. In Australia we had had no experience to guide us in these matters, but he believed we would win through with credit. One thing which was going to sustain us in the hour of trial was the wonderful fortitude and patience of the people. The spirit of the British race was not dead yet. He never realised that it was so much alive in all its purity and integrity, and in all its grim determination to face these issues, until this week; but it was with pleasure that he was able to announce that Australia had got men and money too. Last week the Ministry had been paying the money out. His colleague, the war lord of the Treasury, had been spending the money with confidence, and he would continue to spend as much as would

minister to the self-respect and resources of the Commonwealth. It would be a good deal, he knew, but Australia would expect the Ministry to do whatever was necessary to see this country, with the rest of the Empire, through to a successful conclusion. Meantime there were lots of things to do, for the war was the most righteous war that had been seen for many generations. We were fighting that we might keep our word, that we might honour our contract. There never was a war wherein the moral forces were more prompting and stronger than in this. To his way of thinking, there were worse things for a people than to be assailed in a good cause. If we knew anything of the British race, and the freedom it had inherited and would cherish, the war would go on until Great Britain had restored to those smaller principalities the freedom she claimed for herself—the right to their own national and independent existence and freedom—and Great Britain would emerge from the war with greater influence in the councils of the world than she had ever had. We were not going to fail. We would not fail until our resources were exhausted, and that would not be for a very long time. In the meantime we had to carry the burden, and vie with one another how we could render help to the Mother Country. Our blood ties and our associations with the Motherland made that imperative. A Torrens title had been given us to do what we pleased with this country. We had slept, and eaten, and grown rich while the great fleets of the Empire had protected us. Now that these fleets were called away, it was up to us not only to protect our own country, but to rally to the help of the Empire, and preserve it for the rest of the world. One of the duties of the country, perhaps the most important one, was to keep the wheels of industry going round. The Ministry intends to keep the wheels of industry turning, and the working men of Australia might be sure of this, that the Ministry would take care that they were not going to be thrown into poverty and destitution. Australia had its trade to keep going, and he would appeal to those gentlemen engaged in the trading operations of the country. The sea was open, as Sir Arthur Stanley had said, so one need not be alarmed. Business men should go on as usual; and if it cost a little more the people of Australia would not begrudge to pay it in order that trade might go forward at its full volume. While Australia main-

tained its own trade she was maintaining the working men of Great Britain at the same time. . . . They would stand together in every effort that was necessary to maintain the integrity of the land, to strengthen the fighting resources of the Empire, to take whatever obligation was laid upon them in the crisis that had come upon us. Above all, we must remember that we had a vigilant enemy to watch. Perhaps the best-organised power in the world was the German Empire, and we were at war with it. There were the German warships and our islands in the Pacific to watch. We had a great deal to do out here besides going to the Mother Country. He hoped the people would stand up to this burden, and back the Ministry with its money, and send men to the defence of the Empire over the seas. We had to sit tight and see the thing through, and if we made up our minds as Britishers, then he did not apprehend any serious results from the war, notwithstanding the calamities predicted.

'Britain, myriad voices call!
Sons, be welded one and all
Into one Imperial whole;
One with Britain heart and soul;
One life, one flag, one fleet, one throne,
Britons, hold your own.'

MR. FISHER, in replying, said that deeds were the order of the day. Australia should be united and determined to assist the Empire, so that out of those sad events some good might come. This affair might have come upon us a few years ago, and we would not have been ready in the Pacific. The war that was being waged was a disgrace to civilisation, and the outcome of it would be to greatly reduce the destructive effects of war. Australia's financial institutions were sound, and the people should join together to minimise the injury and distress that might ensue.

SPEECH OF ACTING MINISTER FOR HOME AFFAIRS

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 11, '14.

MR. W. H. KELLY: The history of Prussian bureaucracy is one of the most sinister things of modern times. The first use of the weapon it forged was directed against poor defenceless Denmark, from which it wrested two of her fairest provinces. Having sharpened its weapon in this ignoble way,

it was next tried on Austria, from whom the hegemony of the German people was wrested. Satisfied now that its blood-stained weapon was efficient, the quarrel was engineered with France, and France, in her turn, was drenched in blood, that Prussian bureaucracy might become German autocracy. The only big obstacle now to the universal dominance of Prussian swashbucklerism lay in England, and unceasingly they prepared to destroy us. 'To the Day' was the toast of the rapidly-created and secretly-built German navy. To the day of destruction of Britain's dominion of the seas, which, while securing Britain and her colonies from the envy of the world, had been used impartially for the advancement of the world's shipping and the peace of the world's ocean highways. These dominions are now threatened, and the Commonwealth Government, believing that it reads aright Australia's duty to her race, has rallied to the support of the old land.

August 11, 1914

SPEECHES IN VICTORIAN LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

The Hon. W. L. Baillieu (Honorary Minister): . . . I am sure that the gravity of the position has been borne in on us all. First of all, there is the enormous loss of life that will inevitably ensue. Happily our own country is not at the seat of the conflict, but its brave men are going there. We at this end of the world really know very little of war. For the first time in our history we are feeling the effects of it in trade, and that probably causes us to contemplate the whole business a little more seriously, and to more properly realise what is going on. It is inappropriate in a way for a member to speak in a personal sense, but I have been so much in the vortex of things, and so highly affected, that the overhanging cloud appears a very heavy one. One realises more forcibly, perhaps, than one ever thought one could, how dependent we are in Australia on what we produce, and of what little value it is to us unless we have facilities of trade with the world. For the first time we realise what it is to have an Empire Navy policing the waters of the world in order that trade may be free, and free to all nations. That is what Great Britain's object has always been. Here until now we have never felt what it might be to have even restrictions of trade. I confess

Victoria Hansard.

quite openly now to a feeling that the dislocation of trade is going to be very heavy. Yet I think in the ordinary way I am as optimistic as most men connected with business and the affairs of the world. But I realise the enormous dislocation of trade which threatens to affect big masses of people, by reason of their inability to exchange their products for cash. I believe the position is being met, as far as it possibly can, by the people who are governing this work, to the best of their ability, but they can only do it by aid from institutions. I believe that the desire of the institutions is to give that aid. . . . This is not the time, of course, to inquire why we are in the war, and who is responsible. We have all made up our minds about that. When a house is on fire, you do not inquire who is responsible; you want to put the fire out. We have now only to look for remedies, and each of us in this State can do his part. I want to emphasise this: that the Government will, to the best of its ability, and with all its strength, do everything it can to keep all kinds of employment going. Some would say, 'You might wait until you have greater evidence that there will be a call upon you.' I hope that the call will not come, and that I am a mistaken prophet; but I cannot but see plainly the signs, and what they all mean. If we meet the position courageously, and keep our heads cool, I think we shall come through the trouble better than any other part of the world. That is our good fortune; it is the bad fortune of those in other parts that they will be worse placed. One thinks of the terrible carnage of blood. We have the fact that the troops in the field number more than double the population of Australia, and that they have to be fed. One asks how this stupendous work is going to be performed, and whether the war will not be blocked in consequence of the inability of those taking part in it to discharge this obligation. One thinks that it will. When I think of Germany 'running amuck'—well, the sooner it completes the business, the better for mankind. At least, there will be some good, if we come to the certainty that it will be the end of all great wars. The mastery of the seas will determine the boundaries and the conditions of settlement, just as has been the case before; and Great Britain will never see the blood which is being spilt without determining, if human ability can determine it, that such a thing shall not occur

again, at least not in our time, and not in our children's time. I only hope that I have been taking a more pessimistic view than I am justified in doing, but I move the adjournment of the House for the reasons I have stated. I feel, however, that it would not be right to restrict hon. members in the expression of the views they may choose to utter.

The HON. W. S. MANIFOLD stated that, on behalf of his brother members, he desired to thank Mr. Baillieu for the spirited address he had given, and for the wise and well-considered sentiments he had given utterance to. For his part, he (Mr. Manifold) wished earnestly that the Government could see their way to follow the example set by the British Parliament, in dropping for the time being all contentious matters that had been before Parliament. He admitted, of course, that the matters which had been before the British Parliament were enormously more anxious and more serious than anything that had come before our Parliament; but, still, this was a small community; and in small communities smaller matters were apt to assume very great importance. He thought it would be a great pity if, in order to carry out pledges or promises made by the Government in the past, they should continue to endeavour, when the attention of hon. members was directed to this terrible war in Europe, to pass some of the contentious Bills now on the list. There was not one of them that would not do just as well in six months' time. . . . With regard to the war, it was known that certain good came out of evil. He thought it was the most magnificent spectacle that could possibly have been seen—the way in which, in Great Britain, all the strong feelings in connection with the Home Rule question had been dropped. It was a splendid spectacle to see the Nationalists and the Ulster men standing shoulder to shoulder to support the Empire and the grand old flag. It must have been a terrible awakening to the German Emperor, who, no doubt, thought of England as a house divided against itself, with the trouble in Ireland, and two parties ready to fly at each other's throats, and plunge the Empire in civil war. Instead of that being the case, both parties had dropped all their differences, and had come together as brothers in support of the Empire. Notwithstanding all the talk of late years of trouble in India, it was also a magnificent spectacle to see the way in which the

Indian Princes were coming forward and offering their men and money to fight for the Empire. Altogether, this war, terrible as it would be, would, he was quite sure, cause the Empire and all its varying outlying parts to be more united than ever it had been in the past. In Canada, the citizens of French extraction were seen to be just as loyal as the British-born citizens. Even in our own Commonwealth here, we found that all party differences had been sunk, and the Opposition in both the Commonwealth Parliament and the State Parliaments were seen to be earnestly supporting the Government. It was a most splendid issue to come from this terrible infliction of war. He was quite sure that, as a united nation, Great Britain would emerge from the war with honour, and, when peace did come, it would be a peace which would last for many years.

SPEECHES IN VICTORIAN LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY

Victoria Hansard.

SIR ALEXANDER PEACOCK (Premier): On the day when the House last met and adjourned, the situation was so grave, there was such a complete absence of news, and the danger of this part of the Empire taking any step not in accordance with the rest of the Empire was so imminent, that I was impressed with the necessity for complete silence on the part of the Parliament of Victoria. I am still impressed with the fact that this is an occasion on which there must be no dividing lines in a sovereign Parliament of the Dominions. The Leader of the Opposition, whose loyal help I desire at this opportunity to gratefully acknowledge, agrees with me that, whatever our differing opinions may be on matters affecting the State of Victoria, there cannot be, and must not be, any divided counsels on matters affecting the British Empire. We wish, in this Parliament of Victoria, to show a unity which is definite and definitely expressed. To that end I have been careful to keep the Leader of the Opposition informed as to every step which I have thought it wise to take, so that not the Ministerial side only, but the whole of the members, should act in unison. I have also thought it my duty to put myself in continuous communication with the Prime Minister of the Commonwealth to advise him where he desired advice, and to support him where he needed support. I am pleased to

say that the Prime Minister has received all offers of help in a very proper spirit. I feel satisfied that in this great Imperial crisis the Prime Minister and his colleagues are devoting themselves to their work in a true Imperial spirit. Honourable members will recognise that it is not possible for me to give in detail the conversations which I have had with the Prime Minister. The House must remember that the Empire is at war. It is a war which the Imperial authorities have not sought, and which they did their best to avoid, if it could be avoided, with honour. I am prepared to speak for the Parliament of Victoria, and to say that we have a complete trust that the Imperial authorities have acted in such a way as to carry the Empire into the war with honour, and also as complete a trust that they will carry it through the war and out of it with as great honour. The House will, I am sure, accept the position in which the whole Empire is placed, and not desire information which the Imperial authorities do not think it wise to give. The serious position which is ahead of the Empire is the possible dislocation of its trade and commerce. The cost of the war must be enormous—it is already enormous—and the cost of the war, whether it be long or short, can only be met by sustaining the trade and commerce of every part of the Empire. For this purpose, as well as for the defence of the coasts of Great Britain, our great Navy has been called into being. Trade and commerce is the very life-blood of the little island in the North Sea which is the centre of the widely-scattered British Empire. We can do much to keep the furnaces, the looms, and the factories in the United Kingdom and Ireland busy. So long as they are kept busy within the heart of the Empire, so long will the people there be able to bear the great strain upon the Imperial resources. Broadly speaking, the policy of this Government, and, I am glad to say, the policy of the Commonwealth Government, and that of the other States, is to keep the wheels of industry within Australia moving. The magnificent policy of the Imperial Government, which takes the risks of war in oversea shipping, is one which helps us to do our part. Australia has a vast oversea trade, the greater part of which reaches the United Kingdom, and almost the whole of which reaches some part of the Empire. The Prime Minister has been able to announce to the people of the Commonwealth

that the seaway is open. So far, the Imperial Navy has already gained a great, even though it may be a bloodless, victory. One of the essential duties of that Navy is to maintain the open seaway. The open seaway is essential to Australia's trade. We have still got that open seaway, and behind it the insurance of war risks by the Imperial Government. That being so, there is reason for confidence at this time. It is a time for traders to push forward their trade rather than to reduce it, because the risks are so small. The Empire wants our men and our ships, and we are sending them. We are satisfied that none of them will fail the Mother Country in her hour of need. But the Empire wants more than our ships, and more than our men—it wants our trade. Therefore, I say that the work of the Parliament of Victoria in this little corner of the Empire is to keep our industries and our trade moving. I realise that at this juncture the Government must keep an open ear to the requests of the captains of finance, and the captains of industry, for now there is no question of difference between capital and labour—we are all under the cloud of the same menace. The ears of the Government are open to receive the requests of masters and of workmen. Members, perhaps, will feel that I am speaking in broad terms. It is quite true that I am; but, finally, I wish to say this: that the work of the Government at this time is not to proceed with any party questions, whether they be small or great, but to devote all its energies to maintaining the financial stability of this State and the employment of its people. Every way to do this will be fully tested, and every effort made to accomplish what, I think, is the one important duty laid upon this section of the governing forces of the Empire. To enable us to accomplish these objects, a Conference [1] has been called by the Prime Minister, and is now sitting. I had to leave it for a short time, and I explained to the members of the Conference that I had to attend here. The Conference is attended by representatives of the Commonwealth Government in the persons of the Prime Minister, the Attorney-General, and the Minister of Defence, also by the Leader of the Opposition, Mr. Fisher, and the ex-Attorney General, Mr. Hughes. It is also attended by the Premiers of all the States except the Premier of Western Australia, Mr. Scaddan, who could not possibly be here, but whose views have

[1] [See p. 143.]

been made known to the Conference by means of confidential communications. The Conference, we hope, will be able to finish its business in time to enable me to announce to the House to-morrow afternoon the result of our deliberations. In order that I may be able to attend the Conference, I propose to move that the House adjourn until to-morrow. Honourable members will, of course, understand that it is impossible for me to make any communication at this stage. I can understand the anxiety of honourable members at this critical time, but we have to trust one another completely. I am satisfied, from what I have seen during the past few days, that the present crisis has been the cause of anxiety to all of us. The manner in which the people have cast aside all party considerations, and have shown their willingness and anxiety to do their part in assisting those in authority, will be remembered by me as long as life shall last. I am glad to be able to acknowledge the friendly assistance received from members on all sides, and especially from the Leader of the Opposition, whom I have acquainted with the leading points requiring consideration. I now move—

That the House do now adjourn.

. . . . . .

MR. MCLEOD: I realise that, on an important occasion like this, discussion on the motion for the adjournment of the House would be altogether out of place; but there are one or two suggestions I would like to make to the Government. I feel sure that every one of us is seised of the vast importance of the crisis that is facing the British Empire to-day, and, whilst we are not afraid, whilst the stirring memories of a thousand years of the glorious history of the British Empire give us the utmost confidence, we cannot help feeling that we have another reason for confidence, and that is the magnificent offers of help to the Mother Country that have been made from all the Dominions of the Empire. In Ireland the question of Home Rule is dead for the time being. In South Africa, which has but recently emerged from a struggle with Great Britain, the people espouse the cause of the Old Country. In India, where agitation had been going on, that agitation has been dropped. All the Dominions are showing their desire to do all they possibly can to aid the Mother Country. No matter what any Government may do in regard to food sup-

plies and keeping the wheels of industry going, there is no doubt that there is going to be a good deal of hardship and suffering. I have a suggestion to make. We have observed that not only have the Dominions offered practical help in the shape of men and money, but Canada has made a splendid offer in connection with food. The Canadian Government propose to supply the Motherland with 1,000,000 bags of flour, which will be most welcome to the poor in the Old Country, who, in spite of all that may be done, will be suffering hardship and privation. I do not see why we should not supplement that offer, and I would suggest to the Premier that he bring that proposal before the Conference. Why should we not offer to supply a considerably quantity of frozen and preserved food to the Mother Country? That would be a welcome donation, and one that would be applied to the relief of those whom we all have at heart—families deprived of their bread-winners by this unfortunate war. There is another suggestion I have to make. We are sending a number of men to the Old Country. Possibly they are to fight, and possibly they are not to fight; but I think one of the most graceful and proper things that could be done would be for the Government to undertake to insure all those men before they leave our shores, so that they may feel, when they leave here, that if they are killed in war, or die through ill-health, ample provision has been made for those whom they will leave behind them. I make these suggestions in the open House, so that if honourable members differ from me they may have an opportunity of expressing their ideas.

. . . . . .

MR. MACKEY: I trust that the Government will give sympathetic consideration to the suggestion of the honourable member for Daylesford that contributions of food should be sent to the Old Country. I think that the people of this State will unanimously endorse a proposition of that kind. The suggestion, if carried out—and I hope it will be carried out—would be carried out in a substantial form. It would be a very handsome donation indeed. The honourable member's second suggestion was also most admirable. He proposes that the soldiers leaving these shores should be insured, so that in the event of their being killed, those that they leave behind may be amply safeguarded; or, in the

event of their being injured, so that the bread-winner himself and those dependent on him should not be reduced to a position of abject poverty. I trust the Government will take up those suggestions and carry them out in a manner befitting the great State of Victoria. There is another matter I wish to mention. I have just returned from a visit to the country, and in my district—I am sure the same thing applies throughout the State—there is the greatest anxiety on the part of the people to get the earliest reliable war news. I trust that some arrangements can be made by the State Government with the Commonwealth Government to have authentic news sent from time to time to every telegraph office and post-office in Victoria, to be posted up there. It means a very great deal to the people of Victoria to know how things are going with the Empire of which they form a part. They are eager —they are bursting—to get the earliest information regarding the war, not on account of idle curiosity, but on account of a most laudable anxiety to know how things are going at the other end of the world with this great Empire. I suggest that the earliest information should be sent from time to time to every place where there is a telegraph office, or a post office. I am sure that if that were done, it would meet with general approval throughout the whole of the country districts.

. . . . . .

MR. BOWSER: I understand that the Commonwealth Government have already communicated with Sir George Reid, and asked him to see the British Government with the view of having sent to Australia a daily bulletin of authentic news. It does not, however, seem to be in accordance with the ideas of the Admiralty or the British Government that this bulletin should be issued, because, so far, there has been no result of the application by Sir George Reid. I think that before making any proposal in the direction indicated, it would be well to ascertain how far it would be wise to publish information which has been already refused transmission. I can quite understand the anxiety of the people in Australia to hear the first and most authentic news of the results of the operations in Europe: but I think we can safely leave this matter to those special correspondents whose duty it is to forward cable messages to the London daily papers, and to the press of Australia. I think we can be quite safe in relying

upon them. I desire to cordially support the excellent proposal made by the honourable member for Daylesford, because, although we are willingly sending 20,000 men to Great Britain, and putting the Fleet at the disposal of the Admiralty, we are not making very large contributions to the Empire at this time, when we remember the great size of Australia and the wealth of its people. The prosperity we now enjoy is largely the consequence of the peace and safety maintained by the Fleet and the Army of the Mother Country. The Fleet and the Army have been supported, to a very large extent, by the working classes in the Old Country for all these years, and I think we may very well make the effort which has been suggested by the honourable member for Daylesford. We are in a position to do so equally with the Dominion of Canada, and I hope the Premier will be able to convince the Conference that the step suggested is one which Australia should take.

August 12, 1914.

NOTIFICATION OF FRENCH CONSUL-GENERAL

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug.13,'14.

The CONSUL-GENERAL FOR FRANCE yesterday issued the following notification :—

'All French citizens liable to service in France are required to return to their regiments at the earliest possible date. The mobilisation applies to all reservists up to 48 years of age, excepting those who were aged 45 years on August 7, 1913, and who are exempted from further military service.

'All delays obtained for the accomplishment of military duties (*sursis d'incorporation*) are cancelled. An amnesty will be granted to all those who, up to the 2nd inst., were deserters or defaulters from the army or navy, providing they call and submit at the French Consulate-General on or before September 4 next.

'Reservists who cannot pay their passage home will be furnished with a ticket for the first mailboat of the Messageries Maritimes leaving for France. Those who have served or liable to serve, in New Caledonia, are to return to Noumea if they were born in the years 1889 to 1893 inclusively. All other New Caledonian reservists are for the present not called upon. Tickets for the first boat leaving for Noumea will also

be supplied to those returning to New Caledonia who have not the means to pay their passage.'

August 13, 1914.

RESOLUTION OF SYRIAN RESIDENTS

A deputation of Syrian residents introduced by the Mayor of Redfern (Alderman Leitch) waited upon the Lord Mayor yesterday, and stated that they had held a meeting, at which the following resolutions had been unanimously carried :— *Sydney Morning Herald,* Aug.14,'15.

'That we, the Syrian residents in New South Wales, while regretting the calamitous state of war now raging in Europe, fully recognise that Great Britain is justly and righteously championing the cause of freedom and humanity, and that her efforts in such cause and her attitude in this colossal war have our heartiest sympathy and support.

'That we, as resident citizens of this great Commonwealth, enjoying the fruits of justice, freedom, and protection, and who have learned to love, esteem and honour the land and the flag that shelters us, feel in duty bound, and as a grateful acknowledgment to the nation's ideals and noble motives, beg to offer every available man amongst us, and to pledge ourselves to assist the authorities with men and money, and every possible way in our means and power.'

Messrs. Saliely, Aboud, and other Syrian speakers informed the Lord Mayor that they would contribute to his fund.

August 14, 1914.

STATEMENT OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER

Melbourne, Friday.

The PRIME MINISTER (MR. COOK) this evening made the following statement regarding the Conference just concluded, at which the Commonwealth Ministry, the Federal Opposition, and the State Governments were represented :— *Sydney Morning Herald,* Aug.15,'14.

'The Conference has been marked by the greatest cordiality and cohesion, and members approached every question with open minds and impartial judgment. The assembled State representatives at once agreed to support in every way the efforts of the Commonwealth during the war, as did the

members of the Federal Opposition present. Apart from this, the main purpose of the Conference has been to reduce the amount of unemployment which is bound to follow upon a great calamity like the present war. The questions with which it had to deal are of the greatest importance, to the community, calling immediately for settlement. It is believed that a satisfactory settlement of the more urgent matters has been arrived at. Naturally, finance was the main difficulty, since it is upon this basis that all industrial and commercial operations in a civilised community depend, and it was to a satisfactory settlement of finance, therefore, that the leaders of the Conference were mainly directed. Special financial difficulties arose in two distinct ways. There is, first, the temporary shutting off of supplies of capital obtained from investors abroad; and there is, secondly, the temporary dislocation of many industries arising from the loss of markets and the consequent loss of earning power. Both of these call for judicious application of the existing resources of the Commonwealth, and a spreading of its current credit over the areas of need so created. Fortunately the crisis meets us at a moment of exceptional prosperity and financial strength. The successful harvests and industrial operations of the past few years have left a great accumulation of wealth behind them.

'Australia, as a whole, was never in a stronger financial position than she is now. Her position as to gold and other resources has been closely examined by the Conference, which has been aided by the Treasury experts of both Commonwealth and State Governments, and by representatives of the trading banks. We are unanimous in thinking that if the situation is faced with collective effort, its difficulties can be overcome. The question presented was obviously of the largest and most vital importance, and presented difficulties of no ordinary kind, but the Conference, realising that a settlement was imperative, did not shrink from dealing with it.

'After exhaustive discussion, it has made arrangements which it is satisfied will amply cope with the situation. The States all have large loan obligations in the shape of public works and developmental undertakings. It was decided to do everything possible to avoid the dislocation of industry involved in the stoppage or curtailment of these expenditures.

'The conclusion arrived at by the Conference will allow, we believe, with adequate care, Federal and State public works to be maintained uninterruptedly. Arrangements were made which will enable these to be maintained at their full current volume. As regards commercial and industrial operations generally, it was recognised that the special circumstances demanded special treatment.

'Credit must be maintained, and as this would involve an undue strain upon the normal basis upon which credit rests, arrangements have been made to place the credit of the Commonwealth and States behind the banks, if and when necessary, and upon such terms as will permit the encouragement of employment. By these means employment, both public and private, can be maintained, and the effects of the crisis reduced to a minimum.

'Arrangements have also been made for safeguarding the interests of the general community in regard to food supplies during war time. In conclusion, one thing should be made clear.

'At present there is no serious trouble. The banks as a whole were never in a sounder condition, and have never had anything like the available resources of the present moment. If special difficulties can be met as they arise, there need be no general ground for apprehension as to the financial stability of the nation.'

August 23, 1914.

SPEECH OF PREMIER OF NEW SOUTH WALES AT ALBURY

MR. HOLMAN [at Albury] said that under the modern Hohenzollern system Germany had become the growing menace and terror of Europe. They in the British Empire were a free people, with the right of free institutions, and to govern for the freedom and happiness of the people. An Australian by adoption, he was proud of the privilege. He valued the boon of freedom conferred by their British institutions and British policy. The freedom-loving French people had for many years been struggling against the Jack Boot aristocracy, and had nobly upheld the national traditions. Although they sunk under the domination of Napoleon for some time, they

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 24, '14.

time and again emerged triumphantly from oppression, and had to-day established themselves in a position that was an example to the world. On the one hand, they had arrayed the forces of tyranny, reaction and aggression; on the other hand, the free people of the Republic of France, and the free people of England, under a free King. The failure of the cause of the Allies would not only mean the breaking down of the Empire, but the fabric of liberty upon which the Empire stood. This was a fight between liberty and tyranny. It was unthinkable that they could stay their hands while an inoffensive people like the Belgians were made the chopping-block for the ferocity of the invader. France might be the hereditary foe of the Jack Boot régime, but the industrious, peace-loving Belgians had always gone the even tenor of their way under the sense of the supposed security guaranteed them by the Powers, including the present invader, in 1831. Just because Belgium stood upon the elemental right conferred by that treaty, she was subjected to the pestilential horrors of an unjust war. His heart went out to the Belgians in their sufferings under the heel of the oppressor, and he was pleased that his Government had voted £1000 towards the relief of distress in that country. Never in the history of humanity was it so necessary for the forces that stood for liberty to stand shoulder to shoulder to defeat the purpose of a tyrannous, unscrupulous oppressor. They should stand united and determined to exhaust every resource so that in the interests of humanity the arms of England and her Allies would eventually be victorious.

MANIFESTO OF LEADER AND SECRETARY OF FEDERAL PARLIAMENTARY LABOUR PARTY

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 24, '14.

. . . As regards the attitude of Labour towards war, that is easily stated: We deplore war. We believe war to be a crime against civilisation and against humanity. But to deplore and to denounce war is not to abolish it. War is one of the greatest realities of life, and it must be faced. Our interests and our very existence are bound up with those of the Empire. In time of war, half measures are worse than none. If returned with a majority, we shall pursue with the utmost vigour and determination every course necessary for

the defence of the Commonwealth and the Empire in any and every contingency. Regarding as we do such a policy as the first duty of Government at this juncture, the electors may give their support to the Labour party with the utmost confidence. And this we say, further, that, whatever be the verdict of the people, we shall not waver from the position taken up by Mr. Fisher on behalf of our party, viz., that in this hour of peril there are no parties, so far as defence of the Commonwealth and Empire are concerned, and that the Opposition will co-operate with the Government and stand behind them as one man. The position, then, is that if the electors give us a majority we shall expect Mr. Cook and his supporters to stand behind us. On the other hand, if Mr. Cook has a majority, we shall stand behind him in all things necessary for the defence of the Commonwealth and the Empire. That is the position, and our attitude towards it. It remains for the electors to choose between the two parties. This being so, we desire to direct the electors' attention to some facts of first importance, and directly bearing upon the present position of the Commonwealth and the war. To-day the Empire from its heart to the most distant outposts is in arms. War is upon us! War which many declared impossible, but which, had it found us unprepared, would inevitably have destroyed us. But it had been foreseen, and its outbreak found us calm. It had been prepared for, and we face its consequences with confidence and courage. . . . ANDREW FISHER, DAVID WATKINS (Secretary).

August 25, 1914.

SPEECH OF MR. W. M. HUGHES AT PETERSHAM TOWN HALL

Dealing with the war, Mr. Hughes said no more blasphemous statement was ever made by man than that of the Kaiser in claiming that he acted under Divine guidance in declaring war. This was the last war into which the people would be swept without having an opportunity of saying a word for or against. He did not condemn Britain or Australia for the part they had played, but applauded it—they had no alternative. We had to fight in our own defence, and the war, so far as our part was concerned, was an eminently just one.

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 26, '14.

September 1, 1914.

SPEECH OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 2, '14.

MR. COOK: I am glad to be here to-night, gladder than you can imagine. I feel for just one night let out of school, and a very hard school it has been for the last month, perhaps harder than any of you will ever be able to imagine. I had just concluded a week of meetings as good and as enthusiastic as any I ever addressed anywhere in my life, when a telegram from his Excellency called me to Melbourne. What that telegram was you may readily guess. It had reference to this terrible war which has just broken out. Since then I have had to remain in Melbourne working night and day to gather up the ends which had been scattered by this war. . . . Had Parliament been in existence, I tell you we should have tried to carry on with it, no matter what the difficulties might have been; but I say, frankly, better work has been done without Parliament. I should not be honest if I said anything else. Parliament was shut up because it was unworkable. You did not want Parliament about when they had a job like this on. . . . You and I ought to thank God on bended knees every night that the people of this country did take heed of the advice I gave them four years ago—that they did offer a Dreadnought, and that the Dreadnought is here to-day called the *Australia*. The only trouble about the *Australia* is that she is a little lonely. I would like to get another to keep her company. . . . There have been some German boats about here, and if the *Australia* had not been here, I don't know what would have happened. Your commerce would have been destroyed, your cities probably sacked, and you owe your immunity from the depredations of those German boats to the celebrated *Australia*. . . . Why are we at war? We are at war on behalf of the territorial integrity of little Belgium yonder, to keep our pledged word. I read of the great big powerful nation flinging itself upon the smaller one, blowing up those beautiful fanes of theirs, and sacking their cities without any provocation, and when they get the little fellow down, they say, 'You don't get up unless you pay enough to ruin you for life.' These are some of the horrors of war. We were entitled to come to the help of Belgium, and play our

part in enabling Great Britain to observe her treaties. This country has shown that the mighty British Empire values its reputation more dearly than a comfortable peace. We are at war with a great military autocracy. The Empire—Australia—is fighting for its life. We are fighting for the freest, brightest, and best land on earth. Whilst there is a man in Australia willing to go to the war in the Empire's defence, he would go with my blessing and assistance. War is costly, and has to be paid for. Factories have to be kept going, the credit of the country has to be maintained, panic averted, unemployment prevented, and the enemy watched. It is a tremendous obligation we are learning through this war. It shows us the danger of many of the quack nostrums advocated in the time of peace. . . . I would like to ask you this, Why is Germany running over into France the way that she is? The answer is that she was better prepared than the Allies. She had her men and guns ready on the border, and she simply poured them in over the border in overwhelming numbers. The German Armies may invest Paris, but the war will not be over then. We have seen the value of striking quickly. I am learning lessons myself in this respect. Our Army here is on a peace basis, and it takes time to organise 20,000 men and send them over the sea to the great theatre of operations. I am learning the lesson that Australia must be more prepared than she is. I wish we had another *Australia*. The one we have is all right, and I do not want you to get anything else into your heads. I do not know where the German ships are. If they have gone where we think they have gone, they have gone for a good reason. . . .

September 5, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MR. B. R. WISE, K.C., AT SYDNEY

Long before the war broke out I was of opinion that war between the British Empire and Germany was inevitable. I have for years held the opinion that the real enemy of Australia was not Japan, but Germany. Suppose we lose. That can only be when the British fleet is destroyed. Then we in Australia would be compelled to submit to the most crushing terms that Germany would offer. That would be the end of everything for us as a nation. When every hostile fleet had

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 7, '14.

disappeared, Germany could land as many settlers here as she wished. She would certainly go to Port Darwin, for she wants tropical possessions, and it would be hopeless for us to contend against a German army of, say, 200,000 men, and Germany could land that number of men in five or six years. I have always thought that Germany looked upon Australia as their prize in a war with the British Empire. Australia is the only white man's continent open to them, and ever since President Cleveland and Mr. Olney of the United States warned the German Emperor in the middle of the Nineties that America would not tolerate a German colony in Brazil, the eyes of Germany, when seeking new territory, have been turned towards Australia. That is why I have always said that Germany, and not Japan, was Australia's danger. If we win, we will get everything back many times, and thereby assist to build up a big nation; but if we lose Australia, she will cease to exist, except on the map.

September 14, 1914.

STATEMENT OF PREMIER OF NEW SOUTH WALES

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 15, 1914.

The STATE PREMIER yesterday expressed satisfaction at the successes of the Allies' arms in France:—

'It is a striking illustration of the extraordinary recuperative powers of France and the stubborn resistance to degeneracy of Great Britain. According to certain critics, England has long been a nation of half-witted poltroons, governed by a handful of treacherous scoundrels; the Fleet had been utterly neglected, the Army hopelessly demoralised, the whole nation centred upon improved industrial and social conditions, and the martial virtues of our forefathers dissipated and lost. This is not an over-statement of the picture given by many self-styled patriots in the journals and magazines of the last few years. The test which has now come proves every one of these judgments to be wrong. The race is as virile as ever. Our soldiers prove the possession in the highest degree of soldierlike qualities, and our Navy is easily supreme. And behind the striking units of the community there is a general spirit of national response and of patriotic resolution just as strong as in the most heroic days. The position of France is, if anything, even more remarkable. The readiness with which

she faced the war speaks volumes for the spirit of the nation, and the great measure of military success which has attended her in the heroic operations of the last few weeks shows how completely her national powers have been restored. It is far too early yet to discuss what is to be done when victory is finally accomplished. Germany is a mighty power, and her resources are not exhausted by a single defeat, no matter on how gigantic a scale. At the same time, there are historical reasons for believing that her powers of resistance, as distinguished from those of attack, are comparatively small, and will probably be smaller to-day than in more primitive times.'

September 16, 1914.

CABLEGRAM FROM MAYOR OF NOUMEA, NEW CALEDONIA, TO PREMIER OF NEW SOUTH WALES

'In transmitting to you the following address of the town of Noumea, I would associate the entire population of New Caledonia and its dependencies in its expression of gratitude of the inhabitants of the capital of the colony. I beg to renew personally my warm thanks, and to express in my turn my most sincere felicitations.' *Sydney Morning Herald,* Sept. 17, 1914.

The address referred to reads as follows:—'To Mr. Holman, Premier, Sydney,—We were aware that you had retained the kindest recollection of our Colony, but in remitting to us each day the news of the war you have conferred upon us a valued favour, for which I have to express to you, in the name of the population of Noumea, our deep gratitude. I have to say to you how much we are touched by your sympathy and solicitude at a moment when the soldiers of our two nations, so strictly allied, are sacrificing themselves upon the same fields of battle, struggling, with united glory, for the realisation of the same ideal, and when the entire union of our countries merges them in each other. We rejoice in the sincere friendship that you show us, and thank you for it from the bottom of our hearts.—LEYRAUD, *Mayor of Noumea.*'

NAVAL AND MILITARY: AUSTRALIAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

July 31, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 1, '14.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (SENATOR MILLEN) stated last night that it had been decided that the *Australia, Encounter,* and *Melbourne* should be called to Sydney, and they are due to arrive about noon to-day. He said:—'The decision to shorten the cruise of the Australian Fleet on the Queensland coast, and bring some of the vessels to Sydney earlier than was intended, is merely a precautionary measure. The vessels will at once take in coal and stores here, so as to be in readiness for any developments. At the same time, I wish to emphasise the fact that what is being done is simply in the nature of precautionary preparation.'

August 2, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 3, '14.

SENATOR MILLEN stated yesterday the circumstances under which a small mobilisation of Australian troops had now become necessary.

'Without wishing to add in any way to the anxiety naturally occasioned in Australia by the gravity of the European position,' he said, 'it has been felt necessary to take certain precautionary measures, as provided in the scheme of defence, previously arranged, on the advice, and with the concurrence, of the Imperial authorities. These precautionary measures are well in hand. They include the placing of guards at cable and other stations, and bringing the garrisons of forts up to effective strength. As far as possible these demands have been met from the permanent force, but it is necessary to supplement these to a very slight extent by the citizen forces.

For this reason, steps are being taken to call upon a limited number of our citizen forces for the duty indicated. About 1000 in all will be required; of those 300 will be allotted for the duties indicated, and some 700 will be called together for the purpose of completing the defence of Thursday Island. A further precautionary measure has been decided upon, namely, the establishment of what is known as the examination service. This consists of examining vessels seeking to enter the defended ports of Australia, namely: Sydney, Melbourne, Adelaide, Hobart, Newcastle, Brisbane, and Thursday Island.'

August 3, 1914.

STATEMENTS OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER AND MINISTER OF DEFENCE

MR. COOK: The Government has decided in the event of war to place the Australian vessels under the control of the British Admiralty. We have also decided, in the event of, war, to offer to the Imperial Government an expeditionary force of 20,000 men of any suggested composition to any destination desired by the Home Government, and the cost and despatch and maintenance will be borne by the Commonwealth Government. *Sydney Morning Herald,* Aug. 4, '14.

In reply to an inquiry, the MINISTER OF DEFENCE (SENATOR MILLEN) stated that the force for service beyond the Commonwealth would not be drawn from the ordinary citizen army, as the Defence Act specifically lays it down that 'members of the defence forces who are members of the military forces shall not be required, unless they voluntarily agree to do so, to serve beyond the limits of the Commonwealth, and those of any territory under the authority of the Commonwealth.' The Minister was not prepared to indicate in any way what arm of the service would be represented or any of the details associated with its establishment. He dismissed inquiries by the suggestion that 'It was much too early to be talking about those phases just yet.'

The Prime Minister stated the text of the resolution come to by the Cabinet had been communicated by cable to the Imperial authorities.

August 9, 1914.

STATEMENTS OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug.10,'14.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (SENATOR MILLEN) made an important statement to-night that the Government had decided to organise a small mixed naval and military force for service within or without Australia. Applications for enrolment will be received at once by district naval officers and State Commandants. This force is quite distinct from that being organised for service in Great Britain. Details are now being worked out, and the Minister anticipates being able to furnish them to-morrow.

Melbourne Argus, Aug.10,'14.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (MR. MILLEN) yesterday made the following statement :—'Consequent upon the proclamation regarding German shipping, a considerable number of German ships have been detained by the Customs authorities at various ports in the Commonwealth. Reports, furnished daily to the Military Board by the district commandants, indicate that the mobilisation and concentration of citizen force troops for duty at defended ports have been carried out in a satisfactory manner, bearing in mind that the Australian military organisation is in its infancy. The rapidity with which it has been shown that units are able to assemble, is regarded as a satisfactory augury for future progress in mobilisation arrangements. The response by the troops to the order calling upon their services has been met wholeheartedly, and shows a military spirit in accord with the traditions of the British race. The Defence department is full of praise for the manner in which other Government departments have co-operated with it in meeting military requirements, and the department desires also to pay its tribute to the public for its attitude.'

MESSAGE FROM LORD KITCHENER

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug.10,'14.

The following cable message was received by the Prime Minister to-day from the High Commissioner in London (Sir George Reid) :—

'The Secretary of State for War (Lord Kitchener) desires

me to convey his grateful and special thanks for the splendid help promised by Australia, and hopes and believes that everything will be done promptly and well. He highly appreciates the way in which his scheme has been carried out. He knows the Australian soldier, and knows that he will give a good account of himself. His final words were "Roll up, roll up."'

August 10, 1914.

EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

DEFENCE MINISTER'S ANNOUNCEMENT

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (MR. E. D. MILLEN) made the following explanation with regard to the force late last night:— *Melbourne Argus,* Aug.11,'14.

The expeditionary force will be composed of—

1 Light Horse Brigade.
1 Division.

The former will be of the establishment set forth in Australian War Establishment, 1912; the division will comprise the units laid down in British War Establishments, 1914 (but with three field artillery brigades only), but the establishments of units will be those details in Australian War Establishments, 1912.

Commandants will immediately publish the fact that volunteers are required, and take steps to enrol the names of officers and other ranks of all arms willing to volunteer.

The troops will be raised on a territorial basis, in order to associate definite areas, and the military units now existing in such areas with the several battalions, squadrons, batteries, etc. In this way each unit will represent a State, and a distinct locality, and the troops in that locality. Officers and men will thus bring with them, representative as they will be of definite districts, and of troops belonging to such districts, all the cohesion, feeling of comradeship, and local association which are such valuable elements in promoting the highest standard of discipline in the field and of gallantry before the enemy.

If possible, at least one-half of the rank and file should be men now in their twentieth year, or upwards, who are serving with the colours, and the remainder should be trained men,

especially enlisted, who have served in the militia, in the Imperial forces, or have had war service. Preference will be given to men who have served within the last five years.

Officers and men of Light Horse units should be informed that, if in possession of suitable horses, these should be made available. Horses of requisite standard, and passed by the staff officer for veterinary services, will be purchased on the valuation of an approved board.

The assistance and hearty co-operation of commanding officers should be obtained in securing volunteers, in order that a definite connection may be established between their units and those of the Expeditionary Force.

Single men will be preferred.

The period of service will be for the duration of the war, and a further period of four months thereafter, or until lawfully discharged from such service.

The rates of pay will be:—For privates, 5s. per diem within Australia; 6s. per diem when abroad. Rations in each case. Of the above pay, 1s. will be held as deferred pay in each case.

Officers nominated to command infantry brigades will, upon appointment, proceed to respective military districts, and assist commandants in the organisation and training of their units.

Light Horse and Infantry Brigade commanders will nominate their own staff and regimental and battalion commanders; regimental and battalion commanders will in their turn nominate their own staffs and subordinate commanders. Nomination will be submitted through district commandants to central headquarters.

For other arms and departments, commandants will submit the names of officers volunteering, together with their recommendation as to appointment.

A proportion of cadets from the first class at Duntroon will be allotted to units subsequently.

The names of officers, warrant and non-commissioned officers of the permanent forces who volunteer will be telegraphed daily to central headquarters.

Commandants will submit in writing their recommendations or opinion as to the fitness of individuals.

Warrant and non-commissioned officers of the Instructional Staff will be allotted to units on the following basis :—

Infantry Battalions and Light Horse Regiments—each—1 regimental sergeant-major, 1 regimental quartermaster-sergeant, 1 sergeant machine-gun section, 1 sergeant signalling section.

Other units.—1 permanent warrant or non-commissioned officer will be allotted to each other unit.

Field Artillery.—1 battery sergeant-major per battery.

Commandants will forthwith select and prepare places of concentration, convenient to probable places of embarkation.

When orders are issued for assembly and attestation of quotas, commandants will be responsible for these arrangements, and for the command and administration of troops when concentrated.

Forms of attestation and instructions regarding records will be issued subsequently.

Instructions regarding the equipment of quotas will be given later.

Colonel J. W. McCay, who was deputy chief censor, is to be one of the brigadiers.

Members of the Expeditionary Force will have the privilege of voting in connection with the coming elections as absentees.

August 12, 1914.

PARTICULARS OF EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

The complete Expeditionary Force will be constituted as follows :— *Melbourne Argus,* Aug.12,'14.

Unit.	Personnel.	Horses.	Guns.
Light Horse Brigade—			
Headquarters . . .	34	26	..
3 Regiments . . .	1,608	1689	6
Field Artillery Battery . .	162	173	4
Ammunition Column . .	100	118	..
Signal troop	43	45	..
Train	150	158	..
Field Ambulance . . .	120	106	..
Total	2,226	2315	10

Unit.	Personnel.	Horses.	Guns.
Division—			
Headquarters	80	54	..
3 Infantry Brigades	12,351	768	24
2 Light Horse Squadrons	321	334	..
Headquarters Divisional Artillery	22	20	..
3 Field Artillery Brigades	2,178	2112	36
Ammunition Column	607	734	..
Headquarters Divisional Engineers	12	8	..
2 Field Companies	412	114	..
Signal Company	163	80	..
Divisional Train	645	638	..
3 Field Ambulances	762	300	..
Total	17,553	5162	60
Grand Total	19,779	7477	70

There will be 221 other officers and men employed in various capacities.

State Quotas

Victoria will, according to present arrangements, provide the largest proportion of the force, and at least one brigade of infantry in addition to Light Horse, Field Artillery, and departmental troops, will be drawn from this State, Colonel J. W. McCay, formerly Deputy Chief Censor, being in command of the dismounted men. In pursuance of Mr. E. D. Millen's wish, the recruiting will be as scattered as is conveniently possible, the idea being that every portion of each State should have its special interest in the expedition. There is a proposal that the units raised should be considered as second battalions of existing regiments, so that the war honours might later on be associated with them. Thus men volunteering in Ballarat would be sworn in as members of the second battalions either of the 70th (Ballarat) Infantry, or of the 71st Infantry (Ballarat Rifles), and so on throughout the Commonwealth. The State quotas in round numbers will be as follows :—

State.	Men.
Queensland . . .	2380
New South Wales . .	6420
Victoria	7430
South Australia . .	1770
West Australia . .	840
Tasmania . . .	1070

The units will be self-contained in every particular, so that there will be no necessity to add to the equipment when abroad. Tents are not to be taken, however.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 13, '14.

One of the greatest difficulties in equipping the Expeditionary Force is that of providing the large number of horses required. The difficulty arises not from any shortage of horses in Australia, but from the necessity of procuring them in the very limited time that is available. It is absolutely essential that the expedition should start at the earliest possible moment, and every effort is being made to hurry forward all the incidental arrangements. Remembering with much gratification the splendid assistance horse-owners lent the department during the South African War, I venture to appeal to them again with every confidence to assist in the present crisis by making gifts of horses suitable for military purposes. The kind most urgently needed are gunners and draught horses.

August 28, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 29, '14.

It is only natural that there should be a very general and strong desire for information as to the movements of the vessels of the Australian Fleet, and more particularly in relation to the Pacific.

I fully recognise this desire, and at the very earliest opportunity will make available all the information which can be published without detriment.

It must be, and I am sure it is, recognised that there are good and sound reasons why the movements of our ships and the duty upon which they may be from time to time engaged

should not be made public. It has to be remembered that, though cables and wireless are under official control, letters and newspapers still pass outwards quite freely, unless directed to the countries with which we are at war. Apart from this there is always the possibility that other channels of communication with the outside world may be in existence. This is always a possibility to guard against.

There is not only no desire to withhold any news that can fairly be published, but I repeat the assurance previously given that any news reaching the Government will be made public at the earliest moment, bearing in mind the precautions previously outlined.

So far as regards the Australian Fleet, though it has been anything but idle, there is little to relate. An Expeditionary Force has left these shores, and another has started from New Zealand for operations within the Pacific, and it has been part of the duty of the fleet to act in co-operation with these. The New Zealand expedition reached Noumea, and subsequently left under a strong convoy, which included both British and French vessels.

Further news may be expected regarding this force very soon, and there is every reason to anticipate that it will be of an entirely satisfactory character; but a longer period will in all probability elapse before news need be looked for regarding the movements of the Australian expedition.

Meanwhile, it will be reassuring to know, especially in view of the reckless and entirely unfounded rumours that have been in circulation, that all is well with both the fleet and the expeditions.

August 30, 1914.

STATEMENT OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug.31,'14.

The struggle in which we are involved together with the rest of the Empire promises to be of considerable duration. Our national existence is at stake, and we must be prepared to take up our own share of the burden without flinching from the sacrifices that may be involved. We have nearly completed the arrangements for the despatch of the Expeditionary Force of 20,000 men to join the British forces now in the field. Our effort must not cease with the despatch of this force. The

Minister for War, Lord Kitchener, is enrolling volunteers to form further drafts to supplement the force at the present moment fighting for us in France with all the determination and self-sacrifice which in the past have characterised the British soldiers. We shall fail in our duty unless we follow in the same lines. With this object, the Government proposes to call for the additional volunteers. All the existing machinery will be maintained for the efficient training, and, if necessity still exists, for the despatch at a later date of further expeditionary forces. We feel sure that the appeals to the patriotism of our citizens will not fail in this great international crisis. Details of the arrangements necessary to carry out the scheme will be stated later by the Minister of Defence.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

With reference to the Imperial Reservists resident in Australia, the Minister of Defence points out that these men are members of the British Army, and are under an obligation which they are loyally and readily observing. The pay to which they are entitled, according to army rates, is only 1s. 7d. per day, with a slight increase in the case of married men. Although these men are not part of the Australian Expeditionary Forces, and the Government is under no legal obligation regarding them, yet it has been decided to supplement their British pay to the extent necessary to bring it up to that adopted for the Australian force. In other words, Imperial Reservists will be placed upon exactly the same footing as members of the Australian force. The Government takes the view that, although serving in the British Army, the men are residents in Australia. It proposes, therefore, to extend to them corresponding treatment both as to pay and pension.

Sydney Morning Herald, Aug. 31, '14.

September 3, 1914.

STATEMENTS OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (MR. MILLEN) stated with regard to the provision being made for the dependants of those members of the Expeditionary Force who might fall, or for those who may be incapacitated during the war, that a mass of detail was being worked out to ensure the scheme being as complete

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 4, '14.

as possible. The main feature, the basis of the scheme, as it affected the large majority, viz., the rank and file, had, however, been settled. It provided for an annuity of £50 per annum to the widow of any man who lost his life on service, with an addition of £12, 10s. per annum for every child up to the age of 16 for boys and 18 for girls. In the case of total incapacity, the annuity for a single man would be £75 per annum. Married men would receive the sum also, but in addition there would be an annual allowance of £30 for their wives, and £12, 10s. in respect of each child. The scale of allowance in respect of partial incapacity would be graduated according to the nature and degree of incapacitation, a principle adopted in the Workmen's Compensation Acts. Allowances for those of higher rank other than privates and other details were under reference to the Commonwealth Statistician, and it was anticipated that the whole matter would be decided in a few days.

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 4, '14.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (MR. MILLEN) to-day made available the details regarding the additional troops proposed to be raised for despatch in connection with the present war. The enrolment hitherto proceeding for the main Expeditionary Force will continue, and any men enlisting over and above the numbers required for that force will be included in the new contingents.

MESSAGE FROM GENERAL BRIDGES TO SIR JOHN FRENCH

ibid.

To-day the officer commanding the Australian Imperial Expeditionary Force (General Bridges) sent the following to Sir John French :—' All ranks Commonwealth military forces congratulate Army and Navy on their splendid achievements. Australian Expeditionary Force eagerly look forward to joining their comrades in the field.'

LORD KITCHENER'S MESSAGE TO BRITISH EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

ibid.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE (MR. MILLEN) to-day received a full copy of the message handed to each member of the

British Expeditionary Force on its embarkation by Lord Kitchener. The Minister is having the message printed for distribution amongst the Australian units when they leave for the front.

September 4, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 5, '14.

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE this evening made a statement summarising the steps taken in Australia in connection with the war, in which he says: 'When the first indication that the Empire might be engaged in war reached the Commonwealth, I expressed the belief that Australia would prove no fair-weather partner in the then impending conflict.

'What has been done since, with the clear endorsement of the whole of Australia, has amply justified that anticipation. Australia rejoices at the splendid spirit displayed by the people of the old land, and at the patriotic efforts which are being made by Canada, New Zealand, and other parts of the Empire. She wishes the rest of the Empire to know that in this momentous struggle for liberty and national honour, the vigour of her manhood, the bounties of her soil, the resources of her economic organisation, have been, and will be, freely offered to help to maintain the glory and greatness of the Empire; and to battle for the righteous cause and freedom in which it is now engaged. We have already assumed responsibilities which have not yet fallen upon any other Dominion.

'Quite apart from the steps which we thought it necessary to take in order to preserve the integrity of Australia itself, and to protect her people from economic disaster, our task from the larger Imperial point of view has been a double one—to defend the flag in these outer seas, and to rally to the Motherland at the decisive point of conflict. Our geographical position has given us the privilege as well as the responsibility of assisting to safeguard Imperial interests, possessions, and shipping in the southern seas. Our fleet is now acting under the directions of the Admiralty, and includes the most powerful war vessel possessed by any of the belligerents, with the exception of Japan, in the Pacific. The events which have occurred since the commencement of the war provide an abundant justification not only for the Australian naval policy

generally, but also for the retention in the Pacific by the Commonwealth Government of the capital ship of her fleet unit.

In the sudden emergency which arose, the presence of His Majesty's ship *Australia*, supported by the other vessels of the Australian Navy will, even if not a single shot is fired, have amply repaid all that Australia has in money and personal effort spent upon them. The fact that the first stage in the removal of German power in the Pacific has already been taken affords ample proofs that the forces of the British Dominions in the Pacific are no mere playthings. The partial mobilisation of several thousands of the Citizen soldiers was completed in a rapid and efficient manner, which was a gratifying test, not only of the compulsory military service system upon which Australia embarked only four years ago, but also of the loyal and ready response of the members of the forces to the obligations imposed upon them.

The response to the call for volunteers for an Imperial Expeditionary Force of 20,000 men was immediate and enthusiastic. The men are now in camp, and, although organisation for the force had to be created *ad hoc*, the arrangements are well in hand, and the departure of the force may be expected at an early date. The war is probably destined to be a long one. We have accordingly taken steps to secure the enrolment of further volunteers, both for the purpose of replenishing wastage in the first force, and with a view to sending the further contingents if necessary. Australia does not propose to lag behind amongst the units of the Empire in the sacrifices which must be made to secure a victory. The war is not yet over, and greater efforts may be needed than have yet been necessary. But we may confidently claim that Australia has already contributed in no small measure to the common obligations which she owes to the Commonwealth and herself.

There is, however, added to all she is doing an enthusiasm for, and a love of, Empire which will endure when the material aid now preferred has served its purpose in assisting to a complete and decisive victory.

September 7 (circ.)

AUSTRALIAN MESSAGES TO THE FORCES

(Press Bureau Statement)

The Government and people of Western Australia have telegraphed expressing their intense admiration of the gallant manner in which the British troops have acquitted themselves. 'Their splendid valour,' the telegram concludes, 'has made us still prouder of the grand old flag.' *Times*, Sept. 8, '14.

The Army Council, in reply, have expressed their sincere thanks for this cordial message, and have declared that the Army hopes soon to welcome its Australian comrades, of whose gallant co-operation in South Africa it retains vivid and grateful memories.

The Governor-General of the Commonwealth of Australia has telegraphed as follows to the Colonial Office: 'All ranks of the Commonwealth Defence Forces congratulate the Army and Navy on their splendid achievements. Australia's Expeditionary Force eagerly looks forward to joining its comrades in the field.'

The Army Council have returned a message thanking the Commonwealth Forces for their congratulations and assuring them that the Army awaits the arrival of its Australian comrades in confident anticipation of their loyal and gallant support.

September 8, 1914.

STATEMENT OF THE MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Melbourne, Tuesday.

With the approval of the Federal Executive Council, a provisional regulation under the Defence Act was circulated to-night, authorising the military authorities in certain circumstances to seize vehicles, horses, mules, bullocks, aerial machines, boats, etc., in the event of their not being obtainable in the ordinary way of business. In explaining the new regulation, the Minister of Defence (Mr. Millen) said to-night that the regulation had been prepared only as a precaution. There are certain things [said the Minister] which it is necessary to obtain in connection with the equipment of the contingent now being organised, and I regret to say that in certain rare *Sydney Morning Herald*, Sept. 9, '14.

instances an effort is being made to ask unduly high prices. This regulation has been drafted to enable us to protect the interest of the public with regard to these articles and others which may be required under the circumstances indicated.

The Minister went on to say that as a result of the regulation, the department would be able to take possession of the war materials required, and settle for them afterwards at a price to be arranged by a departmental board.

September 13, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 14, 1914.

SENATOR MILLEN, THE MINISTER OF DEFENCE, stated yesterday that the first of the units, the formation of which is in progress, will comprise approximately 355 officers. It is not anticipated that the full number of suitable officers in the existing establishments will find themselves able to leave their employment and volunteer for foreign service. A few additional officers will be forthcoming, it is expected, from those who have held commissions previously in any military force of the Dominions; for the remainder, it is proposed to give commissions to those who enrol as private soldiers in the general enlistment for foreign service. The examination will be on the competitive practical lines laid down in the Act, and will, it is thought, bring out a considerable number of smart young men fit for the lower commissioned ranks.

CAPTURE OF NEW BRITAIN[1]

[1] [See *Naval,* 1, pp. 226-9.]

STATEMENT OF AUSTRALIAN PRIME MINISTER DESIGNATE (MR. FISHER)

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 14, 1914.

I desire to express my appreciation of the work of the leader of the expedition and the men of all ranks, and my gratification at the success of their operations in this, the first, action within the Australian sphere of influence.

At the same time I greatly regret that the operations have resulted in the loss of gallant officers and men, who have, unfortunately, fallen on the field of honour. Their bravery and self-sacrifice for their country will ever be remembered by those whom they have served so well. They have given everything in the service of their country.

September 14, 1914.

TELEGRAMS BETWEEN MINISTER OF DEFENCE AND REAR-ADMIRAL PATEY

MR. MILLEN has received a wireless message from Admiral Patey, stating that the British flag was hoisted at Rabaul in New Britain, the headquarters of German New Guinea, and saluted at half-past three on Sunday afternoon, and the proclamation of occupation read. *Sydney Morning Herald,* Sept. 15, 1914.

After he received the information, Mr. Millen sent the following message to Admiral Sir George Patey :—'Hearty congratulations to yourself and all concerned in the successful operations at Rabaul.'

September 15, 1914.

NAVAL OPERATIONS: STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

It is in fact possible in a general way to satisfy the natural desire of Australia to know in what manner the Australian Navy has been engaged since the declaration of war. Immediately on the outbreak of war, the Australian fleet unit, complete for active service in every detail, left Sydney, acting in co-operation with the China squadron. Search for the enemy's cruisers has been prosecuted, and the enemy's wireless stations in the Pacific have been put out of action. The operations also included the covering of the New Zealand expedition for the seizure and occupation of Samoa,[1] an operation which the steps taken by the Australian fleet assisted to render safe. In attending first to the requirements of our sister Dominion of New Zealand, Australia showed a disinterestedness that will certainly be appreciated by that Dominion. Our plans were so well assured that they could not suffer by delay until the New Zealand expedition was made secure. Later, as is already known, the operations of the fleet included the capture and occupation of Simpsonshafen, the headquarters of the enemy's Government of the German possessions in New Guinea, New Britain, and the Bismarck Archipelago, operations that will still call for some detached *Sydney Morning Herald,* Sept. 16, 1914.

[1] [See *Naval,* 1, pp. 135-60.]

work before being complete. In addition to this, there have been all the measures necessary for the safeguarding of our trade routes and commerce, which must of necessity have every attention paid them. It can thus be seen that the very extensive operations on which we have been engaged over such considerable distances, have imposed a task upon the Royal Australian Navy of no mean proportions, involving as it did long-sustained energy of action. That this task has been borne in the way that it has been is due to the fine leading of the Rear-Admiral Commanding, and the spirit and enthusiasm of all under his command. Although our losses have been small—and the wish naturally arises that we might have been spared them—at the same time there is cause for congratulation that the accomplishment of so much has been attained at such a small sacrifice of life.

September 18, 1914.

MEMORANDUM OF RETIRING MINISTER OF DEFENCE

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 19, 1914.

The retiring MINISTER OF DEFENCE, SENATOR MILLEN, on vacating his office this month, issued the following memorandum :—

My term as Minister, though short, has been memorable, in that, for the first time, that which has been prepared in peace is being tested by the realities of war. Only in this way can the value of the work performed in peace be thoroughly tested. It would be foolish to pretend that Australian defence organisation was equal to the strain suddenly thrown upon it. It was not, nor would it have been reasonable to expect it to be. The adoption of the present system was too recent, its development too imperfect to allow of this. Its erection was too recent to permit of the complete training of the *personnel* or the development of the organisation. Under Lord Kitchener's scheme [1] eight years were allowed for the building of the army, less than half of which period had elapsed. The process of building it up was in itself a heavy strain upon the departmental organisation; further, it was designed as an army for home service only, thus adding considerably to the difficulty when it became necessary to provide contingents for service abroad.

[1] [See Appendix, pp. 332-357.]

For home service, units were in existence, and were more or less equipped and available at short notice to take up their allotted duties, but no such units existed for service abroad. These had to be suddenly formed, officers allotted, clothing, equipment, and supplies furnished. In view of these facts, it would have been unreasonable to expect that, when the sudden outbreak of war occurred, the unusual strain could be met and sustained with entire success.

It is no discredit to either army or department to say this. What is to the credit of both is that they have met as they have done a demand which invariably tests the old and established organisations of highly trained armies throughout the world. I cannot too warmly commend the splendid way in which the majority of those connected with the department—naval, military and civil—responded to the appeal thus made upon them, and by a display of zeal and energy doing much to overcome the difficulties created by the sudden emergency. The result, which, in view of the facts I have set out, must be regarded as gratifying, is largely due to this individual effort.

Apart from the enrolment and equipment of the expeditionary forces, the war has, by rendering partial local mobilisation necessary, provided a sure test of the spirit and reliability of the citizen forces. The result is highly gratifying. With cheerful alacrity the men responded to the call, and in a most soldierly manner settled down to the duty allotted them.

The task thrown upon the department by the war was :—(1) Mobilisation of the forces (about 10,000) for local defence, including the transport of 1000 men, fully equipped, from Townsville to Thursday Island ; (2) raising, equipping, and despatching a combined naval and military expedition to co-operate with the fleet in certain Pacific Island operations ; (3) organising and equipping an Expeditionary Force of 20,000 men to embark for Europe ; (4) raising the additional units being enrolled, and procuring the extensive transport plant (both mechanical and horse) requisite to the equipment of the line of communication unit.

On the naval side corresponding responsibility was involved in maintaining regular supplies of coal, oil, and stores to the fleet, and in providing and fitting up the transports for the expeditionary forces. At the same time the ordinary

training of the citizen forces was maintained. Had any break been permitted, the value of much of the earlier work would have been lost, and the future efficiency impaired for many years. It would certainly have relieved the department very materially if this had been suspended, but the ultimate result would, I am convinced, have so seriously disturbed the defence scheme, that I had no hesitation in deciding as to its uninterrupted continuance.

The training of the citizen army is proceeding steadily. The experience gained, limited though it is, has already disclosed certain mistakes and weaknesses, and pointed to the necessity for certain changes; but these are in regard to details, such as improved rifle training, readjustment of training areas, better utilisation of the time now given to training facilities for the training of officers of all grades; etc. None of these touch the principles upon which the Commonwealth defence scheme is founded, though they still have an important bearing upon its success or otherwise. As opportunity presents itself, these matters should be attended to.

A more drastic change, however, is called for in connection with the business portion of the departmental responsibilities. General Sir Ian Hamilton [1] has dealt exhaustively with this matter, and it is only necessary for me to add that, had the Government remained in office, it was intended to give effect to his recommendations, and, by thorough reorganisation, secure at the same time efficiency and economy.

[1] [See Appendix, pp. 417-459.]

I have already referred to the difficulty of organising a force for service abroad, the Commonwealth military forces being designed solely for service in Australia. In the light of the South African War, and the present one, it appears almost certain, however, that when the Empire is at war Australia will desire to actively participate. It would be of immense advantage, therefore, if, without enrolling special units for such service, the organisation and equipment were provided in advance, leaving the *personnel* to be furnished by voluntary enlistment, as at present. This would mean the avoidance of very much of the delay which is inevitable under the present system. Nor need it involve any undue expenditure, as the equipment could, to a considerable extent, be drawn from the reserves, which must, in course of time, be built up in connection with the Commonwealth military forces. These reserves

thus temporarily depleted, could subsequently be made up. There is, however, in this connection a liability to err in the direction of building up unnecessary reserves of those things which can be obtained from supplies readily available in the country.

For the purpose here indicated, supplies might well be divided into two classes, viz. those which are exclusively of military use, and those which are also used by the citizen population. The former should be held in requisite quantities, but as the latter can be obtained at call, it should be quite sufficient if the organisation were in existence for collecting them when required.

September 19, 1914.

LOSS OF AUSTRALIAN SUBMARINE *A.E 1*: STATEMENTS OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE, AND OF PRIME MINISTER

The MINISTER OF DEFENCE announced to-day that the Australian submarine *A.E 1*, with 35 officers and men, has been lost. She was last seen on September 14, returning from a patrol. Other ships have made a search, but nothing has been found. Admiral Patey reports that no enemy were in the vicinity at the time. The loss is attributed to accident.[1]

Sydney Morning Herald, Sept. 21, 1914.

[1] [See *Naval*, 1, p. 262.]

Supplementing the statement by the Minister, the following has been issued by the Naval Board :—

'It is with the deepest regret that we have to report the loss at sea, with all hands, of the Australian submarine *A.E 1*. She was last seen on September 14, returning from patrol duty. The weather was fine, the sea smooth, and no enemy was in the vicinity. It was thought that she must have sighted an enemy and given chase, but the result of a thorough search has now caused this hope to be abandoned.

'The water in the vicinity of the place in which she was last seen is very deep, and there is no hope of locating the wreck if she has sunk there. We may be thankful that the water is deep, as the hull of the vessel would be unable to stand the pressure and death would be mercifully sudden.

'The *A.E 1* was in charge of the officers and men, for the

most part, of the crew who brought her out from England. In that long voyage they showed their thorough efficiency. The Navy has to mourn the loss of good comrades, and many homes will also mourn to-day. Although our men did not fall by the hand of the enemy, they fell on active service, and in defence of their Empire. Their names will be enshrined with those of heroes.'

In making his statement SENATOR PEARCE said :—

'The Government deeply deplores this disaster, and extends its sincere sympathy with the wives and families of those on board. The only gleam of consolation is that the loss is not due to any action of the enemy, but the officers and men have just as truly given their services to the Empire as if they had been killed in action.'.

The PRIME MINISTER, MR. FISHER, made the following statement :—

'The indications are that they have died in the service of their country, owing to the risks and dangers of seafaring life. As far as we know, they were not in action. If the worst has happened, I desire with the people of the Commonwealth to express my sincere sympathy with the relatives and friends of those who have lost their lives in the service of their country. No enemies are known to be in the vicinity. You can also say that I think it advisable to keep the people notified of matters of the kind, so that their minds may be free from apprehension of news of any disasters being withheld.'

NEW ZEALAND

MEMBERS OF THE GOVERNMENT of the RIGHT HONOURABLE W. F. MASSEY, P.C., at the opening of the War.

Prime Minister, Minister of Lands, Minister of Agriculture, Minister of Labour, Minister of Industries and Commerce, Commissioner of State Forests, Minister in Charge of Land for Settlements, Valuation, and Scenery Preservation Departments	Right Hon. W. F. MASSEY, P.C.
Minister of Finance, Minister of Defence, Minister of Education, Minister in Charge of Land and Income Tax Department, and State-guaranteed Advances Office	Hon. J. ALLEN.
Minister of Railways and Native Minister . .	Hon. W. H. HERRIES.
Minister of Public Works, Roads, and Bridges, Minister of Mines, and Minister in Charge of Public Buildings and Domains	Hon. W. FRASER.
Attorney-General, Minister of Justice, Minister of Stamp Duties, Minister in Charge of Police, Prisons, Crown Law (including Drafting), and Public Trust Departments	Hon. A. L. HERDMAN.
Minister of Internal Affairs, Minister of Immigration, and Minister in Charge of Audit Office, Registrar-General, High Commissioner, Museum, and Laboratory Departments	Hon. F. H. D. BELL, K.C.
Postmaster-General and Minister of Telegraphs, Minister of Public Health, Minister in Charge of Hospitals and Charitable Aid, Mental Hospitals, and Tourist and Health Resorts Departments	Hon. R. H. RHODES.
Minister of Customs, Minister of Marine, Minister in Charge of Inspection of Machinery, Advertising, Printing and Stationery, Legislative, State Fire Insurance, Life and Accident Insurance, Electoral, National Provident Fund, Friendly Societies, and Pensions Departments	Hon. F. M. B. FISHER.
Member of the Executive Council representing the Native Race, and in Charge of Maori Councils, Cook and other Islands Administration	Hon. DR. POMARE.

CORRESPONDENCE WITH HIS MAJESTY'S GOVERNMENT

No. 1

The Governor of New Zealand [1] *to the Secretary of State for the Colonies*

(Cablegram.) *Received* 4.40 P.M., *July* 31, 1914.

A. With great enthusiasm, and with the acclamation of all parties in Parliament to-night, the Prime Minister made a declaration, which was seconded by Sir Joseph Ward, to the effect that, if necessity unfortunately arose, New Zealand was prepared to send her utmost quota of help in support of the Empire. I am desired to convey these sentiments to His Majesty the King and to the Imperial Government. I will telegraph both utterances later. LIVERPOOL.

No. 2

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 9.40 A.M., *July* 31, 1914.

A. Please inform me at the earliest possible moment when we should bring into operation Section 19 New Zealand Naval Defence Act. LIVERPOOL.

No. 3

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 2.25 P.M., *August* 1, 1914.

A. I have laid your report [2] of the proceedings in the New Zealand Parliament before the King, who received it with great pleasure, and I am commanded by His Majesty to convey to you his high appreciation of this further manifestation of the staunch loyalty of the Dominion. HARCOURT.

[1] [The Earl of Liverpool, K.C.M.G.]

[2] See No. 1.

No. 4

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 4.24 P.M., *August* 1, 1914.

Following is repetition of speech delivered by Prime Minister, House of Representatives, last night[1]:— A.

[1] [See p. 190.]

'As far as it is possible to judge from information received there is no occasion for serious alarm, but under existing circumstances we have to prepare for possibilities and, should occasion arise, and it may, Government of New Zealand will ask Parliament and people of New Zealand to do their duty by offering the services of Expeditionary Force to the Imperial Government. I have no fear of volunteers not being forthcoming. I may say that an understanding has been arrived at with regard to number and constitution of a force which would fit in with Imperial requirements. I would like to add that as far as Britain's domestic troubles are concerned, I trust that settlement will be arrived at which will enable citizens of the Empire to stand together as one man. Just one word more with regard to Canada's offer as reported in this evening's paper. My opinion of it may be summed up in three words: "Well done, Canada."'

All Members of Parliament at this juncture simultaneously rose applauding, and sang the National Anthem with great enthusiasm.

Ward[2] then followed, saying:—

[2] [Sir J. G. Ward.]

'I should like to be permitted to add to what has been said that I heard the statement of Prime Minister with the utmost satisfaction. I sincerely hope there may be no occasion for any portion of the Empire to have to co-operate with the Old Country, but the time appears to be fraught with a certain amount of danger to the world at large. I trust that wise counsels of the leading men in different parts of the world will be able to provide against a widespread war. I want to say, on behalf of this side of the House, that whatever may be necessary in the way of sending an Expeditionary Force, we will co-operate cordially with the Government in assisting them in maintaining the interests of this portion of the Empire and the Empire as a whole.' LIVERPOOL.

No. 5

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 12.37 P.M., *August* 2, 1914.

A. With reference to your telegram of the 31st July,[1] as to New Zealand Naval Defence Act, the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty will be glad if you will arrange with Ministers for issue at once of Proclamation under Section 19 (2). Please say in issuing Proclamation that you do so because 'in your opinion it is in the interests of Great Britain.'

HARCOURT.

No. 6

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 2.30 P.M., *August* 2, 1914.

A. My Premier is anxious to ascertain whether circumstances warrant New Zealand Government in calling immediately for the names of the volunteers to compose an Expeditionary Force, which would not, however, mobilise until the New Zealand Parliament has agreed and the Imperial Parliament so desires. Prime Minister desires that a reply may be sent so as to enable sanction of Parliament to be obtained immediately.

LIVERPOOL.

No. 7

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 10.1 A.M., *August* 3, 1914.

A. With reference to your telegram of the 2nd August,[2] New Zealand Naval Defence Act. Proclamation has been issued.[1]

[See p. 181.]

LIVERPOOL.

No. 8

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 5.45 A.M., *August* 4, 1914.

A. In view of urgency and seriousness of the situation, Prime Minister desires to call at once for names of volunteers from the Citizen Army for service in Expeditionary Force, so that, in

[1] No. 2. [2] No. 5.

view of your possible request for us to mobilise, no delay will ensue. My Government consider this measure absolutely essential for the purpose of avoiding any delay. Please reply immediately by telegraph so that Ministers may obtain sanction of Parliament. LIVERPOOL.

No. 9

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 1.45 P.M., *August* 4, 1914.

Your telegram 2nd August.[1] I think your Ministers would A. be wise, in view of their generous offer, although there seems to be no immediate necessity for any request on our part for an Expeditionary Force from New Zealand, to take all legislative and other steps by which they would be enabled without delay, in case it should hereafter be required, to provide such a force. HARCOURT.

No. 10

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 12.20 P.M., *August* 6, 1914.

Your telegram 4th August.[2] His Majesty's Government A. cordially thank the Government of New Zealand for the support to the Empire which they propose to send, and they accept the generous offer made. His Majesty's Government would be glad to know as soon as possible the details of the units which your Government propose to send. One Mounted Rifles Brigade, one Field Artillery Brigade, and one Infantry Brigade, with supply columns in proportion, would be a suitable composition. HARCOURT.

No. 11

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 3.17 P.M., *August* 7, 1914.

My Government gladly accede to your request in your A. telegram of 6th August,[3] and will be prepared to send an Expeditionary Force as desired. LIVERPOOL.

[1] No. 6. [2] No. 8. [3] No. 10.

No. 12

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 10.56 A.M., *August* 11, 1914.

A. My Government propose, subject to approval of Parliament, to assume all financial responsibility in connection with the New Zealand Expeditionary Force, including the cost of mobilisation, payment abroad, and, except as regards indemnity for chartered transports, of transport also.

LIVERPOOL.

No. 13

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 4.45 P.M., *August* 11, 1914.

A. Your telegram 11th August.[1] Please convey to your Ministers cordial appreciation of His Majesty's Government for their generous action in assuming, subject to Parliamentary approval, financial responsibility for Expeditionary Force.

HARCOURT.

No. 14

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 2.6 P.M., *September* 3, 1914.

A. 3rd September.—The Maoris in New Zealand are most anxious to volunteer for war service, and my Prime Minister hopes that His Majesty's Government will agree to their doing so. If so, my Prime Minister will place the matter before Cabinet with a view to settling the numbers and the training necessary.

LIVERPOOL.

No. 15

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 11.25 A.M., *September* 6, 1914.

A. Your telegram 3rd September.[2] Army Council would gladly accept contingent not exceeding 200 for service in Egypt.

HARCOURT.

[1] No. 12.

[2] No. 14.

GIFTS OF SUPPLIES FROM NEW ZEALAND

No. 1

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 7.55 A.M., *August* 15, 1914.

15th August. Contingent ask whether, on arrival of Expeditionary Force at destination in England or elsewhere, Army Council would supply it with two complete military portable field X-ray apparatus, with all necessary accessories, at expense of New Zealand people. State probable cost in your reply. LIVERPOOL. C.

No. 2

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 4.40 P.M., *August* 19, 1914.

Your telegram of 15th August. Army Council will be glad to secure, in about five weeks' time, two complete X-ray apparatus at estimated cost of £410. HARCOURT. C.

No. 3

The Minister of Defence, New Zealand, to War Office

(Cablegram.) *Received September* 24, 1914.

23rd September 1914. The Blériot monoplane *Britannia* will be sent from here with reinforcements, if the Army Council wish it. All information about the machine can be supplied by the High Commissioner. C.

No. 4

War Office to the Minister of Defence, New Zealand

(Cablegram.) *September* 24, 1914.

With reference to your telegram of 23rd. We accept with pleasure the Blériot monoplane *Britannia*. It should be despatched to the Royal Flying Corps at Brooklands Aerodrome on its arrival in England. C.

No. 5

The Governor to the Secretary of State for the Colonies

(Cablegram.) *Received* 3.30 A.M., *September* 29, 1914.

C. Following to be transmitted to Her Majesty the Queen :—

'In addition to my fund to provide comforts for New Zealand troops, I am about to receive gifts of socks and belts in response to Your Majesty's appeal for the troops in the field. May I respectfully ask to be informed by telegram to-day whether belts which you mention are cholera belts, and if knitted, woven, and flannel would all be acceptable ?—ANNETTE LIVERPOOL.' LIVERPOOL.

No. 6

The Private Secretary to the Queen to the Colonial Office

(Telegram.) *Received* 3.15 P.M., *September* 29, 1914.

C. The Queen will be much obliged if Mr. Harcourt will kindly telegraph to Lady Liverpool as follows : 'The Queen is most grateful for kind offer of woven cholera belts.'

E. W. WALLINGTON,
Royal Pavilion, Aldershot.

No. 7

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 4.35 P.M., *September* 29, 1914.

C. Your telegram of 29th September. The Queen is most grateful for kind offer of woven cholera belts.

HARCOURT.

No. 8

The Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor

(Cablegram.) *London*, 5.30 P.M., *September* 30, 1914.

C. My telegram 29th September. The Queen desires woven only, not flannel, cholera belts. HARCOURT.

PROCLAMATIONS AND ORDERS IN COUNCIL

August 3, 1914.

PROCLAMATIONS

RESERVE NAVAL VOLUNTEERS TO BE CALLED INTO ACTUAL SERVICE

WHEREAS, by section four of the Royal Naval Reserves (Volunteer) Act, 1859, it is enacted that it shall be lawful for His Majesty on such occasions as he shall think fit (the occasion being first communicated to Parliament if Parliament be sitting, or declared in Council and notified by Proclamation if Parliament be not sitting or in being) to order and direct that the Volunteers under that Act, or so many or such part of them as His Majesty may deem necessary, shall be called into actual service : *New Zealand Gazette.*

And Whereas, by the Royal Naval Reserve Volunteer Act, 1896, as amended by the Royal Naval Reserve Volunteer Act, 1902, it is enacted that the power under the said Act of 1859 to raise and pay Volunteers may be exercised outside the British Islands in respect of British subjects :

And Whereas by the Naval Reserve Mobilisation Act, 1900, it is enacted that when His Majesty, in pursuance of section four of the first-above-recited Act, orders and directs that Volunteers under that Act shall be called into actual service, His Majesty may authorise the Admiralty to give and, when given, to revoke or vary such directions as may seem necessary or proper for calling out all or any of the said Volunteers as the occasion may require :

And Whereas a force of Reserve Naval Volunteers has been raised outside the British Islands from British subjects in the Commonwealth of Australia and in the Dominion of New Zealand :

And Whereas His Majesty has declared in Council and

notified by Proclamation that, owing to the state of public affairs, and the demands upon His Naval Forces for the protection of the Empire, an occasion has arisen for ordering and directing as in the said first-mentioned Act is provided:

It is hereby notified that His Majesty has been pleased to order and direct that the said Reserve Naval Volunteers shall be called into actual service, and to authorise the Admiralty to give and, when given, to revoke or vary such directions as may seem necessary or proper for calling out all or any of the said Reserve Naval Volunteers as the occasion may require.

Given under the hand of His Excellency the Right Honourable Arthur William de Brito Savile, Earl of Liverpool, Knight Grand Cross of the Most Distinguished Order of Saint Michael and Saint George, Member of the Royal Victorian Order, Governor and Commander-in-Chief in and over His Majesty's Dominion of New Zealand and its Dependencies; and issued under the Seal of the said Dominion, at the Government House at Wellington, this third day of August, in the year of our Lord One thousand nine hundred and fourteen.

J. ALLEN,
Minister of Defence.

God save the King.

All Reserve Naval Volunteers are to report themselves forthwith to the Registrar of the Royal Naval Reserve at the Marine Department, Wellington.

DECLARING H.M.S. 'PHILOMEL' AND NEW ZEALAND NAVAL FORCES TO PASS UNDER CONTROL OF GOVERNMENT OF GREAT BRITAIN.

New Zealand Gazette.

WHEREAS, by section nineteen of the Naval Defence Act, 1913, it is enacted that when, in the opinion of the Governor, it is expedient in the interests of Great Britain so to do, the Governor may by Proclamation declare that the ships, vessels, or boats acquired under that Act for Naval defence, or for services auxiliary thereto, and the New Zealand Naval Forces, shall pass and remain under the control and be at the disposition of the Government of Great Britain for such time as he fixes by such Proclamation: And Whereas His Majesty's

ship *Philomel* has been acquired under the said Act for Naval defence under the said Act by way of transfer from His Majesty's Navy: And Whereas in the opinion of the Governor it is now expedient in the interests of Great Britain that a Proclamation should, in pursuance of the said enactment, be issued in respect of the said ship and in respect of the New Zealand Naval Forces:

Now, therefore, I, Arthur William de Brito Savile, Earl of Liverpool, the Governor of the Dominion of New Zealand, in pursuance of the powers and authorities conferred upon me by section nineteen of the Naval Defence Act, 1913, and of all other powers and authorities enabling me in that behalf, do hereby declare that His Majesty's ship *Philomel* and the whole of the New Zealand Naval Forces shall, on the making of this Proclamation, pass under the control, and be at the disposition of the Government of Great Britain, and shall remain under such control and disposition for one calendar month from the date of this Proclamation.[1]

[1] [See *Naval*, 1, p. 66.]

August 4, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

PART OF THE TERRITORIAL FORCE CALLED OUT FOR ACTIVE SERVICE

WHEREAS, by section seventy-one of the Defence Amendment Act, 1912, it is enacted that the Governor may by Proclamation call out the Territorial Force, or any part thereof, for active service: And Whereas the New Zealand Garrison Artillery is part of the said Territorial Force: And Whereas circumstances have now arisen which make it necessary so to call out that part of the Territorial Force for active service:

New Zealand Gazette.

Now, therefore, I, Arthur William de Brito Savile, Earl of Liverpool, the Governor of the Dominion of New Zealand, in pursuance of the powers and authorities conferred upon me by section seventy-one of the Defence Amendment Act, 1912, and of all other powers and authorities enabling me in that behalf, do hereby call out for active service that part of the Territorial Force known as the New Zealand Garrison Artillery.

J. ALLEN,
Minister of Defence.

[Regulations giving power to close telegraph stations and prohibit telegraph messages in time of war were issued by Order in Council, authorised in the *New Zealand Gazette* of August 3. Orders in Council prohibiting the export of coal and certain specified goods were published in the *New Zealand Gazette* of August 4, 7, 8, 10 and 13. Proclamations declaring notes of certain banks to be legal tender were published in the *New Zealand Gazette* of August 5 and September 4. An Order in Council for the 'granting of Days of Grace,' in the case of enemy merchant ships, was published in the *New Zealand Gazette* of August 6. Proclamations notifying that British subjects contributing to a loan raised on behalf of the German Empire, or contracting with the German Government, would be guilty of High Treason, and setting forth Law and Policy with regard to Trading with the enemy, were published in the *New Zealand Gazette* of August 7, 1914.]

August 8, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

ARMY RESERVE (REGULAR AND SPECIAL RESERVISTS)

New Zealand Gazette.

WHEREAS His Majesty the King has been graciously pleased to direct by Proclamation that the Army Reserve be called out on permanent service, all men belonging to the Special Reserve now resident in the Dominion of New Zealand are hereby required to report themselves without delay to the nearest Defence Office.

J. ALLEN,
Minister of Defence.

August 17, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

FURTHER PARTS OF THE TERRITORIAL FORCE CALLED OUT FOR ACTIVE SERVICE

ibid.

I, Arthur William de Brito Savile, Earl of Liverpool, the Governor of the Dominion of New Zealand, do hereby call out for active service the following parts of the Territorial Force, namely :—

No. 1 Troop, 'A' Squadron, 3rd (Auckland) Regiment.

No. 1 Platoon, 'A' Company, 15th (North Auckland) Regiment.
'A' Company, 5th (Wellington) Regiment.
No. 1 Platoon 'A' Company, 8th (Southland) Regiment.
'J' Company, 13th (North Canterbury and Westland) Regiment, less members actually engaged in coal-mining.

J. ALLEN,
Minister of Defence.

August 19, 1914.

PROCLAMATION

RIGHTS OF GERMANS AND AUSTRIANS RESIDENT IN NEW ZEALAND

New Zealand Gazette.

WHEREAS His Majesty is now at war with the German Emperor, and with the Emperor of Austria and King of Hungary: And Whereas certain subjects of the German Emperor and of the Emperor of Austria and King of Hungary are now peaceably resident in the Dominion of New Zealand, and it is desirable to extend to them the protection of the laws of the said Dominion:

Now, therefore, I, Arthur William de Brito Savile, Earl of Liverpool, the Governor of the Dominion of New Zealand, acting by and with the advice and consent of the Executive Council of the said Dominion, do hereby proclaim and declare that all subjects of the German Emperor or of the Emperor of Austria and King of Hungary, being now peaceably resident within the said Dominion are, and at all time since the commencement of the present state of war have been, within the peace and protection of His Majesty in the same manner as if they were the subjects of His Majesty, and that they may sue and plead accordingly in all Courts of Justice within the said Dominion in respect of all contracts, rights, injuries, and other causes or matters whatsoever, saving always the prerogative right of His Majesty in time of war to do with such persons as aforesaid, and with all other His Majesty's enemies, in all respects according to his good pleasure.

J. ALLEN,
Minister of Defence.

[The appointment of a Commission to inquire into food prices and supplies was announced in the *New Zealand Gazette* of August 31, and an Order in Council fixing the maximum price of wheat and flour in that of September 29, 1914.]

September 4, 1914.

ORDER IN COUNCIL

REGULATIONS UNDER THE EXPEDITIONARY FORCES VOTING ACT, 1914.

At the Government House at Wellington.

New Zealand Gazette.

In pursuance and exercise of the power and authority conferred on him by the Expeditionary Forces Voting Act, 1914 (hereinafter referred to as 'the said Act'), His Excellency the Governor of the Dominion of New Zealand, acting by and with the advice and consent of the Executive Council of the said Dominion, doth hereby make the following regulations for the purpose of the said Act :—

REGULATIONS

Preparation of Rolls

1. The Chief Electoral Officer shall cause to be prepared from the several military rolls of the members of any Expeditionary Force such electoral rolls as may be required for the purposes of the election or poll to be held or taken under the said Act.

2. The name of every person whose name appears on any of the said military rolls shall be entered on the appropriate electoral roll, and no name shall be entered on the electoral roll that does not appear on any of the military rolls.

3. Every person whose name appears on any such electoral roll shall, on application in that behalf to the Electoral Officer as hereinafter provided, be entitled to vote under the said Act.

4. Any person who has been accepted for service with any Expeditionary Force, but whose name does not appear on any such electoral roll as aforesaid, shall be entitled to vote under the said Act, on producing to the Electoral Officer a certificate signed by any officer of the Expeditionary Force to the effect that he is a member of that force. Every such

certificate shall be attached by the Electoral Officer to his copy of the electoral roll, and shall be forwarded to the Chief Electoral Officer at the close of the poll.

Dates of Polls, etc.

5. The Chief Electoral Officer shall appoint such times and places as he thinks fit for the purpose of holding the election and poll under the said Act.

Conduct of Polls, etc.

6. Every person entitled to vote under the said Act shall, on personal application to the Electoral Officer appointed for the taking of the poll at any place, be entitled, on satisfying the Electoral Officer that he is a member of an Expeditionary Force, to receive a ballot-paper for the election of a member of the House of Representatives and a voting-paper for each of the issues to be submitted at the licensing poll.

7. On giving to the voter the ballot-paper and voting-papers as aforesaid, the Electoral Officer or one of his assistants shall draw a line through the name of the voter on the roll as an indication that the voter has received the said ballot-paper and voting-papers, and shall mark the ballot-paper and voting-papers, and the counterfoils thereof, in the same manner so far as practicable as in the case of ordinary elections or polls.

8. Every person receiving a ballot-paper and voting-papers as aforesaid shall, before leaving the place where the same have been handed to him, record his vote thereon in the manner required by law, and, after folding the same so that the contents cannot be seen, shall proceed as directed by the said Act.

9. All envelopes containing ballot-papers or voting-papers shall in the presence of the voter be placed by the Electoral Officer in a ballot-box provided for the purpose.

10. The said ballot-box shall not be opened until the close of the poll on each day on which a poll is taken.

11. On the close of the poll on each day the Electoral Officer shall open the ballot-box, and, taking out all the envelopes contained therein, shall make them into a parcel, and, after sealing the parcel, shall forward it by registered post to the Chief Electoral Officer at Wellington.

Scrutineers.

12. (1) For the purposes of the voting under the said Act in connection with the licensing poll scrutineers may be appointed as follows:—

(*a*) One scrutineer for each polling-place may be appointed on behalf of persons in favour of the issue that licences be granted;

(*b*) One scrutineer for each polling-place may be appointed on behalf of persons in favour of the issue that licences be not granted.

(2) Scrutineers under paragraph (*a*) may be appointed by the National Council of New Zealand, and scrutineers under paragraph (*b*) may be appointed by the Executive of the New Zealand Alliance.

(3) All scrutineers appointed under this regulation shall before acting be required to make the same declaration as if they had been appointed as scrutineers under the Licensing Act, 1908.

September 29, 1914.

PROHIBITION OF PUBLICATION OF INFORMATION CONCERNING MILITARY AND NAVAL OPERATIONS

New Zealand Gazette.

WHEREAS for the successful conduct of certain military and naval operations now being undertaken on behalf of His Majesty, it is in the highest degree expedient that secrecy should be observed with respect thereto: And Whereas His Majesty's Government has requested the New Zealand Government to take all necessary measures for securing such secrecy:

Now, therefore, notice is hereby given to all loyal subjects of His Majesty and to all other persons resident in New Zealand, and more especially to all proprietors, editors, and publishers of newspapers, and to all printers, that all such persons are hereby strictly charged and enjoined not to print, publish, or otherwise make known, without the express permission of the Minister of Defence, any information or statements concerning any of the matters following, that is to say:—

(*a*) The names, destinations, situation, route, arrival, departure, or movements of any transports carrying or about to carry, the troops of the New

Zealand Military Forces, or any other matters relative to those transports.

(*b*) The names, destinations, situation, route, arrival, departure, or movements of any ships employed or about to be employed, to convoy or accompany any such transports, or any other matters relative to those ships.

(*c*) Any others matters relative to military or naval operations as to which secrecy is enjoined by any notice hereafter published in the *New Zealand Gazette* by the Minister of Defence.

And although for ready and willing obedience to this order full reliance is placed on the loyalty of all His Majesty's subjects, nevertheless notice is hereby given to all persons that any disobedience will be dealt with by the military authorities in their absolute discretion as a serious offence against the public interest and the safety of this Dominion.

J. ALLEN,
Minister of Defence.

PROCEEDINGS IN NEW ZEALAND PARLIAMENT

July 31, 1914.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

WAR IN EUROPE: NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

New Zealand Hansard.

MR. G. M. THOMSON (Dunedin, North): I wish to ask the Prime Minister, without notice, whether in view of the present very serious situation in Europe, the Government will offer the services of an Expeditionary Force to the Mother Country in the event of her requiring it?

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): In reply to the honourable gentleman, I would like to say that, so far as it is possible to judge from the information that has reached us, there is no occasion for serious alarm; but under such circumstances as now exist, we have to prepare for possibilities, and if the occasion arises—and it may—the [Cf. p. 175.] Government of New Zealand will ask Parliament and the people of New Zealand to do their duty by offering the services of an Expeditionary Force to the Imperial Government. I have no fear of volunteers not being forthcoming. I may say that an understanding has been arrived at with regard to the numbers and constitution of a force which will fit in with Imperial requirements, and I would just like to add that, so far as Britain's domestic troubles are concerned, I trust that a settlement will be arrived at which will enable the citizens of the Empire to stand together as one man. Just one word more—with regard to Canada's offer, which is reported in this evening's paper—my opinion of it may be summed up in three words, 'Well done, Canada.'

[Honourable members then rose, and sang the National Anthem.]

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): I would like to be permitted to say, on behalf of this

side, that I heard the statement of the Prime Minister with the utmost satisfaction, and I sincerely hope that there will be no occasion for any portion of the Empire to co-operate with the Old Country at a time which appears to be fraught with a certain amount of danger to the world at large. I trust that the wise counsels of men in the different nations of the world may be able to prevent the possibility of a widespread war. I want to say further on behalf of this side that whatever it may be necessary to do in the matter of sending away an Expeditionary Force—which, I am sure, would readily be forthcoming—to help the Mother Country, we will heartily co-operate with the Government of the day in assisting in this way, or otherwise, to defend the interests of this portion of the Empire, and of the Empire as a whole.

August 4, 1914.

WAR NEWS

MR. REED (Bay of Islands): I wish to ask the Prime Minister a question without previous notice: Whether he will direct that telegrams giving the daily war news be despatched to all country post-offices. The Government of the day despatched such messages to those offices during the Boer War, and I have received a number of requests from my electorate asking that the same course may be followed during the present war in Europe. *New Zealand Hansard.*

The HON. MR. R. H. RHODES (Postmaster-General): In reply, I may inform the honourable member and the House generally that I have already issued instructions to the effect that in all those country districts where newspapers are not published, or where daily newspapers do not circulate on the day of publication, the same rule is to be observed as was followed during the South African War—namely, that the most important items of war news are to be telegraphed and posted up outside the post and telegraph offices concerned. I understand from the Press Association that they will undertake to issue slips or bulletins in places where there are newspapers. On Sunday last I made arrangements which enabled the war news of that day to be sent to all the telegraph offices that were open. I have this morning issued instructions in accordance with the statement I have just made in reply to the honourable member for Bay of Islands.

SIR W. C. BUCHANAN (Wairarapa) asked that the information should be sent also to small newspapers which were not connected with the Press Association.

The HON. MR. R. H. RHODES: I cannot interfere with the Press Association. All I can do is to publish the news at the post-offices.

MR. MCCOMBS (Lyttelton) asked if news coming into New Zealand was being censored, and why?

The HON. MR. R. H. RHODES: The Prime Minister will reply to that question.

WAR IN EUROPE: MINISTERIAL STATEMENT

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): I think, Mr. Speaker, at this stage, and on behalf of the Government, I should give the House some information with regard to the precautionary measures which have been taken during the last few days, and which are being taken now in this country, on account of the outbreak of war in Europe. I would like to say that these measures have been taken either under Imperial instructions, under the recommendation of the Imperial authorities, or in accordance with Imperial regulations. With some of them honourable members are already acquainted, but I propose to refer to them seriatim. I have no doubt honourable members will have noticed that the Naval Reservists in this country have been called out and ordered to join their ships. Some of these Reservists are New Zealanders who have been trained in the Australasian Squadron, some of them are men who have served in the Imperial Navy and are now serving in the merchant shipping trading to New Zealand. These men have been called out, and are joining the warships in these waters by instructions from the Imperial Government. Reference has already been made to the censorship. It is true a system of censorship has been established in this country, particularly with reference to cablegrams passing into and out of New Zealand; and let me say that the censorship has been established by the New Zealand Government, acting under direction from the Imperial authorities. Then, an examination service has been established. It has been found necessary to examine all the vessels trading into the four principal ports of this country. No vessel will be allowed to enter the ports of Auckland, Wellington, Lyttelton, or Otago without

being examined. It will not be necessary, perhaps, for the officers or men of the examining vessels to board every ship; if they are satisfied that the ship entering the port is not hostile, and that its entrance into the port will not be in any way detrimental to the interests of the country, in all probability any such vessel would only be delayed for a few moments. Within the last day or two H.M.S. *Philomel*, which had been handed over to this Dominion to be used as a training-ship, has been handed back to the Imperial authorities. We did this in accordance with the Act of last session, and on the recommendation of the Imperial authorities. The *Philomel* is now an ordinary warship, under the control of the senior officer in New Zealand waters. There is one precaution which has been taken which up to the present has not been made public—the Garrison Artillery have been called out, and the forts will be fully manned day and night. I do not know that it will be necessary to go further than this for some time to come; possibly it will not be necessary to go further at all. It will be noticed that in another Dominion of the Empire vessels are only allowed to enter a harbour during the day. We do not think it is necessary at present to go as far as that, but we do think it is necessary to take precautionary measures in case of trouble from outside. Then, during the last few days some rather important cablegrams have passed between the Government of New Zealand and the Imperial Government, through His Excellency the Governor. Honourable members will recognise that many of these telegrams—most of them, in fact—are confidential, and it is impossible for me to disclose their contents. I am sure that honourable members will not expect me to do so. There are, however, one or two that are not only interesting, but important. The first is a cable message from the Secretary of State for the Colonies to the Governor, and I am reading it at the request of His Excellency, and with the permission of the Imperial authorities. Here I may say that His Excellency is working with his Ministers in the most whole-hearted way, and doing everything that is possible for any one in his position to do. The message is as follows:—

'Your telegram of 31st July: I have laid before the King your report of the proceedings in the New Zealand Parliament. His Majesty received it with much pleasure, and I have been commanded

by His Majesty to convey to you his high appreciation of this further manifestation of the staunch loyalty of the Dominion.

'HARCOURT.'

Then there is this further telegram :—

'His Majesty's Government have received with deep gratitude the announcement of readiness of your Ministers to call volunteers to an Expeditionary Force, but no condition has yet arisen which would make this step necessary at present. 'HARCOURT.'

I want to call attention to these words, 'at present,' because it is quite possible that the Imperial authorities may change this decision in the very near future. I cannot go further than that at the moment. I would like to say that some preliminary arrangements have been made for calling for volunteers for an Expeditionary Force should it be required. No actual steps will be taken to ask for men until a cablegram has been received from the Imperial authorities, and until Parliament has been advised and has signified its approval. That is all the information I am able to give at the moment. While I am speaking on this very important matter I should like to express my appreciation of the fact that in New Zealand particularly—and not only in New Zealand, but also in every part of the British dominions—Imperial considerations are looked upon as being above and beyond party. We may have our party differences, and we may indulge in party warfare, but when a crisis comes along such as we are experiencing at present, it is not a question of what is best for the party, but it is a question of what is best for the Empire as a whole. There is no necessity, Mr. Speaker, though the position is undoubtedly a serious one, for anything in the way of a panic. There is no necessity for anything in the nature of what is sometimes called jingoism ; but I would like to say I honestly believe that the people of New Zealand, the Parliament of New Zealand, and the Government of New Zealand know their duty, and they will do their duty under any circumstances that may arise. I am confident that the people of this country, and the Parliament, and the Government will do their duty calmly and quietly, but firmly and determinedly.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition) : Mr. Speaker, speaking with a full sense of the responsi-

bility that attaches to the holder of the office of Leader of the Opposition, I wish to say that I fully recognise that the position as it stands at present is one of the gravest that has occurred in connection with the history of the world. Although Great Britain has not been in any way a party to the rupture that has unhappily occurred between the great Continental Powers, the fact remains that her position is so great that it seems to me to be next to impossible—though I hope to the contrary—for her to remain a silent onlooker. Whether that will turn out to be so or not, we cannot but feel a sense of great satisfaction in the knowledge that England possesses statesmen full of wisdom and experience, who will be backed by a race whose courage whenever called upon to face danger and difficulties has never failed. We have had experience already of the marvellous unity that arises at a juncture when the position of the Empire is in any way threatened. Nothing could be finer in the expression of this trait in the British character than the rapidity with which the gaping wound that a week ago presented such an ugly appearance, and which seemed incapable of being healed, has been closed up. The dissensions were so wide that it seemed impossible to avoid a rupture between members of our own race within the British Isles. Yet the moment there was a sign of danger on the horizon from beyond the shores of the Motherland, the internal troubles almost instantaneously ceased; and, more than that, the contending factions, who had been strengthening themselves to attack each other, simultaneously extended the hand of brotherhood to the British Government and to each other, both offering to take up arms in unison for the protection of Empire interests common to them all. I would like to say I feel equally proud of both the Ulstermen and the Nationalists, who so splendidly sank their strong differences. They have shown a fine example of loyalty to the whole world. But this has always been the experience of Britain in the past, and such actions redound to the honour of our fellow-countrymen and to the glory of the Empire. Indeed, it is such actions that make for the prestige and the power of the British race, and which have helped to make Great Britain and the Empire what they are. Then we look afield to the outlying portions of the Empire. Canada has acted magnificently, Australia equally so; and New Zealand has, through the Prime Minister,

already indicated its willingness to assist, and has in the past ever been ready to make every sacrifice to help keep the bonds of Empire intact, and to preserve unsullied the great traditions of the Motherland. There need be no question in the minds of any one in the present crisis, either here or abroad, as to our unity of action. The Opposition party of which I am the leader will co-operate in every way with the Government of the day in any action it may be necessary to take to preserve the integrity of the Empire. I want to say that, as far as this side of the House is concerned, honourable members most cordially concur in the arrangements the Prime Minister has announced as having been made, and will co-operate with him and his Government in the present crisis in the general interests of the whole world.

August 5, 1914.

LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

WAR: NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

New Zealand Hansard.

The HON. MR. BELL (Minister of Internal Affairs): Mr. Speaker, honourable gentlemen who have attended in another place and, before that, at the great meeting which His Excellency addressed, have already heard the telegrams received relating to the declaration of war. I propose to read them here in order that they may be recorded in the Journals of the Council. The telegram of the 5th August 1914, from His Majesty, is as follows:—

'I desire to express to my people of the Overseas Dominions with what appreciation and pride I have received the messages from their respective Governments during the last few days. These spontaneous assurances of their fullest support recall to me the generous self-sacrificing help given by them in the past to the Mother Country. I shall be strengthened in the discharge of the great responsibilities which rest upon me by the confident belief that in this time of trial my Empire will stand united, calm, resolute, trusting in God.

'GEORGE, R.I.'

The reply of His Excellency to His Majesty, sent on the same day, was:—

'New Zealand desires me to acknowledge Your Majesty's gracious message, and to say that, come good or ill, she, in company with the

Dominions and other dependencies of the Crown, is prepared to make any sacrifice to maintain her heritage and her birthright.

'LIVERPOOL, *Governor.*'

Later on the same day, His Excellency received the following telegram from the Secretary of State: 'War has broken out with Germany.' I move, 'That these telegrams be recorded in the Journals of the Council.'

Motion agreed to.

The HON. MR. BELL: I ask the Council to join with another place in passing the following resolution, which I ask leave to move without notice: 'That, in view of the fact that Great Britain has become involved in war with Germany, this Council approves of the necessary steps being taken by the New Zealand Government to have in readiness an Expeditionary Force.'

I think honourable members are aware that an Expeditionary Force was offered, and that the Government have been informed that at the present an Expeditionary Force is not demanded; but since that we have received a further message stating that His Majesty's Government and the Empire trust that the Government and people of New Zealand will be in readiness if their services are called for. The purpose of this resolution is to enable the Expeditionary Force to be mobilised and volunteers called for.

Motion agreed to.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

WAR: MESSAGE FROM THE KING

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Before I go further, Mr. Speaker, I desire to move, 'That the message from His Majesty the King, which was read by His Excellency the Governor, be recorded in the Journals of the House.' The message is as follows:— [See above.]

NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Sir, the resolution which I propose to move is as follows: 'That, in view of the fact that Great Britain has become involved in war with Germany, this House approves of the necessary

steps being taken by the New Zealand Government to have in readiness an Expeditionary Force.' It will be recollected, Mr. Speaker, that when I was dealing with this subject yesterday, I quoted the message from the Imperial authorities to the New Zealand Government, in which they express the opinion that the Expeditionary Force which had been offered, subject to the approval of Parliament, by the Government of New Zealand to the Imperial Government is not required at present. I called attention to the significance of these two words, 'at present,' and said they suggested that our men might be required at some not-far-distant date. I do not say that we have arrived at this stage yet, and I do not say that it will come, but we have to be prepared. To-day the following message was received by His Excellency the Governor :—

> 'Though there seems to be no immediate necessity for any request on our part for an Expeditionary Force from New Zealand, I think that your Ministers would be wise, in view of their generous offer, to take all legislative and other steps by which they would be enabled without delay to provide (for) such a force in case it should hereafter be required. 'HARCOURT.'

I feel, Sir, that a great responsibility rests upon the Government, and rests upon myself, in moving this motion, but we have our duty to do to the country and to the Empire ; and it is quite possible—I will not go to the length of saying probable —but it is quite possible that such an Expeditionary Force, as that suggested here, will be required by the Imperial Government. So far no definite steps have been taken with regard to the selection of such a force ; but what we propose to do is this—and here I would like to say that the motion required very little elaboration and very little explanation, and I expect it will receive the approval of every member of the House. I may say that I am of opinion, as I expressed myself yesterday, that this is the time for action, not a time for words. What we propose to do is to mobilise a part of the Territorials—I cannot say exactly how many, but probably some seven or eight thousand. We shall ask them to volunteer for service either in this country or abroad. The volunteers will clearly understand that their services may be required perhaps in India, perhaps in Egypt, perhaps on the Continent of Europe ; but it may be that the services of an Expeditionary Force

from this country will be required to take the place of Regulars in some other part of the Empire—that is, to do garrison duty: that is my opinion, at the present time. But if the men are required at the front, I am certain they will go, and that they will give as good an account of themselves there as our men did during the dark days of the South African War. With regard to numbers, my experience during the last two days convinces me that there will not be the slightest difficulty in obtaining any number we may require. I have had scores of letters and telegrams from men willing and anxious to volunteer their services for any place where they may be required, and the experience of the Defence Minister has been the same. So far as the Native race is concerned, the Maoris are fighters to a man, and I could to-morrow, if I wanted, secure thousands of young fellows of the Native race who are anxious to fight for the country and the Empire, either here or anywhere else. In saying that, I am aware that the Imperial regulations may prevent any members of the Maori race from taking service abroad. I am afraid that is the case, but there is no reason why their services should not be utilised in the country of their birth. I do not think it is necessary, Mr. Speaker, to say more in support of the motion. I feel certain the motion will commend itself to every member of the House—I feel certain it will be agreed to unanimously. As I said when speaking from the steps of the old Parliamentary Buildings, we have arrived at a very serious crisis not only in the history of this country, but in the history of the Empire. We are all anxious for peace. We all detest war; but we do not want peace unconditionally. We do not want peace at any price; we want peace with honour; and I hope and believe that the war which has just broken out will not last long, and I hope and believe that within a comparatively few months—to say weeks would be too much to expect—within a very few months the Imperial authorities will be able to announce to us that peace with honour has come for the British Empire.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): Sir, this is a time when there is no room for division of opinion. It is in times of stress and difficulty when a practical offer of assistance, even though it may not be required, is valued; and this will be valued not only on account of the prowess of the men who may be required to go, but from the moral effect

it will have in every portion of the world that realises that, widely scattered as is the Empire we belong to, yet we stand as one when there is danger about. It is a time when those sentiments so truly expressed by the Monarch of the Empire to his subjects to-day are fully recognised by us, and that it is only by solidarity, by union in spirit and in deed, that we can hope to make our influence thoroughly felt. As far as I am concerned, whatever arrangements the Government decide to make in connection with the despatch of an expeditionary force will receive my loyal and hearty support, as I am quite certain it will of every other member of the Opposition party. I recognise that any force sent from this country is quite voluntary. I realise that an Expeditionary Force is one which is made up by free will from those who are willing to join that force to go abroad, or, as the Prime Minister has said, to fill the ranks here of a portion of the present Territorials who may be despatched to other parts of the Empire. I also recognise that, whatever be the result of the war, we do not want to manifest or encourage a jingoistic spirit. We are not anxious to participate in war, but we want to do all in our power to maintain the prestige and honour of the country to which we are all proud to belong. We are in dead earnest, and our sole desire is to be of real service to the Empire. I heartily support the motion which the Prime Minister had moved.

Motion agreed to.

August 6, 1914.

PROTECTION OF COAL SUPPLIES

New Zealand Hansard.

MR. COLVIN (Buller): I should like to ask the Hon. the Minister of Defence, without notice, whether the authorities have taken steps to carefully safeguard the coal supplies on the west coast of the South Island. This is not a parochial thing—it is a matter of paramount importance to the Dominion as a whole; and in the interests of the Admiralty as well, it is necessary that such steps as I suggest should be taken.

The HON. MR. ALLEN (Minister of Defence): I am very pleased indeed to inform the honourable gentleman that adequate protection has been afforded for the coal-supplies on the west coast. I do not want to go into details, nor would it be wise for me to do so, but I may say the Garrison Artillery

are mobilised on the West Coast, and the Officer Commanding the Forces is thoroughly satisfied that the West Coast supplies are safe.

Financial Statement by the Minister of Finance (Hon. J. Allen)

NAVAL EXPENDITURE

Some final payments bring the cost of the battleship *New Zealand*, presented to the Imperial Navy to £1,706,341, against which there is now a sinking fund in the hands of the Public Trustee amounting to £173,449.

In accordance with the provisions of the Naval Defence Act, 1913, a transfer to the New Zealand Naval Forces of H.M.S. *Philomel* was accepted on the 15th July last. Captain Hall-Thompson of the Royal Navy was appointed by the Admiralty to command and to act as adviser to the New Zealand Government on naval matters. The *Philomel* will be used as a sea-going ship for the training of *personnel*, which, in case of war or outbreak of hostilities, will pass by section 19 of the Naval Defence Act under the control of the Government of Great Britain.

The preparation of the necessary regulations for the enrolment of men to undergo training will take some time, but much has already been done, and it is expected that the scheme will be in full operation shortly. Regulations are also in course of preparation for the establishment of the New Zealand Royal Naval Reserve.

In view of a Naval Conference being held in 1915, the Government considers it advisable to await the decision of the Conference before submitting any further proposals to Parliament.

DEFENCE

From the annual Defence Report, which has already been submitted for the consideration of honourable members, it will be seen that the scheme of universal training adopted by this Dominion is proving far more satisfactory than was anticipated, even by its most sanguine advocates. An excellent feeling generally prevails throughout the Force, and the rapid growth of the regimental spirit has produced a good-

fellowship between all ranks, the undoubted tendency of which is to establish a better understanding between individuals, and a resultant improvement in their civil relations.

The present system, based as it is on the fundamental principle that it is the duty of every citizen to take his share in the defence of his country, does not press on any one section of the community, but touches all classes, and every effort is made to carry it out with the minimum of inconvenience to both the employer and the employed. The Government has pleasure in acknowledging the ready support accorded by employers and the cheerful acceptance by the men of the citizen army of their responsibilities in connection with the scheme.

The importance of possessing a force trained, officered, and fit to take the field on an emergency cannot be overestimated. In New Zealand we have not been slow to recognise that soldiers cannot be made efficient, and units cannot be properly organised without concerted training, nor can it be expected that these results are attainable without the assistance of qualified officers and non-commissioned officers who, owing to their past training, are possessed of the necessary practical experience to enable them to act as instructors to our citizen force.

The visit paid by the Inspector-General of the Overseas Forces with his expert staff will, I am confident, prove of the greatest value, and Sir Ian Hamilton's able report,[1] following his complete inspection of the various units, will help us very materially in the introduction of further improvements and economies.

[1] [See Appendix, pp. 460-491.]

Annual Training Camps

The percentage of attendance at the divisional camps recently held throughout the Dominion was exceptionally good, and an excellent opportunity was afforded of testing the organisation of the higher branches of the service, and the cohesion of the different units.

The satisfactory results of these camps, despite the disadvantage of bad weather, are a striking tribute to the success attained by the General Officer Commanding, and his staff, in the training of the officers, non-commissioned officers, and men of the Territorial Force.

Finance

The expenditure out of revenue on account of defence amounted to £488,570, or £25,177 less than the estimated requirements, and showing a saving of £16,697 on the expenditure of the previous year. Steps have already been taken to reorganise what may be termed the Civil administrative side of the Defence Department on the lines advocated by the Inspector-General of the Overseas Forces.

Rifle Clubs

During the past year several concessions have been granted to the members of Rifle Clubs, the majority of whom are able-bodied citizens with some previous military training, who should prove a valuable additional line of defence when acting in support of the Territorial Force.

Senior Cadets

The Government is extremely gratified at the enthusiasm and efficiency displayed by the junior branch of the service, upon which it is recognised the future success of the Territorial Force to a very large extent depends. The moral and physical advantages of the training and discipline to which the Senior Cadets are subjected are already apparent. I would particularly direct attention to the special references to the Cadets contained in the Inspector-General's report.

The Statement I have just read was in print before the Empire became involved in war with all its terrible consequences, and honourable members will know that under the circumstances the estimates of revenue and expenditure may require to be amended.

The people of this Dominion may, and no doubt will, have to make sacrifices; but these, I feel sure, will be willingly accepted in the grave crisis which means so much to the Mother Country and the Dominions.

Every New Zealander looks forward to the future with anxiety, it may be, but with the calm assurance that everything which it is possible to do is being done, and with the hope that when the war comes to an end lasting peace will be secured.

Our banks are in an exceptionally strong position, but to make them still more secure, and to allay any possible feeling

of unrest, banknotes were yesterday by Proclamation made legal tender.

The Government desires most earnestly to impress upon our merchants and traders, both wholesale and retail, and distributors, how cruel it will be to attempt by any rise in prices of food-stuffs to reap advantage out of the present trouble, and how patriotic those people will be considered who even at some sacrifice retain the level of prices of food-stuffs in existence before this crisis eventuated.

I have every confidence that this warning is unnecessary. but the public may rest assured of this : that the Government has for some days past had under consideration the necessity for active steps to prevent a rise in the price of food-stuffs, and if it is found that legislation is necessary Parliament will be asked to pass that legislation, and to make it retrospective if need be.

In conclusion, may I express the earnest hope that the next Financial Statement may record once again a prosperous year with the balance on the right side.

Finally, may the Almighty Giver of all that is good protect our King, his Representatives and Councillors, wherever they may be ; may He guide them in their deliberations ; may His protecting arm be over all our people, and especially over the soldiers and sailors who are called upon at this time to make, it may be, the supreme sacrifice for King and Empire.

August 7, 1914.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

New Zealand Hansard.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: . . . Just a word now with regard to the Expeditionary Force. I am in a position to say now that in all probability the services of the Expeditionary Force will be required. I am not able to say what their probable destination may be, but we know sufficient of the mind of the Imperial authorities to warrant us going on with the necessary preparations for their equipment and shipment from this country. As I have said before, there are quite a number of communications coming to us which are confidential, but I think it my duty to take the House into our confidence as far as possible.

The HON. MR. NGATA (Eastern Maori District) : May I be

permitted to ask a question with regard to the right honourable gentleman's last statement? The right honourable gentleman has received various offers from the Native tribes from the North and the South Island, and the natives everywhere are waiting for word from the Government as to what extent their services may be availed of during the present crisis. One is given to understand that the Imperial regulations prevent the use of natives right at the front during this war, but whether these regulations prevent the use of Maoris, say, in India, or Egypt, or any station nearer to this Dominion, is left in doubt; that is quite apart, of course, from the use the Government may make of Maoris within the Dominion—I am speaking of overseas service. Naturally, the Maoris are keener about that than about service within the Dominion. Of course, if their services cannot be availed of outside, they will be content to serve inside. And, Sir, the offers of their services are alternate, for overseas as well as for within the Dominion. But I think the Government, if they have considered the matter, should make known throughout the Dominion by the medium of the Press to what extent the offers of contingents made by the Maoris may be availed of.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): The question of whether the services of men of the native race who may volunteer for active service abroad may be availed of depends not upon the New Zealand Government, but upon the Imperial authorities, and in consequence I am not able at the moment to answer the question of the member for the Eastern Maori District. I think I am right in saying that on one occasion the services of a number of Indian troops were availed of for active service abroad—I believe they were sent to Malta. I do not know whether the regulations are different to-day or not. But, apart from whether the services of the Maori race would be accepted by the Imperial Government, if circumstances should require it in their own country, the New Zealand Government will be glad to accept them.

THE WAR: NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Sir, before we go on with other business I would like to say that, as honourable members will understand, it is quite impossible for me to disclose the details of the business which Cabinet

was suddenly called upon to transact; but in order to prevent any anxiety or alarm, I will say that the news we had to deal with was good rather than otherwise. There is one statement that I want to make: It is now certain that the Expeditionary Force will be required—that is certain. I cannot say anything about the destination of the Expeditionary Force, or give any details in connection therewith. I want, however, to make this suggestion: We shall require a fairly large number of horses, probably three thousand or more. Part of the horses will be required for mounted infantry, and part for artillery purposes, and in connection therewith the suggestion I want to make is this, and I know that I am not making it in vain: If there are patriotic citizens—and we have thousands of them throughout New Zealand—if there are patriotic citizens who own horses suitable for mounted infantry and artillery purposes, and who are willing to hand them over to us, the Government will be glad to receive them as soon as possible. I may say that we have received offers from a number of people—I am not able to say how many people—but I can say that so far, in the aggregate, we have received offers of from two to three hundred horses. We shall require a great deal more than that number—probably we shall require three thousand horses—and if any citizen has horses he wants to give to the Empire or the Government, we shall be very glad to take charge of them.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): Sir, I am glad to hear from the right honourable gentleman that good news has been received. I quite recognise that such information—whatever the exact nature of the news may be—can only be given out by the Prime Minister, at his discretion, at the proper juncture, and then only if it is not confidential. But it is quite reassuring to the whole of us that there has been good news. Before sitting down, I want to endorse the sentiments expressed by the Prime Minister—namely, that those who own horses throughout the country will display that fine sense of patriotism so characteristic of New Zealand citizens in the past. I do not believe that the horse-owners of New Zealand, when the affairs of the Empire are at stake, will do anything to take advantage of a situation such as this, but, on the contrary, they will act generously. I feel equally certain, now that an

Expeditionary Force has been called for, that they will be forthcoming voluntarily in large numbers, and go willingly wherever they are required, and will do their duty courageously.

MR. HUNTER (Waipawa): Sir, as a New Zealander and as a horse-owner, and having been identified with the breeding of horses for a great many years, I may claim, perhaps, to express the belief that owners will respond to the call made by the Prime Minister. I am sure there will be a ready and willing response. Speaking for myself as an owner and breeder, I am prepared to find twenty horses if required.

August 8, 1914.

DONATIONS TO WAR FUND

THE RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Sir, before the House adjourns, I desire to say that, although I have not got a full list of those offering horses—in fact, I can only give the House the names of a very few of them—still, honourable members will be interested in knowing that offers are coming in very freely indeed both in respect to cash and horses—horses for the Expeditionary Force, and cash for the Defence Fund. Within the last few minutes many telegrams have been placed in my hands which, I may say, I have not yet read.[1] *New Zealand Hansard.*

THE RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): I should like to add my words of proud acknowledgment to what the Prime Minister has stated in respect to the donors of horses and money who have come forward in the present crisis. It shows clearly, to my mind, what I and every one of us have believed hitherto of New Zealanders—that in times of stress and trouble every class in this country will do what it can to help. The fine way in which these people have set an example will, I am sure, be worthily followed all over this Dominion. I take this opportunity of expressing for myself, and on behalf of those associated with me on this side of the House, our warm acknowledgments and appreciation of the splendid response made by those named by the Prime Minister.

[1] [The names of these and subsequent contributors will be found in the New Zealand *Hansard*; they are omitted here.]

THE WAR

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Before we go on, Sir, I should like to say a word or two about the trouble in Europe, and the present position there. I have been in contact with the public to some extent this afternoon. I have learnt there is an impression in Wellington that news comes to the Government which we have not given out to the Press. That is not the case at all. It may seem very extraordinary to members and to the public when I tell them this: that no news in the ordinary sense of the word comes to the Government. I have done my best to get news at the earliest possible moment, and to a certain extent I have failed. I have cabled to the High Commissioner to send me news of any important event which occurs; and I have got his replies, but the news sent to me by the courtesy of the Press Association has always been in advance of the news sent to me by the High Commissioner. I am not blaming the High Commissioner, because what has occurred in this respect I believe is owing to the censorship at both ends, and I have not the slightest doubt that the High Commissioner's cables are delayed in that way. A rather important item of news has come to me this evening, through the Press Association, and I propose to give it to the House:—

'Officially announced that Norway has notified France that she will defend her neutrality despite German threats. Holland has declared war against Germany.'

There is also a suggestion that the Government are not taking the Leader of the Opposition into its confidence as it ought to do, and I want to clear this up. The Government have got to cope with an exceedingly difficult position. We are to a certain extent in the confidence of the Imperial authorities, though we are only in the confidence of the Imperial authorities so far as New Zealand and the defence of the Pacific are concerned. We act on the advice and on the recommendation, and sometimes on the instructions, of the Imperial authorities. Of course—their advice, or recommendation, or instruction always come to us through His Excellency the Governor, who meets the members of the Cabinet daily. One instance will give honourable members

an idea of what is occurring. On several occasions the direct instructions received through His Excellency the Governor have been not to take any one into his confidence except the Prime Minister, and on other occasions not to take any one into his confidence except the Defence Minister and the Prime Minister. That is no reflection upon our colleagues—not the very slightest. If the Hon. the Minister of Railways, or the Hon. the Minister of Public Works, or any other member of the Government, happened to be Prime Minister, the instructions would be exactly the same as they are at the present moment. I want members to understand that we have been specially instructed, with respect to all information that comes to us from the Imperial authorities, to be as secret as the grave; and I have got to comply with the instructions we have received, because I know, and the Defence Minister and other members of the Cabinet know, that sometimes the lives of hundreds of men may depend on these instructions being kept secret. I mention that to clear away what appears to be a misconception. So far as the right honourable the Leader of the Opposition is concerned, I want to say that no discourtesy has been intended by me nor by any member of the Cabinet towards the right honourable gentleman. I have sent for him on several occasions, and have communicated with him, and on at least one occasion the Governor was present and listened to the communication I made, and which he had given me. On every occasion I have given to him what it has been possible to give, and whenever it is possible I shall be glad to consult with him; and I may say here that I fully appreciate the courtesy the right honourable gentleman has shown to the Ministry. But if the Leader of the Opposition were in my position, he could not have done any more to me than I have done towards him. . . . . When I was speaking in the forenoon, I mentioned that matters were very satisfactory in regard to the Defence Fund and offers of support. Since then I have received several other telegrams, which I intend to give a sample of. . . .

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): May I be permitted to say that the statement which the Prime Minister has just made regarding the contributions of men and money makes one's heart beat with gladness, and makes one feel proud of being a New Zealander. I do not

think there can be anything more reassuring than the spontaneous way in which the people of this country are offering to do all they can to help the Empire in a great emergency. It is a practical assurance of the loyalty of the people of this country, though we all know that tangible evidence is not necessary in this respect, because we know it exists. I want to add my words of commendation to those of the Prime Minister in acknowledgment of the response of the people. May I add a word in regard to his personal reference to myself, and I want to assure him that in reference to his not consulting me, or otherwise, I have not complained to any one inside the House or outside of it. I do not expect the Prime Minister or his colleagues to disclose to me, either as a member of the House, or as Leader of the Opposition, information concerning any of the events that are going on. That is a matter entirely for the Prime Minister's own wishes. That will not influence my course of action one way or the other at this grave juncture in the Empire's affairs. My only desire is to do what the Prime Minister is doing—my desire is to do in a humble way my duty to the Empire at a time when I think personal and party matters should be completely sunk —to do all in my power to help. I have no personal feeling of any kind. I may, however, mention here—which may account for what the Prime Minister has referred to—that a number of members have come to me and asked me whether before the official announcement was made by the Governor, I had received any intimation from the Government in regard to England having commenced war with Germany, and I replied that I had not, but I did not reply complainingly. I did not hear of it until just going on the steps in front of the Parliamentary Buildings, when I heard the Governor announce it. I have nothing in the shape of what might be termed peevishness about any matter at the present juncture. I am indifferent about personal courtesies, whether they are extended to me or not in regard to anything that may or may not be done, so long as all are animated with the desire to do everything possible, and to the best of our ability to help our Empire in this time of great emergency. I subordinate everything else to that.

MR. RUSSELL (Avon): There is one remark I want to refer to that was made by the Prime Minister in the address he gave

to the House just now, and I wish to do so with every moderation. I refer to the desirability—if I may so put it—of the right honourable the Leader of the Opposition being associated with the Government as closely as the Government can see their way to associate him in the presence of this great crisis in the history of our Empire. Sir, we have seen it stated—I do not know how far it is authoritative—that the Home Government have associated—at least, so it is reported—Mr. Bonar Law, and the Leader of the Opposition, Lord Lansdowne, with themselves. We have seen in Australia—I think it is so stated in the cables this morning—that Mr. Fisher, the Leader of the Opposition there, has been associated with the Government. And we have also seen that in New South Wales a similar position has taken place in connection with the association of Mr. Wade with the Holman Government. What we are asking for is nothing more than the Government are able to give. We do not suggest that in any way the Leader of the Opposition should be associated with the Government any closer than the Government feel themselves able to do so; but we would point out to the Government that the Leader of the Opposition has had a very large experience of public affairs in England. He is undoubtedly more in touch with Imperial matters than any other member of Parliament, on account of his repeated presence in England, and we feel that his advice and counsel at the present time may be of assistance, and it is only from that point of view that we who belong to the rank and file of the Opposition suggest that if in any way the Government are able to do so they should associate the Leader of the party on this side with themselves in connection with matters that are taking place at the present time.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: Just one word in reply to the honourable member for Avon. What he suggests has been done; but, of course, even the Leader of the Opposition knows perfectly well that I cannot possibly ask him, or any one else who is not a Cabinet Minister, to attend in conference at the Cabinet meetings. It has never been done, and, as a matter of fact, it cannot be done. But in every other way I shall be glad to take the Leader of the Opposition into my confidence. I have done so already. . . .

DR. RANGIHIROA (Northern Maori District): I would like

to ask that the Government should take some steps to inform the residents of Niné Island that war has been declared. That island belongs to New Zealand, and the communication is by means of a sailing vessel, which takes three weeks each way for the voyage. Their principal trade is in copra, which six weeks ago was selling at a high price. Since then the bottom has dropped out of the market, and the residents should, if possible, be advised of the position. There is also the question of food supplies.

The HON. DR. POMARE (Minister in Charge of Cook Islands Administration): The Government will take the first opportunity of notifying the outlying islands of the position.

THE WAR

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): His Excellency the Governor, Mr. Speaker, has asked me to read to the House a summary of the speech which has just been delivered by the Prime Minister in the House of Commons in proposing a vote of a hundred millions.[1] . . .

I move that this document be printed, and be entered in the Journals of the House.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): I would not like the opportunity to pass without saying that I think the weighty words expressed at this juncture by the Prime Minister of England, in the House of Commons, strike a chord of sympathetic attachment to every Britisher in every part of the world. There can be no doubt, Mr. Speaker, that Mr. Asquith in that important statement which he delivered in the House of Commons at a time of a great crisis in the affairs of our widespread Empire recognised what we all realise—that there was no other honourable course under the circumstances for England to pursue; and his statements regarding that overmastering Power to which he refers—Germany—are, unfortunately, too true. We realise that the disturbing element for the last fifteen years in connection with the peace of the whole world has been Germany; and we recognise out in these seas that the country which has been responsible for the everlasting building of ships of war has been Germany, and that that building has been going on

[1] [The speech will be found in *Diplomatic*, 2, pp. 421-31.]

for a set purpose, and has forced the policy of the British Government and other Governments to carry out a huge building programme. And when we find that the responsible head of the British people in England—I am not referring to the crowned head, who is outside the arena of politics—making a statement of the important and far-reaching nature that has been read to us to-night, which shows why Great Britain has taken the course indicated by Mr. Asquith, then I say there is no part of the Empire that will not endorse the decision and action of the British Government. When we find that the request made to the House of Commons for £100,000,000 was passed without adverse criticism, it shows unquestionably that the heart of the Empire is united, and so is every part of the Empire. The five hundred thousand men asked for in the British Isles will also be readily provided; then, when it is realised that we have, in common with other portions of the Empire, spontaneously risen to the occasion, as shown by the fact that all have at once spontaneously agreed to send as many men as they can provide for the defence of the Empire, we can, in the truest sense of the term, in this remote part of the British possessions, endorse every word in that memorable speech of the British Prime Minister which has been read to us to-night—a speech which was delivered by Mr. Asquith on what is undoubtedly the greatest historic occasion in modern history, if not, indeed, in the history of the world.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Before I proceed to read one or two other cablegrams I have received, I wish to say that I agree thoroughly with the opinion just expressed by the Leader of the Opposition. I appreciate the fact, and I am quite sure every citizen of New Zealand will appreciate the fact, that the Government of Great Britain have risen to the occasion, and have put forward to the world that they consider that the honour of the Empire and of its citizens take priority over every other consideration. There was one point that pleased me in the speech of Mr. Asquith, when he referred to the fact that the Dominions of the Empire had come forward and spontaneously offered to assist the Empire in the time of trouble. I do not want to indulge in any boasting, because this is not the time, but I am very strongly of opinion at the present moment that the first contingent to be despatched to the assistance of the Empire

from any part of the world will be despatched from New Zealand.

Motion agreed to.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister) : I desire, before the House adjourns, to read a telegram from Mr. H. Morrison, that came to hand while I was in charge of the Bill. It is dated from Masterton :—

'About fifty horses and £4000 to purchase horses voted at Masterton meeting this afternoon.'

Masterton is doing well. There is another telegram on the same lines from Cambridge, stating that two hundred well-mounted men from the Waikato district would be ready to serve wherever required. The Press Association has been good enough to forward to me the following message, which has come to New Zealand through them :—

'The British Fleet got into touch with the German North Sea Fleet south of the Dogger Bank. After the engagement the British Fleet was seen chasing the Germans towards Holland.'

ADJOURNMENT : WAR INTELLIGENCE

On the question, That the House do now adjourn.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition : Sir, one never desires to gloat over intelligence of the kind we have just received, but we are all intensely anxious that our enemy should be beaten, and that our own forces, and those of the countries we are allied to should triumph. Unfortunately, we are not perfectly sure that the information we are receiving by cable from time to time is authentic. I wish it were possible for some means to be found whereby authoritative information could be conveyed to the Governor or the Government, and such as is not confidential communicated to the people of our country. We go to bed one night in the full belief that the battleship *Goeben* has been taken by the French. We wake in the morning, and we are told that she is proceeding full speed past Gibraltar ; and another day we are informed that she is taking refuge in Messina. The matter of authentic information is of so much importance that I do wish it was possible for the authorities in England to arrange for absolutely reliable information, however brief, to be supplied to the Governor or the Government from an

authoritative source. I know that the London and New Zealand Press Association are doing their best, and I am not in any way, at a time of unexampled difficulty, reflecting upon them; but, like other institutions, they are suffering from the censorship, and also from the difficulty of knowing accurately what is taking place, and doubtless are not at present getting the information to send through which they desire.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): I cannot guarantee that the information I have just conveyed to the House is authentic. I can only say that I have done my best to get for the people of New Zealand authentic and definite information of what is going on at the seat of war. I am sorry to acknowledge that up to the present I have to a certain extent failed. I intend, however, to try to get information from another source. The trouble is that the usual methods of communication are blocked, chiefly by the censorship which has been established, and also to a certain extent by the tremendous number of cables that are passing to and fro. However, I hope to make better arrangements for the transmission of news to New Zealand in the course of the next few days.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: I think, Mr. Speaker, it will be as difficult at present for the High Commissioner in London to get the information we are anxious to have as it is for the Press Association, and I do not think any fault should be found with that officer, who would, I am sure, do all in his power. I think the information at present can only be obtained through one channel, and I believe the least delay will be occasioned by that channel being made use of. A little later on the same difficulties as exist at the start of the war will not be experienced.

Motion agreed to.

August 10, 1914.

THE WAR: NEW ZEALAND'S OFFER OF TROOPS

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Before we go on to the ordinary business, I desire to read a telegram which reached me yesterday from the High Commissioner, a copy of which, as a matter of fact, I gave to the Press last night, and which appeared in this morning's papers, but which

New Zealand Hansard.

I read for the purpose of placing it on record, and because I want to say something in connection with it :—

'At the invitation of Lord Kitchener I saw him this morning at the War Office. He said, "I desire you to tender my sincere thanks and appreciation to the Government and people of New Zealand for their prompt, generous, and valuable offer of material help." Lord Kitchener especially values the type of men New Zealand can send. He knows their valour and devotion. He will see that all care will be taken of New Zealand's brave sons, and he feels that they will show a continuance of same resource and courage in the field which they displayed in South Africa. Then the Dominion's honour would be safe in their hands. He wished me to send that message to the Government and people of New Zealand.'

I move that the message I have just read be recorded in the Journals of the House.

Motion agreed to.

THE EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister) : I want to follow that up by making a statement. I have been given to understand that an idea obtains in certain quarters in some districts in New Zealand to the effect that our men are not going to the front, but that they are simply going to be used for garrison duty, and will not serve as regular troops. I am in a position to say that such is not the case. The New Zealand Expeditionary Forces go to Europe, and in all probability will call at an English port for orders. What I am saying now applies generally, because it must be understood that directly the Force leaves New Zealand, they are Imperial troops in every sense of the word, and under Imperial authority. I cannot speak for every company, but I am glad to think, and I know the men will be glad to hear, that within a few weeks after leaving New Zealand they will find themselves at the front, and probably in the fighting line. In addition to that, I may add that General Godley will go in command of the Expeditionary Force. I think that is all I can say upon that matter.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition) : I want to say, in the first place, that I am sure that the message of Lord Kitchener will be appreciated by every man and woman in this country. There will be a feeling of great

confidence in connection with the men who are going away to know that they are to be under the control of an officer who has had such a distinguished record as Lord Kitchener. And that message which has come to the Prime Minister from the High Commissioner gives expression to the opinion of the High Commissioner, which, I think, also will be endorsed by every member of Parliament, and by every well-wisher in this country. We all know of Lord Kitchener's wonderful career, and we know of the great knowledge he has regarding New Zealand. He has been through New Zealand, and has been in close touch with it for many years. He had a brother and a sister in this country, and he knows the people of the country well. And when he speaks of the calibre of the men of this country he does so with a personal knowledge and experience, as a great soldier who has had opportunity of judging men of almost every qualification. I think it is one of the gratifying phases in connection with the present crisis that a man of such distinguished parts and with such a magnificent record as Lord Kitchener should be the recognised executive controller of the Army at the time of so grave a crisis.

August 11, 1914.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): There is a statement which I think I ought to make public, and which will be of interest to members. This is a copy of a telegram addressed to Mr. Gordon Coates, M.P., Wellington, from Mr. John Totich, representing the Slavonians of Northern Wairoa :— *New Zealand Hansard.*

'Kindly make it known to your Government that three hundred Dalmatians and Croatians in this district are all of Slavonian nationality, and majority British subjects, and as such we have already renounced our political and hereditary rights in Austria by refusing to go to join their colours. We, as Slavonian race, are bitter against Germanic principles. We have always sympathised with our brother Serbians and Russians, therefore as such we consider ourselves to be your Government's faithful ally, friends and sympathisers, ready to join the British colours to fight our common foe. We pray that your Government may not consider us as Austrians, and, as such, treat us as political enemies.'

It is very interesting, after what has taken place, to find that our friends in the North, the Dalmatian and Croatian

gum-diggers, are ready to stand side by side with us against a nation that they consider to be the common enemy. I wish, further, to intimate that the Government have decided, with the consent and approval of Parliament, to assume all financial responsibility in connection with the Expeditionary Force, including the mobilisation expenses, equipment, pay, and maintenance abroad.

August 12, 1914.

THE WAR: LADY ISLINGTON'S OFFER

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): . . . I should like to read a communication which came to me to-day from the High Commissioner. It is as follows:—

'Lady Islington has offered her London house as hospital New Zealand soldiers if should be required. Also willing to take leading part in connection therewith, and hospital work connected with New Zealanders that may be undertaken in England. Her action has concurrence British Government.'

I need hardly say that I will take care that the communication I have just read is acknowledged, and that Lady Islington is thanked by the Government on behalf of the people and the Parliament of New Zealand. . . .

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): Sir, I want to say with what pleasure I heard the statement conveyed by the High Commissioner as to the offer of Lady Islington. I am sure there is not a person in the country but will recognise that Lady Islington, who was well and favourably known in this Dominion as the wife of the then Governor, has done a very fine thing indeed in placing her home in London as a hospital at the disposal of New Zealanders who may unfortunately find themselves in a condition requiring hospital treatment. It is the deed of a gentlewoman, and one that we can very highly appreciate in New Zealand. I wish, so far as this side of the House is concerned, to add my words of recognition to those expressed by the Prime Minister. I also want to say that it comes as a very singular coincidence in connection with the history of the family to find that Lord Islington—who was Governor of this Dominion for so long, and carried out his duties with great ability, and to the satisfaction of all our citizens—according to an announcement in the

cables to-night, has been admitted to the Administration of the British Government, and has been made Under-Secretary of State for the Colonies. To my mind, that is a very high compliment to Lord Islington, and I am perfectly certain it is a source of great satisfaction in this country to find that a former Governor, who was a man of the people, and at the same time a man who maintained the dignity of his high position in a way to command the respect of all classes, and who carried out his duties here in a very thorough manner, has been called to the counsels of the State, and given an important position. I say it is a source of general satisfaction to the people of this Dominion, and it is gratifying to find that Lord and Lady Islington are before us in New Zealand in connection with the thoughtful and generous action of the one and the appointment to the Ministry of the other in the Old Country. . . .

August 13, 1914.

THE WAR: WAR DECLARED WITH AUSTRIA

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): His Excellency the Governor has asked me to read the following telegram to the House :— *New Zealand Hansard.*

'War has broken out with Austria-Hungary.'

This news, of course, was not altogether unexpected. The necessary Proclamation will be issued to-night. While on the subject, I may say, with regard to the troops who are on board the steamers now in Wellington Harbour, that a great many inquiries have been made to me to-day as to when the vessels will sail. The only information I can give is that the troops are now under the control of the Imperial authorities, and they will not sail until the Imperial authorities give the word. I do not know when the word will be given. It is quite impossible for me to say. In the meantime we have complied with the instructions of the Imperial Government in placing the men on the two ships which will convey them to their destination. Personally, I do not think the ships will sail to-morrow. That is all I can say at the moment, and, in saying that, it will be understood that I am simply expressing my own opinion.

Transmission of War News

The Right Hon. Mr. Massey (Prime Minister): I think I have been able to make what appear to be fairly satisfactory arrangements for the transmission of war news. I have been in correspondence by cable with the High Commissioner, from whom I have received to-day the following cable:—

'Reliable war-news messages: The Commonwealth of Australia have placed a staff of four men to secure news. They will give us duplicates. These will be sent numbered consecutively, and divided into two classes, "official" and "reliable."'

Like ourselves, apparently, the Government of the Commonwealth has had some difficulty in securing reliable war news, and so they have arranged for their own staff to look after the news and transmit it to Australia. We shall be able, under this arrangement, to secure duplicates of the news forwarded to the Commonwealth. I may further say that I have also, through the courtesy of the Press Association, made arrangements for all important items of news each afternoon, so that the information can be given to the House.

August 14, 1914.

LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

The War: New Zealand Expeditionary Force

New Zealand Hansard.

The Hon. Mr. Bell (Minister of Internal Affairs): Before asking you to leave the chair till the ringing of the bell, I propose to formally state to the Council what took place this afternoon. Up to two o'clock to-day, the Government had no immediate instruction from the Imperial authorities, and we had no reason to believe that the departure of the advance guard of the expedition would be immediate. We were informed at that hour this afternoon, and then we took steps so far as possible to assemble the troops. They were immediately sent to the Basin Reserve, where the Governor, the Prime Minister, the Leader of the Opposition, the Minister of Defence, and the Mayor of Wellington addressed them. Honourable gentlemen in ordinary course would have had notice of the intended review of the men, but the circumstance that from the Cabinet-room the troops were ordered to be

assembled at the Basin Reserve almost immediately after we received the instruction made that impossible. I cannot say anything as to the destination of the expedition, nor can I say more than the Prime Minister said in another place this evening—that we have every reason to believe that within reasonable limit of risk the expedition will be safeguarded and escorted.

The HON. MR. JONES: Do you know when they go?

The HON. MR. BELL: The honourable gentleman will not see them in Wellington Harbour, I think, again. The farewell to the first fourteen hundred men was said to-day. 'God save the King!'

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

DR. A. K. NEWMAN (Wellington, East) asked the Minister of Defence if half-castes who were otherwise eligible would be allowed to volunteer for service with the Expeditionary Force.

The HON. MR. ALLEN (Minister of Defence) said if they were Territorials, he did not see that there was anything to prevent them. He thought he had seen some half-castes in the ranks of those who had left that day.

THE WAR: DEPARTURE OF THE NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): At this stage I think I should say a word with regard to the very important event that took place this afternoon—the sending-away of the first section of the New Zealand Expeditionary Force. I might tell honourable members that at half-past two o'clock P.M. to-day I had not the very slightest idea that the ships would be able to sail for a week. The indications all pointed in the direction of their remaining here for several days; but the order came very suddenly, and I am bound to say that it was responded to very promptly. We felt that we should give the public of Wellington an opportunity of giving the men as good a send-off as possible under the circumstances, and so we arranged that they were to be taken from the ships and marched to the Basin Reserve, and I am glad to say that

many thousands of Wellington people turned out to give them the send-off they undoubtedly deserved. I would like to relieve any anxiety that may be felt by relatives and friends, and the public generally—because we are all anxious about the safety of our soldiers—and I want to say that all possible precautions have been taken for the safety of the men and the ships by the Imperial Government and the New Zealand Government. Honourable members will understand that at a time like this I cannot go into details ; it is impossible for me to do so. They will understand in a few weeks, when we hear of what has taken place, why it is not possible for me to say anything more now. I say that, while I admit that it is impossible during war-time to avoid risks. Let me say, too, that I think the members and the citizens of New Zealand who saw the men in the Basin Reserve to-day, and then on board the ships, must have felt as I did—proud of the men, proud of their courage, and proud of their physique, and, above all, of their willingness to serve their country in a very difficult crisis.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition) : Sir, I agree with what the Prime Minister said about the despatch of the troops to-day. I think nothing could be more satisfactory than the manner in which they went, and nothing could be more gratifying than to see what a fine body of men were despatched from this country. In their turn, I believe, wherever they go they will give a good account of themselves, and uphold the best traditions of their country, and add further to the fine previous record of the New Zealanders for bravery and distinction. So long as men of that sort are ready to respond to their country's call, we have every reason to be proud ; in fact, the only complaint we hear is from men who want to go and who cannot get in. It gives an indication of the numerous body of men there are left in the Dominion who are willing to serve their country in the field of Empire wherever the necessity arises. . . .

August 26, 1914.

ENFRANCHISEMENT OF EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

New Zealand Hansard.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition) : I want to refer to a very important matter, because

I think this is an opportune time to do so. I feel that upon an occasion such as this is we ought not to adjourn without discussing the question of the enfranchisement of the Expeditionary Forces.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: I will be able to make a statement on Tuesday, I hope.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: I am very glad to hear the Prime Minister say so; but, personally, I want to make my own view clear. I think the men going away from this country to fight for the Empire should by legislation be enabled to record their vote at both the parliamentary and the licensing elections. It does not really matter, from the point of view that I hold regarding the enfranchising of these men, whether the elections are held this year or next year; that is not the point. There will in all probability be a number of men who will not be back in this country when the general election takes place—men who are going away for a noble purpose, although a regrettable one—and it does seem to me that there should be full provision made for those men exercising their vote.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: How do you suggest it can be done?

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: I am going to suggest two ways in which I think it can easily be done. I do not think there ought to be any doubt in the minds of those men who are going away in regard to the exercise of their votes, both for the parliamentary and the licensing questions. In the first place, it seems to me that there must be, in an abnormal state of affairs as exists at present, some abnormal provision made to enable the absent men I have referred to recording their votes. There ought to be an electoral branch created in every camp, with a Returning Officer for those camps; and by Order in Council provision should be made just as at an ordinary election for those men to exercise their votes—the vote should be given not for an individual standing for election on either side in politics, but the vote should be given for a party. It can be done.

An HON. MEMBER: What about the independents?

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: There could be provision made for independents, but I think that would complicate it to some extent.

An HON. MEMBER: Supposing there are two candidates of the same party.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: Then in such a case the leader of the Reform party or the leader of the Liberal party could declare who is the candidate for that party, and the one so declared by the leader would be the one for whom the vote should be recorded. In the schedule of a Bill provision could be made for votes being recorded in the way I have indicated. There are not many independents, and I am certain the Labour party will recognise that it would be difficult to make provision for that party unless the system of the transferable vote were adopted; and if such a system were introduced it would complicate matters to a very great extent, and might prevent the passage of the Bill, and so deprive a large number of men of their right to vote. It seems to me that considering we are sending away from this country possibly ten thousand men, or more later on, that some provision could be made without any difficulty, to ensure that any man who wished could exercise his vote for the selected nominee or candidate of the respective parties. This little country has done marvellously well in sending away the advance party and getting ready the main Expeditionary Force. It is not a desirable thing to take a still larger number of men than we can spare from the ordinary walks of life, excepting under great necessity, in addition to the number this country is already sending, but the suggestion I am making as to allowing these men who have already gone, and are still to go to have their votes recorded, should be seriously considered. Then the men of the Expeditionary Force before going away could record their votes for their party; and the Electoral Officers appointed could be attached to the respective camps, and they would prepare the roll and ensure that only those of age were entitled to vote. And there ought to be provision that those who would come of age upon the date of the election would also be enabled to record their votes. Their names would be sent by the camp Returning Officer to a Chief Electoral Officer who would, within a week of the general election, send them under seal to the Returning Officer in the respective districts. There could be no such thing as anybody abusing the system, as those men, whatever their views might be—I am not talking from a party standpoint,

as the system would be just as fair for the Government as for the Opposition party—should undeniably have the right to exercise the franchise. They have already asked for the privilege, and the mere fact that there is a great emergency now, and that they are going away to assist the Empire, is no reason why the Parliament of this country should not in its wisdom be able to supply a practical system to enable the members of our Expeditionary Forces to record their votes, although they cannot know the candidates who are going to be put forward, or the declared party nominees in the event of there being more than one candidate in the field, as no doubt in some cases there will be. I admit that the suggestion means the opening-up of new ground, but we have done that before in this country frequently, and I dare say it will be done again. In the event of this system being brought into law, there can be no suggestion as to its workableness, and so I suggest to the Prime Minister that is one way of doing it. It is not the only way. Another system would be by providing proxies.

MR. HUICK: A power of attorney?

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: By providing for the ten thousand men a system of proxies would, I admit, be a big job, and I am satisfied it could be done, though I think it is not so good a system as the one I have suggested; but I think that the man who wants to record his vote in any portion of this country, and who will be away from the country at the date of the general election, should have the privilege in some practical form. We should do all in our power to ensure that the same secrecy which is looked for by any voter in the country now should be applied in the case of these men. The objection to a proxy system is that the man must send his vote to somebody else, and request him to record it for a particular candidate, but under a proxy his vote would be known to somebody else.

An HON. MEMBER: Under a system of proxies the man who held the power of proxy could appropriate the whole of the hundred votes for himself if he chose to become a candidate.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: It is open to that objection, I recognise. I believe voting by proxy is not the best way, but is rather an objectionable method. Scores of the men who are going away in the Expeditionary Force are in

employment, and the great majority of them would desire to preserve from the knowledge of their employers—not from any improper motive or from any fear—the direction in which their votes would be cast, so that the proxy system or the method of power of attorney would be objectionable. But the details of a scheme could be provided so as to meet any exigency that might arise. The idea would be only a matter of common justice to the volunteers, and it would give them the consolation of knowing that they would have the privilege, which they value, of being able to vote on both the political and the licensing issues. I commend to the attention of the Right Hon. the Prime Minister the necessity of seeing that their electoral rights should be preserved to them.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: I have said that we have it under consideration, and that I will make a statement regarding it on Tuesday.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: Well, this is my only opportunity of bringing the question forward. I am not raising it from any party standpoint. I suppose there are men on all sides of politics in the Expeditionary Force, and when we are sending them away to distant places, it is only right that they should have the same advantages as citizens, in the election of the rulers of their country, as if they remained in New Zealand. Why, Sir, we give such privileges to the absentee voter. An elector can go away and take an absentee voter's permit, or if he is a seaman, he can exercise his vote while away. All that is done without any difficulty.

The HON. MR. FRASER: For a particular person, though.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD: What difference does it make? Take the case of the Minister of Public Works, or the Prime Minister, or any other man you like. What does the absence of a name signify? If an Oppositionist is standing against either of those gentlemen, what does it matter about the absence of a name if power is given by legislation for a man to vote for his party, and for the candidate accepted in respect of the electorate by the leader of his party—by the leader of either party? That would be a great deal better than not being able to vote at all. Surely it is incomparably better to make a safe provision enabling the elector to vote for the candidate that the leader of the party selects—in the event of there being more than one candidate on a given side

in the electorate. That would, if we provide for it by legislation, be as good as if the voter knew that Mr. Massey or Mr. Fraser individually were the candidate. There can be only an odd exception here and there where the principle would not apply with full effect and extend over every electorate, thus creating a system of voting for the members of the Expeditionary Force. What I have suggested is to overcome a difficulty in connection with these ten thousand men, or whatever the number may be, to exercise their right of voting at the next general election and the licensing polls. I believe that we, as a Parliament, ought to rise to the occasion and establish a precedent to enable this large body of men, who have voluntarily offered to go out to defend the Empire, to exercise the full privileges of citizenship which they enjoy at the moment. In doing this every necessary precaution could be taken to prevent abuses. Personally, I will most heartily support a proposal to give those men the right to vote upon the parliamentary issues and upon the licensing issue. They are entitled to it, and it can be done. I recognise it can only be done if the Government take it up, because we on this side of the House at this juncture would not attempt to raise a party issue or make it a party issue. We want to see these men treated rightly and fairly, and the Parliament alone can do it. Members on this side of the House will give every assistance to enable it to be done. I am perfectly certain that a vast majority of the people of this country, upon all sides of politics, are anxious that these men should have that which they have petitioned this House for already, because we know that petitions have been presented praying that the privilege should be extended to them before they leave our shores. I should feel very much happier if before this House rises I could have some assurance that these men, some of whom may never return—and we sincerely hope they will all return—would be given the privilege they desire. In considering this matter, all minor matters should be sunk, and any suggestion that it should not be done because of the absence of a name is not, I think, a sufficient reason for debarring these men from exercising the undeniable right they have to say who should be their representatives in Parliament.

August 28, 1914.

NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

New Zealand Hansard.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): Before proceeding to the orders of the day, His Excellency the Governor requested me to read to the House the following extract from a communication from him to myself:—

'His Excellency earnestly hopes that when the time arrives for the embarkation of the Expeditionary Force for Europe, no questions will be asked or suggested as to the route, not that His Excellency does not desire to give all portions of news which will be of interest to the people of New Zealand, but because it is vitally important to keep all movements of the Force as secret as possible, so that the risk of the news finding its way to the enemy's hands should be reduced to a minimum, in order that no step shall be left unturned to prevent any chance happening which would endanger the lives of the expedition.

'In the same way His Excellency would suggest that it is inadvisable to give particulars of any steps which either this Dominion or any other dependency of the Crown is taking to defend itself.

'His Excellency feels certain he will not have to appeal in vain to the people and public Press of these Islands, as throughout this crisis they have manifested in such a marked degree a desire to assist every one to the utmost of their power. At the same time the Governor feels it right to make these representations through his Prime Minister, as rumours have been circulated regarding the advance party of the Expeditionary Force which were entirely incorrect. As so late as half-past eight o'clock A.M., of the 27th August, he was assured that everything was well with the Force.

'His Excellency desires it to be known that he will at all times facilitate the circulation of any interesting news which can with safety be communicated to both the people and Press.'

I hardly think this communication requires any explanation, and I am quite sure Parliament, and the public, and the Press will see the wisdom of complying with the request just made by His Excellency the Governor.

September 1, 1914.

THE WAR: MAORI VOLUNTEERS

ibid.

MR. G. M. THOMSON (Dunedin, North): I desire to ask the Prime Minister the following question without notice: Whether, in view of the employment by the British Govern-

ment of Indian troops in the present war in Europe, the New Zealand Government is prepared to accept the military services of those of His Majesty's Maori subjects who are desirous of volunteering?

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister): In reply to the question asked by the member for Dunedin North, I would like to say that I have a great deal of sympathy with the suggestion of the honourable member. There has always been a sort of understanding that coloured races were not to be employed in any European war. But now we have the precedent of Indians being taken to Europe for the purpose of taking part in the present war; and we have to remember that, so far as the Maoris are concerned, they are free citizens of the Empire—they are supposed to share with us all the privileges and benefits of British citizenship; and, while that is supposed to be the case, I do not see why the Maoris should not have the privilege of fighting for the Empire if there is a crisis in the Empire's affairs. That is my own opinion. I will be very glad indeed to represent to His Excellency the Governor the suggestion made by the member for Dunedin North.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): I wish to take the opportunity of saying that, now the British Government are sending Indian troops and have publicly announced it, it appears to me that the relaxation of the understanding that existed prior to that event against native races in any part of the Empire taking part in wars might also very well be relaxed as far as this country is concerned. Subject to the consent of the Imperial Government, whom I understood the Prime Minister to say he would consult about the matter before taking action, and to their agreeing, I believe the great majority of the people of this country would, in the circumstances, be favourable to the Maoris, who have been so distinguished in the past as a fine fighting force, joining in the defence of the Empire as a whole.

The HON. MR. NGATA (Eastern Maori District): May I say a few words on this matter with the indulgence of the House? There is undoubtedly a demand and a desire on the part of the Maori people to stand shoulder to shoulder with their pakeha fellow-subjects in the present war; but so practical a man as the present Minister of Defence must know

that the bulk of the Maori population live in the areas that are exempt from training, and, although the Maoris are enthusiastic to come forward and take their due share in the proceedings now taking place in Europe, undoubtedly there is a greater need in their case for training than in the case of the pakehas who are offering. I would make the suggestion to the Minister, if the offers which have been made are accepted by the Imperial Government, that steps be taken immediately to have concentration camps formed in some of the Maori districts, where the Maori volunteers may be trained. I venture the opinion that in regard to some of the minor requirements of a soldier the Maori is naturally well equipped. He is a natural scout, and in the matter of commissariat he is unsurpassed in this country; and if it comes to roughing it and campaigning, I should say from my reading that, in regard to at least fifty per cent. of the requirements of the soldier, he is very well equipped. All he wants is training in the field, an understanding of the words of command and of the necessary evolutions, and, above all, the steadiness which seems to be the characteristic of that noble army now under the command of General French operating in France. The Arawas offer a contingent of three hundred; the Wairoa natives offer another contingent. Both come of warlike stock. I have no doubt that as soon as the Maoris understand that their services will be accepted—and it seems that the services of every British subject are required at this moment—then the offers that will be made to the Government will be sufficient, I think, to fill one troopship.

September 8, 1914.

WIRELESS STATIONS

New Zealand Hansard.

MR. WITTY (Riccarton) asked the Postmaster-General, without previous notice, whether in the case of a breakdown on both ocean-cable routes to New Zealand, or the serious blockage of the Eastern route through the interruption of the Pacific route, any arrangements could be made for relieving the pressure by erecting wireless stations for the transmission of messages, especially Press news, and whether he had made any arrangements of this kind with other countries.

The HON. MR. R. H. RHODES (Postmaster-General)

replied that the Government thought it inadvisable to make public at present what means of communication New Zealand had with other countries, but he would be glad to give the honourable member any private information he could on the subject. He did not wish to withhold information, but it was inadvisable to give any at present.

MR. WITTY: It is important to the public.

The HON. MR. R. H. RHODES said that no doubt it was highly important to the public; but, still, it was not desirable to publish the information.

IN COMMITTEE.—CLASS X.: DEFENCE DEPARTMENT

Adjutant-General's Branch, £194,998.

MR. MACDONALD (Bay of Plenty) desired to know if anything had been done for the acquisition of a rifle range at Gisborne, a matter that had been held up for a year.

The HON. MR. BUDDO (Kaiapoi) asked if anything had been done respecting a rifle range at North Rangiora.

THE HON. MR. ALLEN (Minister of Defence) replied that the matter of the acquisition of rifle ranges came under the Public Works Department, the present estimates relating only to the maintenance of existing rifle ranges. As to the Gisborne range, an attempt had been made to acquire it, unsuccessfully, and they were going to take it under the Public Works Act.

MR. DICKSON (Parnell) asked if other British officers would be brought out to take the place of those now returning to Europe. For instance, there was the position of the head of the artillery, recently held by Colonel Heard, whose time had expired. He submitted that the New Zealanders had now had sufficient training to enable them to take the place of some of the British officers, and he hoped they would be promoted in preference to bringing in other British officers.

MR. MACDONALD (Bay of Plenty) suggested that notice should be given to the Public Works Department to immediately act in the matter of acquiring land for the Gisborne Rifle Range, in order that the matter might be finally settled. Many capable and energetic men were desirous of assisting in the defence of the country, but they were feeling discouraged over the delay that had taken place regarding this range.

The HON. MR. ALLEN stated that the Public Works Department had already been instructed to give the necessary notice in connection with the land wanted for the Gisborne Rifle Range. As to rifle ranges generally, a great deal of activity had been displayed by the Government during the last twelve months in acquiring ranges in all parts of the country. With regard to replacing the officers who had come from England, wherever it was possible the Department was filling their places with New Zealanders; but he did not wish to lead the House to think that that course could be followed in all cases. Colonel Heard had gone home, and his place had been taken by Colonel Braithwaite; that officer was now going away with the Force to Europe, and his place would be filled by Lieut.-Colonel Gibbon from home. Colonel Robin, who was a New Zealand officer, would be placed in command when General Godley went away; and, if possible, every position that required to be filled would be filled by New Zealand officers. In order to make up the establishment, it was proposed to draw from the New Zealand officers in New Zealand to fill up the ranks of the Territorial officers, in order to keep the work going, as soon as the troops went away.

Mr. RUSSELL (Avon) asked who was to be in charge of the Defence Department as its permanent head when General Godley left for the front. He was only expressing a personal opinion, but he regretted that at a time like this General Godley was leaving New Zealand. His first duty as officer commanding was the defence of this country; and whilst it was a fine thing that Sir Alexander should lead the New Zealand Expeditionary Force, yet if a crisis were to take place, the people of this country would much prefer that General Godley should be here rather than at the other end of the world.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: Which is better for the Empire?

MR. RUSSELL said that in the end it might be much better that we should have the ablest and best commander possible here. He would also like to ask whether, in view of the present position, it was not wise to extend the scope of our training. A large number of men not in the Forces at present had been drilled, and great numbers of them would be only too happy to assist in local defence and undergo whatever training was necessary. Not very long ago the Prime Minister stated that

if the necessity arose we were prepared to send our last man and expend our last shilling, and that sentiment was echoed by all the people of the country, and it must be evident, if the country was to send away large numbers of its trained men, it might be desirable for our own protection to draw upon the older men in the community. There were tens of thousands of men like himself, who had been Volunteers in their younger days, who were prepared to do their best if the necessity arose. If the Prime Minister was prepared to extend his scheme of training, and was willing to accept volunteers from all parts of the Dominion, who were prepared to do their drill, then if the necessity arose, we could allow our younger men to go in still larger numbers to the defence of the Empire at the seat of war, and it would be a very fine scheme.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY said there were tens of thousands to-day doing their drill as members of rifle clubs and reservists.

MR. RUSSELL agreed that this was the case with the rifle clubs. He would ask if the Minister of Defence would arrange for the wholesale establishment throughout the country of miniature rifle ranges, where the settlers to whom he had referred might be able to practise with the Morris tube, and on the miniature rifle range, so that if the necessity arose we should have a large body of men who could take their part in the defence of the Dominion, and at the same time set free the younger men to go to the front in the service of the Empire. The patriotic feeling was so strong that any call upon the older men to take part in drill would be promptly and largely responded to, and this would ease the hands of the Government if they wished to send away further contingents of our young men. It seemed to him that the war was going to be a long one, and if that were the case Britain would be calling on her oversea possessions for more and more contingents, and we ought therefore to be prepared for that emergency and also for the defence of the Dominion.

MR. GLOVER (Auckland Central) said this was no mere boxing contest in which the Mother Country was engaged. The gloves were off, and it behoved New Zealand to give all the assistance it possibly could. He believed the Defence Minister would be found equal to the responsibility which this emergency imposed upon him.

The HON. MR. BUDDO (Kaiapoi) said, in reference to the Rangiora Rifle Range, that something required to be done in regard to its maintenance. There had been correspondence with the Government about it, and an answer had been received that there was no money available to put it in order. He thought this was bad policy. Most of the Territorials in that district belonged to the town, and it was necessary, if they were to be able to keep up their rifle practice, that there should be an available range near the town. It was not only the rifle club that was interested, but the matter affected also the Senior Cadets and the Territorials, and he hoped the Government would have the necessary work carried out on the range before the autumn manœuvres.

MR. HANAN (Invercargill) said, though it may be necessary to despatch other contingents, he hoped the Minister would not overlook the need for fostering our products and seeing that the food supply furnished by New Zealand was kept up. The question of the export of food-stuffs was not receiving sufficient attention. He hoped when considering the sending away of other contingents, the Minister would have in view the desirability of keeping our young men here to assist as far as possible the increase of our products and the furnishing of food-stuffs to Great Britain. This point had been stressed at home by the Prime Minister. A matter he would like to have some information on was in regard to fortification—as to what the views of the Minister were in regard to properly fortifying the ports of Otago and Southland. At present they were not guarded as some experts thought they should be. He did not know what was the policy. He understood it was not considered necessary, in the opinion of some experts, that these places should be fortified. Opinions upon the matter differed. He would like to know the Minister's opinion with regard to that question. Was it considered necessary to fortify only Auckland and Wellington? He understood that some of the big guns were being taken out of New Zealand. That was a matter in regard to which differences of opinion might exist. From the point of view of the defence of New Zealand, he was inclined to think that our big guns should remain here. As to the camps, it seemed to him that in future the country should not go in the direction of concentrating large numbers of volunteers or Territorials in a few camps, as had been done

recently. It seemed to him to be unreasonable to bring men all the way from the West Coast to Canterbury, or from Southland to Otago, and it caused great expense and inconvenience to the men. Much better work would be done if the men were not concentrated in a few camps.

The HON. MR. ALLEN (Minister of Defence) said he would reply first to the question as to the sending of another contingent. The member for Avon was desirous of sending away another contingent, and the member for Invercargill gave the House a warning note that the country ought to consider the productions of New Zealand in carrying on their industries. Both of these were absolute needs, and what the House had to do was to consider the work to be carried out in New Zealand, and what were the needs of the Empire—how far we could supply those needs and at the same time carry on the industries of the country so as to produce as much food-stuffs as possible. The Government had had both of these questions before them almost every day, and they were very carefully considering both the necessity of sending away further assistance to the Empire in its need, and also carefully considering the question of producing further food-stuffs. The Prime Minister had already asked the people of the country to plant more wheat; and he understood that a great deal more land was being cultivated for the growing of more wheat, and he hoped sufficient labour would be found to win that crop when it ripened. With regard to the sending away of a further contingent, the Government were prepared to fulfil their arrangement with the War Office, that arrangement being that they were to send away an Expeditionary Force of the size now mobilised and ready to send from our shores.

MR. HANAN: If required.

The HON. MR. ALLEN: 'If required.' And the Mother Country had said it was required—and very urgently indeed. The Government received a cablegram a few days ago, stating that more men were wanted, and he had no doubt the House would agree to that if they were asked to authorise it. In regard to the sending away of guns, he might state that it had been decided to send away additional 18-pounders, making twelve 18-pounders instead of six 18-pounders. That left New Zealand with—perhaps it would be better not to say how many, but it left New Zealand quite ample, in his opinion, and

in the opinion of the officer commanding, for all needs and requirements of New Zealand—and, in fact, more than ample. In addition to that, they had not only the 18-pounders left in New Zealand, but there was the howitzer battery as well; and there were also the 15-pounders, except the few that had been sent to Samoa. There was sufficient ammunition for all these arms. The country could well spare the battery in question. He thought that after this explanation the honourable member for Invercargill would be satisfied that the Government were not unmindful of the defence of the Dominion. He would now answer the question in respect to the fortifications in the four chief harbours. He believed that the fortifications and defence were ample for the requirements at the present time. Both Wellington and Auckland were well defended—so well defended that he would like to be in the battery in Auckland when either the *Scharnhorst* or *Gneisenau* came and attempted to enter. He would thoroughly enjoy the evening's sport, and so would the gunners. In Otago and Lyttelton the defences were not perhaps so strong as in Wellington or in Auckland; but they were ample for all their needs. The Otago Harbour was exceedingly difficult to enter—indeed, there was advice to say that the Otago Harbour was so difficult to enter that probably no hostile ship of war would ever venture to go there; and, further, there was an excellent body of men manning the defences there—some of the best in New Zealand. Then, with regard to the question asked by the honourable member for Avon, in respect to the General Officer Commanding, the time of this officer was not up in New Zealand till thirteen months from now, and although he was leaving for the front, he was under engagement to come back to New Zealand after the war was over, should it terminate before the expiry of his time—and he hoped that would be so. The honourable member wished to know whether we thought it right to allow Sir A. J. Godley to leave New Zealand at this juncture—whether we thought it right to send our most experienced officer away from the country in charge of this Expeditionary Force. His reply was that they would have been lacking in their duty to the Expeditionary Force itself, as well as to the Mother Country, if they did not send the best man they had available. It should be remembered that the lives of eight thousand men were in the hands of the General

Officer Commanding. It would have been a gross dereliction of duty on their part if through not sending their best a single life had been unnecessarily sacrificed. That was one reason; and yet there was almost a stronger reason—namely, that it was a duty they owed to the Mother Country in this time of trial to send the best they had of everything they had. The position of the Pacific was such that they could afford to send the best. The Dominion was absolutely secure and safe within its own shores. Might he say to honourable members, with respect to the General Officer Commanding, that he had experience of him now for two years or more as Minister of Defence, and he could only add to the general opinion of the House in saying how much they valued the services rendered by Sir A. J. Godley to this country. The Dominion's training scheme well justified itself, and the mobilisation to meet the present crisis more than justified it. He was only sorry the scheme was not in operation for ten years instead of four. The honourable member asked if he was going to replace General Godley, and the reply was that he was not leaving for thirteen months.

MR. RUSSELL: I mean during his absence at the front.

The HON. MR. ALLEN stated that a New Zealand officer would take General Godley's place while he was away. Colonel Robin would act as Quartermaster-General and also as General Officer Commanding, and he would have the assistance of an experienced Imperial officer, Lieut.-Colonel Gibbon, who would prove to be an extremely valuable officer. He could now say from his own experience that the office lately filled by Colonels Heard and Braithwaite would be well filled by Lieut.-Colonel Gibbon.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister) moved, 'That progress be reported.' He wished to intimate that His Excellency the Governor had received, through the Secretary of State for the Colonies, a message from His Majesty the King, which he desired to deliver in person to the members of Parliament and the people of New Zealand. He would ask honourable members to adjourn for a few minutes in order that His Excellency might deliver the message from the steps of Parliament Buildings.

Progress reported.

THE WAR: MESSAGE FROM THE KING

MR. SPEAKER left the chair for a few minutes while the Governor read the message in question from the steps of the Building, which message, and also the reply thereto of His Excellency the Governor, was subsequently, on the motion of the Prime Minister, ordered to be recorded in the Journals of the House. [The message from the King was as in *Overseas*, 1, pp. 3-5.] The following was the Governor's reply to the Secretary of State for the Colonies:—

'With reference to your telegram of the 8th September, would be glad if you would transmit the following message to His Majesty the King. Begins: "New Zealand desires me to thank Your Majesty for your gracious message, which I have personally communicated. The people of the Dominion consider it their privilege to be connected with everything which affects the welfare of the British Empire, and are proud to be associated with the United Kingdom and all the dependencies of the Crown in the present tremendous issue, which must be carried to a satisfactory conclusion whatever may be the cost. To this end the people of New Zealand are prepared to make any sacrifice that may be required of them. LIVERPOOL."'

THE WAR

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: Before going on with the other business, I would like to read to honourable members an official war telegram which by a coincidence has just come through, and I am quite sure honourable members will be pleased to hear it. It is official:—

'The general position continues satisfactory. The Allies have gained ground on their left along the line of Ourcq and Petit Morin. The British have here driven the enemy back ten miles. Fighting has been in progress further to the right along the line of Montmirail—Le Petit Sompuit, neither side gaining any advantage. Farther to the right the enemy have been pressed back in the direction of Reims. In the vicinity of Lunéville an attempt of the Germans to advance was repulsed. Pressure against the enemy continues all along the Allies' front. The British Force has been engaged all day. The enemy opposed to it, after a stubborn resistance, retired, and is now crossing to north Marne. The Fifth French Army advanced with equal success. There are reports of many captures. The Sixth French Army on Ourcq has been heavily engaged. Here also the enemy have been driven back. The Germans have suffered severely along the line of

advance; everywhere it was resolutely pushed home. The British again sustained severe casualties, but the number is small in relation to the nature of the fighting.'

I think, Mr. Speaker, I may say we put up with the adverse news which has been coming to us for the last few days very well indeed, and we are, of course, correspondingly delighted now that the tide has turned, and that good news is continually arriving.

SUPPLY

In Committee.—Class X.: Defence Department

Adjutant-General's Branch, £194,998.

The Hon. Mr. Allen (Minister of Defence) did not know whether the announcement made by His Excellency from the King would help them in dealing with the present difficulty, but he took it that the announcement meant that they were called upon to assist the Empire to their utmost, and no doubt they would do it. With regard to reinforcements for the Territorial Force, the arrangement made with the War Office was that they should be reinforced to keep them up to their full strength during the whole time of the war. That will mean the sending in four or six weeks' time of a number equal to twenty per cent. of the main body, and after that a monthly contingent equal to five per cent. That, he believed, the Government and Parliament were willing to send, and he thought they would have no difficulty in finding the men. The matter of another contingent was a matter for further consideration, and he did not that night propose to make any statement about it. Already steps had been taken to fill up the ranks of the Territorials owing to the Expeditionary Force. Immediately the first contingent went away the Fifth Regiment, which was the Wellington regiment, immediately took steps to make up its numbers. They had been recruited largely from the General Training Section, which had not yet entered into the scheme of Territorial training. The ranks of the Fifth Regiment had been pretty well filled up again out of the General Training Section and out of men who had served in the old Volunteer Force; especially had this been so respecting officers. The country owed a debt to old Volunteer officers who had come forward and again

joined the ranks, making up the Territorial Forces. He desired also to allude to the very patriotic offers coming from all over the country, and from all sorts of organisations throughout New Zealand. It was especially gratifying as these offers were so numerous and so spontaneous. The rifle clubs in many places, if not throughout New Zealand, were drilling under their own officers, and getting what assistance they could from the Staff; so that they were equipping themselves for the defence of the country if required. Then, the offers from the Legion of Frontiersmen were very numerous. As a matter of fact, they were so numerous that rifles could not be found for all, unless the weapons were taken from the Senior Cadets, and they did not want to do that. The Legion of Frontiersmen from all over New Zealand were offering, and were offering to find their own horses and equipment. While they were only too glad to receive these offers, they could only afford at the present time to send a certain number from New Zealand. Offers from the members of the National Reserve continued to come in in large numbers, and these men were also anxious to do what they could in the service of New Zealand and of the Empire. Heaps of letters from men offering their services were daily received, and it was suggested that these men should either join existing rifle clubs, or start new ones, and, so far as they could, the men were encouraged to equip themselves for home defence if necessary. It was under consideration whether they should not increase the age up to which men should be allowed to go away on active service. The present age-limit was from twenty to thirty-five, and it had been suggested that the age should be raised to forty or forty-five years; there were many Legion of Frontiersmen who were willing to go, and who would go away if the age were thus increased. He wished to say in regard to miniature rifle ranges, referred to by the honourable member for Avon, that many of them had been established all over New Zealand, and he did not know that more were required at the present time. If they were, they would be established. As to the rifle range at Rangiora, referred to by the honourable member for Kaiapoi, they were, so far as they possibly could, out of the parliamentary grant, repairing rifle ranges all over New Zealand. Last year no less than eighty rifle ranges had been repaired out of the Consolidated Fund. The Rangiora Rifle

Range would be repaired this year, he hoped, in time for the annual manœuvres.

MR. WILFORD (Hutt) said there was no doubt whatever that every New Zealander was loyal to the Empire, and was willing to make whatever sacrifices were necessary. It was one of the significant qualities of the New Zealander, and it was a common thing in the Empire, that the children of the parent State were unanimous in doing everything they could to assist the Mother Country when she required it. Whether the war was long or short, they must all be ready to understand that they were not in anything like as bad a position as they might be later on, and therefore it was the clear duty of the people to husband their resources for many months to come. They must realise that the possibility of a short settlement of the war had practically been wiped away by the new agreement [1] that had been entered into by the Allies. He just wished to say also to the Minister to be very careful to see that the New Zealand Expeditionary Force, when it left the shores of this country, was properly convoyed, and stated that he could not give any credence to the report that the first Force had only boats of the *Psyche* class for their convoy. He did not believe that statement, though it was so reported in the newspapers.

[1] [See *Diplomatic*, 2, pp. 506-7.]

MR. FORBES (Hurunui) asked if the Government intended to take into consideration the matter of encouraging the breeding of remounts for war purposes. Of late years the horse-breeding industry had been going down gradually, and the ideal horse was few in numbers as compared with the numbers of some years ago. It seemed to him that as far as modern warfare was concerned, the horse would enter as largely into it as into the warfare at any time during the past.

MR. COATES (Kaipara) agreed with the honourable member for Hurunui. The Government should notice what a dearth of horses there was in New Zealand. He went through the camp at Auckland—certainly before the horses had been selected—and was surprised to see the poor class of horse—not the type that was required. There were some mares going away that ought not to be allowed to go away, and should be detained by the Government, because they were the type that was required for breeding. The Boer War taught this

country a lesson, and they had never overtaken the loss sustained by sending many of the best mares.

MR. COLVIN (Buller) asked if the Government had under consideration the protection of the coal-ports of Westport and Greymouth. It was possible for an enemy to shell Denniston from a distance of six miles at sea. He understood that military officers considered that Westport could be protected by quick-firing guns placed on trucks on Cape Foulwind Railway, about Carter's Junction. That, at any rate, would give some security to the people. He endorsed what had been said by the member for Hurunui and the member for Kaipara as to the poor quality of some of the horses that had gone from the Dominion with the troopers. The Government should encourage the farmers to breed a better class of horses.

SIR W. C. BUCHANAN (Wairarapa) considered there was one point of the highest importance in regard to the urgent need of good horses, and that was the rejection by the officers of the Defence Department of some of the available horses simply because they happened to be somewhat over ten or twelve years of age. He did not think there were many men in New Zealand who had had much more experience in the use of horses than he himself had, and he asserted without hesitation that a good many had been rejected on that score that ought not to have been rejected. He had made representations on this point to the Minister, and had also interviewed the Chief Veterinarian, apparently without result. Competent judges who had seen a great many of the horses had all agreed with what he had stated to the Minister on this point, and he therefore hoped when further horses were required the point he had mentioned would be given effect to, because it would be a great misfortune if we sent away horses that were not of the very best we could furnish.

MR. MYERS (Auckland East) had recently visited the camp in Auckland, and, apropos of the question of remounts for the Expeditionary Force, he would like to heartily congratulate the officer who was responsible for the selection of the horses. After inspecting them, he had no hesitation in saying they were a very fine lot indeed, and reflected the highest credit on the officer in charge of this part of the equipment. He felt sure these horses would do yeoman service for the corps that was to use them on the other side of the world.

MR. BUICK (Palmerston) claimed to have some slight knowledge of the horse; and, having been through the camp at Awapuni, and having seen the horses there, he could say that a finer class of horse he had never examined, and the country might be proud of them. If an old horse, even up to twelve or fifteen years of age, was well trained, he would stand a great deal of knocking about. It was a mistake to send away mares that were capable of breeding the kind of horses that this country wanted. Geldings could best be spared.

The HON. MR. ALLEN said, in regard to the question of the convoy, that matter was not in the hands of the military authorities, but was a question for the Admiralty. No troops had left or would leave New Zealand except on the Admiralty's assurance that the convoy was sufficient. Evidence showed that the first contingent was sufficiently convoyed. In regard to the question of remounts, in the early stages a good many gift horses were not up to the required standard, but these had been weeded out and sold. The officer commanding reported that now they were a serviceable lot, and many were better than they looked. The General informed him that all the horses were fairly good. He had been astonished to find so little difficulty in securing the artillery and draught horses. It might be necessary in the future for the Government to consider whether it might not be well to encourage the breeding of horses for artillery and mounted-rifle purposes. In regard to Westport, the Government had taken the advice of the Overseas Defence Committee, and had carried out their instructions. They thought the present provision for the defence of Westport was sufficient.

MR. COLVIN (Buller) said that in some quarters it was considered that it would be better if the quick-firing guns were put on the rails on the South Spit, and that a branch line of railway should run to the terraces from Cape Foulwind Railway. That would cost very little. He would like to know the opinion of the Minister in regard to the guns there.

The HON. MR. ALLEN said that the guns at Westport were most suitable for the purpose, and they were mobile. He could assure the honourable member that not only had the Overseas Defence Committee advised that Westport was amply defended, but his own advisers were also of that opinion.

MR. COLVIN said it was the opinion of many persons, military and others, that the guns should be placed in the position he had referred to. It would cost only some £250 to £350 to construct the branch line of railway he had referred to.

The HON. MR. ALLEN replied that an officer had been sent down especially to report upon the defence of Westport—within the last month.

MR. G. M. THOMSON (Dunedin North) said he desired to draw attention to the provision being made on the troopships for the sleeping accommodation of the troops. He thought that the question of fresh air would become a serious problem, as the 'tween decks was filled with close bunks, which it would be difficult to ventilate. Had proper medical advice been taken on the question? He doubted if exercise on the deck would compensate for the poor ventilation below.

The HON. MR. ALLEN replied that that question had been fully considered, and there was no doubt that no troopships had ever gone out from any part of the British dominions so well provided for as the troopships now leaving.

MR. MACDONALD (Bay of Plenty) was glad to hear the Minister was inquiring into the advisability of raising the age when selecting men for the front. Some of the best men in the Dominion were anxious to go, and they were barred by the present age-limit. When such men could be obtained it was inadvisable to select so many men under the age of twenty years. He knew of a case where a man sent his two sons, and although he was nearly fifty, he was anxious to go himself; but he was, of course, barred by the age-limit. This went to show the universal patriotism throughout the country. In regard to horse-breeding, sufficient attention had not been given to this subject during the last ten years, and there was marked deterioration, although many of the horses were of excellent quality. There was no country in the world more suitable for horse-breeding than New Zealand. The country was in need of more high-class stud horses suitable for breeding remounts and horses for military purposes. A veterinarian or other expert should be appointed to select mares of the right class. A good sound horse eight or nine years old would in many cases be better than a young horse. The horses now going away were a very good lot indeed, but

another thousand or fifteen hundred would be difficult to obtain. He suggested that some reasonable assistance should be given to encourage the breeding of reliable troop and artillery horses, and that instructions should be issued to farmers as to the exact class required.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister) mentioned that he had only had the opportunity of seeing the Addington Camp and the horses there. He had also heard some of the adverse criticism levelled against the class of horses being purchased; but he would remind honourable members that this was the 'off' season of the year for horses, which were now looking their worst. After they had been handled for a few weeks, however, they would be very different animals. He had bred horses all the time he had been engaged in farming, and in his opinion those he saw at the Canterbury Camp were a particularly good class, and suitable for the purpose they had been purchased for. He had not had the opportunity of seeing the other camps, but believed his remarks would apply to the horses selected there. He had expected that the Government would have had a great deal more difficulty in securing the horses they wanted, and he agreed that they had to look ahead in this respect, and do more than hitherto in respect to breeding horses for remounts and artillery purposes. There was not the number of suitable horses in the country there was before the Boer War; and they might have to institute the system adopted in Britain, where by means of what was called 'King's Plates' the breeding of stud horses suitable for remounts and artillery was subsidised by the State. There was no country in the world more suitable for the breeding of horses than New Zealand, as had been proved by the performances of the horses raised in the past. A suggestion had been made that the profits from the totalisator might be applied to the purpose, and it was a good one. It might have to be considered in the near future. The Empire would come through the present trouble in time, but it would not be the last of the kind they would be engaged in. So they had to look ahead; and the nation that was ready would be the one that would most likely be victorious. With regard to the age of horses, a very serious mistake was sometimes made. Some people got the idea that a three-year-old was just the horse that was wanted to stand work. It was absolute non-

sense. For hard work he would sooner have a twelve-year-old, even though it was a screw, than a three-year-old. That fact they had to recognise. In his opinion, it would be a huge mistake to take three-year-olds for the war. On the trip home it must be expected that a proportion of the horses would be lost, and it would be found that it would be the younger horses that would go. It was the same with the men. Any country might be proud of the class of men who were going to Europe from New Zealand, but he would like to see the age increased. He would like to see more seasoned men going than were going at the present time; and when more were sent to keep up the strength of the Expeditionary Force, they ought to be careful to see that more seasoned men were selected than was the case with the men of the first contingent and with the other Force which would go in a few days. He was not speaking in any disparagement of the men; he was proud that such a class of men could be produced in New Zealand; but it would be, in his opinion, an advantage if there were a larger proportion of seasoned men in the Force than they had at present.

MR. WITTY (Riccarton) said that the age of many of the men in the first Expeditionary Force was too young, and it was with pleasure he heard that the age was likely to be extended. At Christchurch a number of the horses that first went into the lines were not fit, but they had been weeded out. The fault did not lie in the selection; horses had been presented which were found to be not suitable. He was sure every one would be pleased that there was a prospect of General Godley coming back to New Zealand. He was the right man in the right place; through his tact and good nature he had done a great deal to break down the prejudice against military training. He would like to see £3000 or £4000 voted for rifle-shooting prizes. Last year £1000 was voted, and £488 spent. Then this year the grant for shooting prizes for Territorials only had been dropped out altogether. Last year £800 was voted for the purpose, and only £174 expended. He suggested that all that was possible should be done to encourage our men to make themselves efficient in shooting. Complaint was made by the cadets in his district that very often they attended drill and found no officer in attendance. This was disappointing to the lads; besides

which the officer should attend if only for the sake of example. He had forwarded one or two letters to the Minister of Defence, with regard to the desirability of holding Territorial drills in the evening, but had received no answer. It was annoying and disappointing to men to be taken away from their work, and find that, after the loss of their time, there was no drill. Again, he would like to know what was being done towards tree-planting for the proper sheltering of the camping-place at the Waimakariri River bed. Then, with regard to the supply of rations and forage, he thought that tenders ought always to be invited when the quantity required exceeded £5 in value. That would give every one a chance to compete; besides which the Department would obtain its supplies more cheaply than under present conditions.

The HON. MR. BUDDO (Kaiapoi) was pleased to note that the Prime Minister had expressed pleasure at the serviceable quality of the horses provided for the Expeditionary Force. They could not, however, ignore the prospect that the next contingent would not be so well mounted, because it would be necessary to take older horses and less suitable mounts. He thought it would be a good thing to revise the Gaming Act, and give totalisator permits only to those clubs that cut out all the short-distance races, such as half-mile flutters and races of such distances that required little but speed to win; and he would be glad to see more permits given to the hunt clubs and those other clubs which recognised the importance of a serviceable horse. He heartily approved of sending more men to the front; but, in his opinion, the age-limit should be raised a little. They all knew that Lord Roberts had borne testimony to the fact that the very young man could not keep up with the older men on the march to Kabul from Kandahar.

MR. HARRIS (Waitemata) said he had received many complaints of the laxity of the Defence Department in the payment of accounts for hire of halls, rooms, and so on. When accounts were sent in, it seemed that they were absolutely ignored for periods of from six to twelve months. He hoped instructions would be issued that accounts be paid when due. His remarks applied particularly to the Auckland District.

MR. MCCALLUM (Wairau) wished again to congratulate General Godley on the excellent manner in which he had continued the management of his branch of the Defence Depart-

ment, and particularly of the Territorial system which he had inaugurated. He had proved himself the right man in the right place, and he, amongst others, would deeply regret to think he was not to return to the Dominion. It was a matter for regret that camps had in the past been held in the winter. Much of the illness and inconvenience that arose could be prevented by holding the camps at a more favourable season of the year. This he hoped would be taken into consideration by the General, and that, if possible, camps would be held earlier. Provision, he thought, should be made for the widows and families of deceased officers. One officer who had done good work—Sergeant-Major Reid—had been stricken down while doing his duty, and, he believed, because of his constant application to the discharge of his duties. This officer's widow and children had now a very small pittance, and he would be pleased if the Minister could see his way to put something on the estimates for the widow and children of this very worthy officer. Reference had been made to the youthfulness of the men who were going to the front, and he thought that the age of those who were to serve at the front should be raised. In his opinion, the minimum age should be twenty-three or twenty-four years.

MR. MYERS (Auckland East) asked whether, having regard to the fact that General Sir Ian Hamilton, Inspector-General of the Overseas Forces, had recommended that the training of the troops and the administrative and financial departments of our defence scheme should be separated, the Minister had any intention of carrying out that suggestion. There could be little doubt that this would be in the interest of the officers, who should be relieved in some instances of the financial responsibility now resting upon them. It would make for the increased efficiency of the Force if this recommendation were given effect to.

MR. ATMORE (Nelson) said he believed a separation allowance was made to the wives of officers who left on active service, and he would like to know whether the same provision was made in the case of sergeant-majors' wives. If it was necessary in one case, it seemed to him that it must be necessary in the other.

The HON. MR. ALLEN, in reply to the honourable member for Riccarton, said that the votes here with regard to rifle

shooting were in addition to the ordinary musketry training, which was in another vote. They had on the estimates £700 more than had been expended last year on rifle shooting. This was for the rifle clubs and rifle shooting, the Territorial musketry training being in another vote. In regard to certain drills taking place, and no officers turning up for them, while that had been true in the early days of the training, he did not think it was taking place now. He wished to say, however, that if any specific cases of this kind were sent to him, he should be very glad to inquire into them. The camping-ground in Canterbury was being planted. Tenders had been called for rations. He did not know whether public tenders had been advertised in all cases, but prices had been asked for. He wanted to give the Defence authorities the very highest credit for the way in which the camps had been conducted, and for the decreased expenditure. He wished to say that if the camps in connection with the inspection of Sir Ian Hamilton had been conducted under the old plan of the Volunteer system, when the men were allowed 2s. per diem per head for rations, and 1s. 6d. per diem for forage, the camps would have cost the Dominion £7694 more than they actually did for rations, forage, and fuel. They had saved that upon the old system. He had a summary showing the decreased cost for rations and forage since last year, and that was very largely due to the organisation of the Army Service Corps and the very great care that had been exercised in regard to the camps. The average cost of rations for the year 1913 had been 1s. 6⅛d. per head, and of forage 1s. 2d. per head. That had been reduced this year to 1s. 4.3d. for rations, and 10.3d. for forage per head. The cost of these camps had been under the estimate by over £18,000. He thought they had done extremely well in regard to these camps. There were some instances of the dilatory paying of accounts. The honourable member for Waitemata had alluded to one. That account had been brought before him over and over again. But the Department was not altogether to blame; they could not get an answer from the secretary of the hall to certain questions put to him, and until they could get a satisfactory answer they were not able to deal with the account. With regard to the widows of deceased soldiers, if they were on service, they were provided for by the Act of 1909, and if they were not on service,

they were provided for by the Superannuation Act. He admitted, with the honourable gentleman, that the provision made for widows both in the Public Service and in the Education service was not as high as it ought to be. Of course, these things became heavy charges on the Dominion, and if the allowance to widows was to be increased, the expenditure would be very considerable. However, the matter would be taken into consideration when the question of superannuations was before the Cabinet. With regard to General Sir Ian Hamilton's report, as far as the reorganisation of the administrative department was concerned, the proposed scheme was already in existence, and when fully officered with trained men, there would be even more saving than had already been effected.

September 16, 1914.

HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

THE WAR: MAORI CONTINGENT

New Zealand Hansard.

MR. COATES (Kaipara) said he had received a letter from a Native friend of his, asking whether the Government intended to make use of any Native volunteers for expeditionary purposes. The writer represented about sixty members of a squadron of which he (Mr. Coates) at one time had command. He would like to know whether the Minister was prepared to make a statement as to whether their services would be accepted. Personally, he hoped their services would be availed of.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister), in reply, stated that the matter had been before the Government for some few days. They had communicated, through His Excellency the Governor, with the Imperial Government, offering the services of a number of Natives for service at the front or elsewhere, as the authorities might determine. The reply received was to the effect that the Imperial Government was willing to accept the services of two hundred Natives for service in Egypt. That, however, was followed by another suggestion from the New Zealand Government to the Imperial Government, which he could not refer to at the present moment. The arrangements were now in the hands of the Minister of

Defence, and he had no doubt but that presently the Natives would be asked for volunteers for the purpose of the required contingent for Egypt.

The HON. MR. NGATA (Eastern Maori District) said he wished to ask a further question in reference to the matter brought up by the honourable member for Kaipara. He wanted to ask the Prime Minister whether the Government would take any step to allot a quota of the Native force to be despatched to Egypt to each of the Maori districts, so as to make the force as representative a one as possible. He had mentioned the matter to one or two Native representatives in the House, and he thought it was the general desire that the force should be a representative one.

The RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY (Prime Minister) said this matter had been under the consideration of the Government, and they intended to make the force as representative as possible. The position at the present time was that the matter had been referred to a sub-committee of Cabinet, consisting of the Minister of Defence and the Hon. Dr. Pomare, as representing the Native race. He was anxious that the force should go, and that it should be as representative as possible, because he was quite certain it would lead to much bigger things in the perhaps not distant future. He was equally confident that the natives would do us credit wherever the Imperial Government chose to send them. He had already intimated that he had made another suggestion to the Imperial Government, about which he might have something to say within the next few days.

SUMMER CLOTHING FOR SAMOAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

MR. ESCOTT (Pahiatua) asked the Minister of Defence if any provision had been made to provide the Expeditionary Force who remained at Samoa with summer clothing. As honourable members knew, the climate of Samoa was warm and dry, and even if the provision was made to supply summer clothing, the troops would find it very trying, so it would be very unwise to keep them clothed in winter khaki.

The HON. MR. ALLEN (Minister of Defence) said: Yes, provision had been made, and the clothes would go away by boat this week.

September 17, 1914.

THE WAR: EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

New Zealand Hansard.

THE RIGHT HON. MR. MASSEY: . . . The Government have found it necessary, acting along with the Australian Government, to ask the newspapers of this country to refrain from reporting anything with regard to the proposed movement of the Expeditionary Force, or matters connected therewith. Honourable members will understand that I cannot possibly go into details regarding this question; it is not possible to do so; and I do not think I should be asked to do so. What I am doing now is this—I have reason to believe that the editors of newspapers will loyally comply with the request that is made by the Government, and which is supported by the naval authorities and the General Officer Commanding the Expeditionary Force—I want to ask members of the House to also comply with the request I have made to newspapers just in the same way as has been made to them; and I believe it will be respected by them. I know that honourable members will not ask me to go further than that. If there were no reason for making the request, it would not have been made by the Australian Government any more than now it is being made here by the New Zealand Government.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition): I want to treat upon one or two points referred to by the right honourable gentleman. I agree with him as to not only the expediency, but the necessity for regarding everything in connection with the movements of the Expeditionary Force as quite confidential. I think that will be accepted generally by people all over the country, and that the Press will cheerfully conform with the request made by the Prime Minister. . . .

September 23, 1914.

ADJOURNMENT: DEPARTURE OF EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

ibid.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD (Leader of the Opposition) said there was a rumour current in the lobbies that it was proposed at the close of to-day's business to adjourn until Tuesday next, and he thought if that course was contemplated, members were entitled to know of it. He wished to ask the acting Leader of the House if that was intended.

The HON. MR. ALLEN (Minister of Defence) said: Yes. As the right honourable gentleman knew, to-morrow afternoon there was to be an official send-off to the Wellington contingent of the Expeditionary Force at Newtown Park at half-past two o'clock. That did not mean that the troops were going to sail to-morrow or the next day, and it would be obviously wrong for him to say when they were going to sail, in view of the fact that they did not want the date of sailing to be known until the troops had departed. He did not think it was desirable in the circumstances that the House should sit on Friday, and therefore it was proposed to adjourn from this evening until half-past two o'clock on Tuesday.

The RIGHT HON. SIR J. G. WARD asked if there was any reason why the House should not meet on Friday.

The HON. MR. ALLEN thought it would be better for the right honourable gentleman not to press for the reason.

September 30, 1914.

LEGISLATIVE COUNCIL

LORD ROBERTS

The HON. MR. BELL (Minister of Internal Affairs): I desire to move, without notice, a motion relating to Lord Roberts, who is Colonel-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces from the Dominion, and whose birthday, I am informed by the Hon. Colonel Baillie, is to-day. I propose, with the leave of the Council, to move, 'That the Legislative Council of New Zealand, on the occasion of the eighty-second anniversary of the birth of Earl Roberts, Colonel-in-Chief of the Forces of His Majesty's Possessions beyond the Seas, desires to recognise the splendid service which His Lordship has rendered to the Empire in the past, and to express its hope that he may be spared for many years to come to command the New Zealand soldiers, who are proud to have the privilege of serving under him.' My honourable friend asks me to say a word or two in moving it. I have tried to express in the motion I have proposed to the Council what I felt was the sentiment of my fellow-members here. I did not intend to add a word to the motion, but I may be allowed to say that the recent experience of the Empire has shown how wise has

New Zealand Hansard.

been the advice Lord Roberts offered recently to us all, and I am sure that is more in our minds to-day than even the memory of the great services which began when he was a subaltern at Delhi, where he won the Victoria Cross, and ended in the active command of our Forces in South Africa. We cannot but all of us know in our own inmost minds—all Englishmen—how right he had proved himself to be, and how valued his services in the command with which we are all honoured will be.

The HON. COLONEL BAILLIE: I rise to second the resolution of my honourable friend. He has expressed in a very few words the honour which we feel in the passing of this resolution. Lord Roberts' name has been a household word with the Army and the nation for more than half a century—ever since 1857, at all events, when Delhi was besieged, and he took a part in that siege. His first appearance, I think, was as aide-de-camp to his father, Sir Abraham Roberts, under whom I served in the Punjab in 1850 and 1851. I was Adjutant of my regiment, the 24th, and his father inspected that regiment. I do not think Lord Roberts was with his father on that occasion, although he was his aide-de-camp about that time, because in 1851 Lord Roberts was a young man of about nineteen. He entered the service as a subaltern in the Bengal Artillery, having been educated at Addiscombe, which was at that time the military school and depot of the East India Company's service. He has been constantly before us for many years, especially in the South African campaign, where many of our officers served under him—Colonel Chaytor, Colonel Newall, and many other gentlemen who distinguished themselves in the contingents that went from this Dominion. Lord Roberts foreshadowed all that has taken place since the 1st August. He reminded the British public that we should be prepared. He said from time to time, 'You do not know when an emergency will come, when you will want a second line of defence.' Of course, the first line of defence is the Navy, and the second the Imperial Army; but there are the Territorials. He pointed out in connection with the training of these that three months was not sufficient to make a soldier. It took three years in my day to make a soldier, and then he had much to learn. At the present day, when the art of war is so fully studied, and we have long-range

guns and rifles, it is almost impossible to approach within a couple of thousand yards of the enemy without being killed, whereas in my day at a thousand yards you would advance on the enemy with the bayonet and settle the question at once. The reports of General Godley and Sir Ian Hamilton regarding our men are very satisfactory, but unless they are well trained in the use of the bayonet, and above all in the use of the rifle, and are expert shots, they are only a drag upon the hands of the General in command: when he wants them they are not efficient. I was out at Trentham this year at the shooting, and saw some of my old comrades who had been present with me at almost every camping-ground in New Zealand for shooting, and Colonel Collins lamented the very small number of Territorials who were present. I do not know that I need say more. Lord Roberts is, I believe, in very good health. I had a message from him the other day by a gentleman who had seen him, and in the newspapers of, I think, the 7th August, he was reported as being present with Mr. Asquith, Lord Kitchener, Lord Haldane, and General French. It shows what faith the Government have in his advice when he brings his counsel to their assistance. I beg to second the resolution.

Motion agreed to.

OTHER SPEECHES, STATEMENTS, AND PUBLIC NOTICES

July 28, 1914.

PRIME MINISTER AT THE AGRICULTURAL CONFERENCE

Wellington.

New Zealand Herald, July 29, 1914.

Passing reference to the situation in the Near East was made by the Prime Minister in the opening Agricultural Conference to-day. After referring in general terms to the bright prospects ahead of New Zealand, Mr. Massey said that as far as he was able to judge, there was only one trouble, and it might prove to be a very serious one. He referred to the war cloud that threatened in the Northern hemisphere.

When the war started, there was no telling where it would stop. If the great Empire to which we belonged happened to become involved, he was quite sure the different parts of the Empire would stand together as they had done in past years.

July 30, 1914.

CROATIAN RESERVISTS AT NEW PLYMOUTH

New Zealand Herald. July 31, 1914.

A meeting of Croatians this afternoon passed a resolution condemning the action of the Austrian Consul in summoning Croatian reservists to be ready to defend Austria. They claim that they are not Austrian subjects by free will, but at the point of the bayonet, and declare they are now subject to the Union Jack, under which they can get justice and freedom.

August 3, 1914.

MAORIS' OFFER OF SERVICES

New Zealand Herald. August 4, 1914.

The following telegram was received by the Prime Minister this evening from leading members of the Arawa tribe at Rotorua: 'We of the Arawas, as our forefathers before us,

offer our services to our King and Country in whatever cause and whenever you see fit to call us. Our fervent prayer is, God save the King.'

August 4, 1914.

SPEECH OF PRIME MINISTER AT WELLINGTON

New Zealand Herald, August 5, 1914.

There were patriotic demonstrations in the streets to-night. Crowds gathered about the newspaper offices, where the latest bulletins were displayed and cheered loudly. They sang 'Rule Britannia,' the National Anthem, and other patriotic songs.

Mr. Massey made a short speech, which was freely interspersed with ringing cheers. After thanking the young men for coming to Parliament House, Mr. Massey reminded them that this was not a time for talking, but for acting. (A Voice: 'We 're there.') 'Yes, I know, and New Zealand will be there.' He went on to say that so far there had been no official statement that there had been a declaration of war, or that a state of war existed as between Britain and Germany. 'I need only say, however,' he continued, 'that I do not think that you will have long to wait before there is a declaration of war. I am only expressing my personal opinion. I am not speaking officially.' Continuing, Mr. Massey said: 'If war is declared, I have no doubt as to the result. I do not want to indulge in jingoism, but I have absolute confidence in the Empire to which we belong. So far as New Zealand is concerned, it may be my duty, as head of the Government, within the next few days, to ask New Zealanders to do their duty, not only in protecting our own Dominion, but also in protecting the Empire as a whole. I am sure that if New Zealanders are asked to go to assist the Empire, they will go, and that they will not ask any questions. When it is all over, I am certain that the Union Jack will still be on top.'

The spokesman of the deputation then thanked Mr. Massey for his speech, and said that, as this was a non-political matter and a national affair, they would respectfully beg that the Leader of the Opposition should address them also.

Mr. Massey, after making an inquiry, and ascertaining that Sir Joseph Ward was not in the building, said: 'I am sorry that Sir Joseph Ward is not here, but that is not his fault. You must take the will for the deed. So far as the present

crisis is concerned, there is no party. We are all Imperialists. We are one. Sir Joseph Ward, I may tell you, is standing shoulder to shoulder with the Government in the present crisis, in the interests of the Empire.'

Loud cheers were given for Sir Joseph Ward, followed by the singing of 'Rule Britannia.'

Having heard Mr. Massey, the crowd went along to Sir Joseph Ward's hotel, and cheered and shouted and sang until he appeared on a balcony. Sir Joseph delivered a brief patriotic speech, to the accompaniment of cheers. When he bade them good-night, they cheered again and again, and sang 'God save the King,' afterwards moving off to the tune of patriotic songs.

August 5, 1914.

ANNOUNCEMENT OF WAR

New Zealand Herald, August 6, 1914.

'War has broken out with Germany,' was the text of a cablegram from Mr. Lewis Harcourt, Secretary of State for the Colonies, which was read by His Excellency the Governor, the Earl of Liverpool, to a large crowd assembled at Parliament House this afternoon. His Excellency was attended by the Prime Minister and the members of his Cabinet. Prior to the reading of the announcement of the war, His Excellency stated that he had received the following message from His Majesty the King:—

'I desire to express to my people of the Oversea Dominions with what appreciation and pride I have received the messages from their respective Governments during the last few days. These spontaneous assurances of their support recall to me the generous sacrifice and help given by them in the past to the Mother Country. I shall be strengthened in the discharge of the great responsibilities which rest upon me by the confident belief that in this time of trial my Empire will stand united, calm, resolute, trusting in God.

'(Signed) GEORGE R.I.'

To this His Excellency stated he had sent the following reply: 'New Zealand desires me to acknowledge your Majesty's gracious message, and to say that, come good or ill, she, in company with the Dominions and other dependencies of the

Crown, is prepared to make any sacrifice to maintain her heritage and her birthright.

'(Signed) LIVERPOOL, *Governor*.'

SPEECHES OF PRIME MINISTER AND LEADER OF OPPOSITION AT PARLIAMENT HOUSE

New Zealand Herald, August 6, 1914.

The crowd was addressed by the Prime Minister, the RIGHT HON. W. F. MASSEY, who said: 'After the very startling announcement which has been made by His Excellency, I trust that we are all of the one way of thinking, that the British people and the Empire are to-day face to face with the most serious crisis ever experienced in the history of the Empire. We are confident, however, that we shall come through successfully. We must take notice of the very earnest advice contained in the last announcement of the message from His Majesty the King. We must stand together, calm, united, resolute, trusting in God; and I am glad to say that not only in New Zealand does this feeling of confidence exist, but it obtains throughout every part of the Empire. The whole British people are able to-day to present a united front to our enemies.'

'We have done our duty on every occasion in the past when the Empire required assistance, and we will do our duty on the present occasion in a whole-hearted manner. That we will be called upon to make sacrifices goes without saying, but I am confident that those sacrifices will be made, individually and collectively, willingly and in a manner in accord with the highest traditions of our race and the Empire to which we belong. We must do everything possible to protect our country, and at the same time to assist the Empire. We have done all that mortal man can do, the rest must be left to the Higher Power, "Him who watches over Israel and slumbers not nor sleeps." My advice at this most trying moment is to keep cool, stand fast, do your duty to New Zealand and the Empire.'

'We will do that,' replied many voices in the crowd.

'I am sure you will,' answered the Prime Minister earnestly.

SIR JOSEPH WARD: 'I want to say I believe firmly that out of evil good will arise. Every one recognises the horrors of war, but the time arrives in the affairs of nations, as of

individuals, when they must fight in defence of their honour and for their existence, when the blessings of peace have to be foregone, and all grief that sacrifice of human life entails has to be borne with fortitude and resignation. The loss of treasure will be stupendous, but that is a secondary consideration. The British Empire is entering upon the greatest crisis in her history. Her rulers have done nothing to provoke or precipitate the war; on the contrary, they have done all that is humanly possible to avert it. It was impossible, in my opinion, for Great Britain to stand aside and to let powerful friendly nations go on without her taking part. To have done so would have been an act of cowardice, a thing unknown to Britishers. People in all parts of the Empire, at this grave juncture, will stand united, with undoubted courage and inflexible determination. They will leave nothing undone to defeat the enemy, which I earnestly pray, under the guidance of Divine Providence may soon be brought about, and that the outcome of the unprecedented struggle may ensure lasting peace throughout centuries to come.'

'My motto is "For King and Country," and it will be fervently breathed by loyal people of this Dominion, as it will be throughout our widely scattered Empire. May God bless and protect the British forces on land and sea, and make them victorious, is my earnest prayer.'

SPEECHES OF MAYOR OF AUCKLAND

New Zealand Herald, August 6, 1914.

'The bolt has fallen,' remarked the Mayor of Auckland yesterday, when the news of Great Britain's declaration was announced. 'There must be no panic, because there is no necessity for alarm. In my humble view it is a good thing that the war has come. The German menace has been almost a nightmare to the British people, and this is the most favourable opportunity that our nation could have found to smash the German Fleet, and ensure Britannic peace for the next quarter of a century.

'That we are all going to suffer loss is evident. We must make up our minds to that. On the other hand, if Britain comes out victorious, as we all pray that she may, the result will be such a tremendous increase of business and trade for producing countries like New Zealand that we shall soon

recoup our losses. For the present we must be content to lose some of our capital. . . .

'We must all make some sacrifice, but there is the satisfaction of knowing that if Great Britain comes out on top, there will be ample work and employment for everybody.'

August 6, 1914.

There was an enthusiastic scene at the meeting of the City Council last evening, culminating in the singing of the National Anthem and 'Rule Britannia,' and enthusiastic cheering for the King. *New Zealand Herald,* August 7, 1914.

When the Council assembled, the Mayor, Mr. C. J. Parr, C.M.G., made reference to the European crisis. 'Since the Council met a fortnight ago,' said the Mayor, 'the greatest war known to the world has broken out. Little we thought two weeks ago that the whole civilised world would be plunged into the most fearful struggle known to man, and that the British Empire would be drawn into the struggle. One satisfactory feature is that every part of the Empire stands absolutely solid.

'Our nation has a great history,' continued the Mayor. 'We have inherited great traditions from the lives and examples of the Empire's great men. We all pray that we may live up to those traditions of the past, that we still will not be craven-hearted, but will do our duty faithfully and steadfastly, as did Nelson one hundred years ago, and also men before him. If we go into the struggle in that spirit, there will only be one result, and that will be to establish our Empire for the next fifty years in permanent peace. I feel it will come well from us, as representing the City of Auckland, to express our feelings and those of the citizens in regard to the present crisis.'

The Mayor then moved the following resolution: 'The City Council of Auckland begs leave to give an assurance to His Excellency the Governor and the Government of the earnest loyalty to the Crown and Empire of the citizens of Auckland, who are resolved to aid our Government in every possible manner in the great world crisis that has arisen.'

Mr. John Court, Deputy-Mayor, in seconding the motion, said it behoved the city to offer its earnest support, not only

to the Government, but also to the whole of the British Empire.

The motion was carried amidst applause.

The Mayor then called upon those present to sing the National Anthem. The Anthem was sung with great enthusiasm. Then followed the stirring strains of 'Rule Britannia,' and enthusiastic cheers were given for the King.

September 18, 1914.

CONFERENCE OF MAORIS

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 19, 1914.

A representative conference of the Ngatiwhatua, Te Uriohau, Terarowa, Aupouri, and Ngapuhi tribes was held in Auckland in connection with raising money for the patriotic funds and other phases of the European crisis.

It was decided to make an immediate canvass amongst the members of the respective tribes for the purpose of augmenting the patriotic funds, and that all money collected should be forwarded through the committee in charge of the Tiriti-o-Waitangi executive to the proper quarter.

It was also resolved that a petition be prepared for presentation to the Minister of Defence, the Hon. James Allen, placing their views before him in connection with military matters, and asking that they be placed on an equal footing with their pakeha brethren. The Natives are prepared and anxious to receive instruction to enable them to qualify themselves for service at home or abroad. This petition is now in course of preparation, and will be forwarded to the Minister at an early date.

DESPATCH OF NEW ZEALAND EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

July 31, 1914.

STATEMENT OF COMMANDANT OF THE FORCES

The Commandant of the Forces, General Sir Alexander Godley, issued a statement to-night to the effect that there is no present intention to call for volunteers for a possible expeditionary force, but in the event of these being required later, it is understood that volunteers will be taken only from those now serving in the territorial force and its reserves. *New Zealand Herald,* August 1, 1914.

All applications from volunteers would be dealt with locally, and would have to be made by those wishing to volunteer through their squadron, battery, and company officers to the regimental commanders, who would forward them on to district headquarters. No applications would be dealt with at the Minister's office, or at the headquarters of the department in Wellington. Applications should not be made until further notice. They will be called for later should they be required.

August 5, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

The Minister of Defence, the Hon. James Allen, made a brief statement this evening on the subject of military measures now in train. 'We are not going to mobilise the whole of the territorial force,' he said, 'although we should be justified in doing so, as war is declared, but I do not think that it is necessary at present. We are going to mobilise a certain number who would be prepared to go outside if we wanted them to. They will be mobilised in the four districts.' The Minister added that approximately 8000 men would be called out. They would be assembled at once at a suitable spot in each military district, and training would proceed all the time. In *New Zealand Herald,* August 6, 1914.

the event of an expeditionary force being organised, if the Territorials offering were not sufficient, members of the reserve, and men who had seen service before, would be called upon. 'Very likely,' remarked Mr. Allen, 'we may want some of those who have seen service before, but we must give our Territorials their chance. As far as human foresight can judge, we are making every preparation. I am at work now upon the cost of the whole thing, and I hope that if we have to send any troops away, the whole thing will be thoroughly and completely organised in every detail.'

As to the nature of the projected force, the Minister said that it would be of mixed composition, but he declined to go into details.

STATEMENT BY COMMANDANT OF FORCES

New Zealand Herald, August 6, 1914.

Interviewed to-night, General Sir Alexander Godley, General Officer Commanding the New Zealand Forces, stated what steps were being taken to defend the Dominion in the event of a German raid. 'The full strength of the Garrison Artillery,' he said, 'has been called out and mobilised. The men are now in the forts. Volunteers from the coast defence infantry are being called out to protect vulnerable points. The proportion of Territorial forces which the Government considers necessary for defensive purposes at this juncture has been called out as a volunteer force.'

Referring to the force that is being called for, he said that men would be accepted only on the understanding that they volunteered for service abroad, and will be prepared to be utilised for that purpose should their services be required later on. Men must volunteer for the arm of the service to which they now belong, or have belonged.

'All candidates must be recommended by the officer commanding the Territorial Force. They should apply to their squadron battery, or company commanding officer. If they are not serving in the Territorial Force, they should apply to the local Defence Office, or to the nearest Territorial commanding officer. Other offers of assistance should be communicated direct to the officer commanding the district.

'The question of horses,' continued the General, 'is one in which some difficulty was experienced in connection with

the contingents sent to the South African War. Some were privately owned, and complications thus ensued. At the present stage of the partial mobilisation which has been ordered, men will bring their own horses, which will remain their property, but if there is at any time any question of these volunteers now being mobilised leaving New Zealand, it must be understood every horse used, in the event of horses going abroad, will be the absolute property of the Government, to be used as the Government chooses. The Government will be very glad to receive gifts of horses for the service of those who might leave New Zealand. Horses not presented will be paid for by the Government. Numerous inquiries have been made as to the direction in which help and assistance to the Government can best be given in the event of a New Zealand force going abroad. The following gifts will be most suitable :— Riding, half-draught, or three-quarter draught horses, motor-bicycles, ordinary bicycles, motor-cars, saddlery, draught harness, grooming kits, blankets, stout serviceable boots of regulation pattern, strong leather braces and belts, canvas shoes, underclothing, socks, flannel shirts, Cardigan vests, towels, handkerchiefs, hold-alls, shaving outfits, bootlaces, hair brushes and combs, soap, clasp knives with lanyards, and field glasses.'

August 6, 1914.

STATEMENTS OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE AND COMMANDANT OF FORCES

New Zealand Herald, August 7, 1914.

The arrangements for the organisation and despatch of the proposed Expeditionary Force are stated by the Minister of Defence, the Hon. James Allen, to be in a very forward state. 'We are in an extremely good position in regard to equipment,' he said to-day. 'There are only a few things that were lacking prior to the outbreak of war. These include the small arms ammunition carts, which have been ordered, and are now being constructed. This is not a large expenditure, and it would have to be met in any case.'

The constitution of the force was explained by General Sir A. J. Godley, Commandant of the Defence Forces, in a statement to-day. 'At each of the four district headquarters,' said General Godley, 'a regiment of mounted rifles and a

battalion of infantry are being mobilised. In each case the existing regiment of mounted rifles and infantry will each furnish a complete squadron.

'It must be understood,' said the General, 'that the system now adopted is entirely based on the existing regimental peace organisation, and is on an entirely different footing from that which was adopted for the contingents which were despatched at the time of the South African War. Volunteers now will be taken primarily from those serving in the ranks of the Territorial Forces, or from those who have served in the Territorial Forces, and subsequently from others not in the Territorial Force, who have previous military experience, and are between the ages of 20 and 35 years.

'In no case, whether the volunteer belongs to the Territorial Forces or not, will any one be taken under the age of 20 years. Those under the age of 20 years now serving in the Territorial Forces are not eligible. All volunteers who do not belong to the Territorial Forces will be enlisted into an existing peace unit of the Territorial Forces, and will join the squadron or the company, as the case may be, which is furnished from the existing peace regiment. The squadrons and companies furnished in this way will wear the badges and numbers of the existing peace regiments.

'The selection, enrolment, medical examination, and attestation of all volunteers should be done locally at regimental headquarters. As the essence of the system is that the enrolment shall be decentralised, and that each regiment supplies its quota either from its own ranks, or as regards other categories by special enlistments from its own geographical area, the regiment is responsible for the selection. Group officers should assist regimental officers and adjutants in this geographical selection. There should be primarily a partial regimental mobilisation at regimental headquarters of the quota of men furnished by each regiment, and these will be drafted in batches to the district concentration centres. Regimental authorities should not be in too great a hurry to fill up from the first men offering, as good men from the back blocks may take time to arrive. All records of all these volunteers will be kept by the existing group officers.'

The General stated that mobilisation has commenced. 'The names have now been called for. These men are being

called out primarily as a partial mobilisation of the forces for the defence of the country, but no man will be taken except on the understanding that he is willing, and definitely volunteers to serve abroad. That should be plainly understood. Each mounted squadron will comprise 150 men, and each company of infantry 350 men.'

Each of the four military districts—Auckland, Wellington, Canterbury, and Otago—is to supply one regiment of mounted rifles and one battalion of infantry, each mounted regiment comprising three squadrons, and each infantry regiment four companies. Each district will be called upon to supply 450 mounted men and 1000 infantry, or 1450 men under these two arms of the service. These quotas in mounted rifles and infantry will bring the strength of the Expeditionary Force up to 5800.

It was announced in the House that the total force would probably comprise 7000 or 8000 men. This accordingly will leave the balance to be made up in the supply of the battery, medical, and ambulance services, and of an army service corps.

August 10, 1914.

STATEMENT OF COMMANDANT OF FORCES

The following official statement was made to-day by General Sir Alexander Godley, Officer Commanding the New Zealand Defence Forces, in regard to a statement that has been made to the effect that an undue proportion of Imperial officers are being sent with the Expeditionary Force, and that New Zealand officers who have undoubted claims are being excluded from appointments. *New Zealand Herald*, August 11, 1914.

'There are 13 Imperial officers going with the Expeditionary Force, including myself, if I am allowed to go, and my personal aide-de-camp, who is a New Zealander, and who is unpaid. Of the remaining eleven, two are New Zealanders. Against this, the services of all New Zealand officers now at home have been asked for by the War Office, and have been placed at the disposal of the Home Government by the New Zealand Government. They are:—General Davies, Colonel Smyth, Major Richardson, Major Gardiner, Captain Chesney, Captain Smythe, Captain Melville, and Lieutenants Davies, Turner, and Burns—a total of ten.'

August 14, 1914.

DEPARTURE OF ADVANCE GUARD; SPEECHES OF GOVERNOR AND PRIME MINISTER

New Zealand Herald, August 15, 1914.

A cablegram was received by His Excellency the Governor this afternoon, which made it necessary that the departure of the advance guard of New Zealand's Expeditionary Force should not be delayed. It was at once arranged that an official farewell should take place. Addressing the force drawn up before him, the Governor said:—

'Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, and Men of the Expeditionary Force: It is very little over an hour and a half since I received a telegram, saying that you have got to leave the shores of New Zealand as soon as possible. We have received orders from home that the enterprise on which you are going is one of great and urgent and Imperial necessity, and I am not going to make a long speech to you. But we felt we could not let you go from the shores of New Zealand without wishing you God-speed. We know that the honour of the Empire and its Dominion will be upheld by every single man in this force. We know that you, in common with every one of our fellow-subjects, are determined to do their best to show that there is only one Empire—one great Empire—in this war, and that we are not going to be trodden on or dictated to by some one else who wants to set up such a supremacy as would make it absolutely impossible for any other nation in the world to exist. Leave-takings are always unpleasant. I have gone through them myself. I am not going to bid you good-bye, but wish you *au revoir*, and a speedy and successful issue to your expedition. We shall look forward with the greatest interest to all your doings. We shall watch over them. In conclusion, I have nothing better to say than "God bless you all."'

In the course of a stirring speech, the Prime Minister said that the men would be the first to leave the shores of an Overseas Dominion to come to the assistance of the Mother Country in her hour of need.

August 17, 1914.

STATEMENT OF COMMANDANT OF FORCES

New Zealand Herald, August 18, 1914.

General Sir Alexander Godley, who arrived in Auckland yesterday afternoon, stated that he was well pleased with the type of volunteer in the advance guard of the Expeditionary Force. Some, he said, might have been on the young side, but these were the exception rather than the rule. The greatest care, he added, was being exercised in preventing any one from obtaining a position in the force by means of a false declaration of age.

The composition of the Expeditionary Force, General Godley pointed out, did not seem to be generally understood. Each mounted rifle or infantry regiment of the Territorial Force furnished one squadron or company. The squadrons from the 3rd Auckland, 4th Waikato, and 11th North Auckland Mounted Rifles, together constitute the Auckland Mounted Rifles Regiment. In the same way the companies from the 3rd Auckland, 6th Hauraki, 15th North Auckland, and 16th Waikato Regiments form the Auckland Infantry Regiment. The same system applies to the forces from the other military centres. 'The great merit of this organisation,' continued the General, 'is that each Territorial regiment will be represented at the front by about a quarter of its men, these men being the pick of the regiment.'

General Godley stated emphatically that the departure of the Expeditionary Force will not leave New Zealand inadequately protected. There would, he said, be over 20,000 Territorials left in the country, organised as they were before the departure of the Expeditionary Force. This force of 8000 men equals about a quarter of the present Territorial Force, but their places would be filled by men from the general training section, and by volunteers and reserves. 'I shall have far more chance of seeing some fighting by going away than by stopping in New Zealand,' he added.

In conclusion, General Godley said that he was sorry to think that this would be his last visit to Auckland for some time perhaps. 'I have always received much kindness at the hands of the people of Auckland, and I hope to come back again to see them. In the meantime, you may be sure that

I will look after the Auckland boys, who, I know, will give a good account of themselves.'

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

New Zealand Herald, August 18, 1914.

'I would like,' said the Minister of Defence to-day, 'to express my appreciation of the manner in which the advance guard of the Expeditionary Force was mobilised and sent away. As a matter of fact, they were mobilised some days before they were able to go, but that was not our fault. We had them ready, and in an exceptionally short time. It is undoubtedly to the credit of the Defence Department that the force was so quickly mobilised, and it is a full exposition of the perfection of the defence scheme that we had the men ready to go at such short notice.

'It is also to the credit of the women of New Zealand that they provided the troops with so many luxuries and necessaries. They worked day and night to achieve that end, and they are to be highly congratulated. I consider that the whole operation is a full justification of our system of territorial defence.

August 19, 1914.

STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

New Zealand Herald, August 20, 1914.

A general statement regarding the carrying on of the defence scheme, while the Expeditionary Force is abroad, was made to-day by the Hon. James Allen, Minister of Defence.

'I do not think it will be necessary to call out any more Territorials,' said Mr. Allen. 'Indeed, I hope we shall be able to allow some of those already mobilised to go back to their homes and to their work. It all depends on circumstances, but I should like to let as many as possible go as soon as I can. The ordinary work of the defence scheme will be carried on as usual, for a sufficient staff of officers will remain here for that purpose. Officers commanding districts will be appointed to replace those going away.

'All the country wants to be trained now, but I cannot afford to do it. It is very patriotic for so many to offer their services, and I value their action very highly. The rifle club

men have acted exactly as I expected they would act. I knew that when we wanted them, they would come forward.

'I do not know that there will be any training at home for our Expeditionary Force,' added the Minister. 'I have not any official communication on the subject, and, as far as we know, they are going to the front.'

August 24, 1914.

ADDRESS TO COMMANDANT OF FORCES AT PALMERSTON CAMP

New Zealand Herald, August 25, 1914.

The Expeditionary Force was inspected at the camp to-day by General Sir Alexander Godley, in the presence of a large number of people. The General, addressing the troops, said: 'I wish to tell you how very satisfied I am with the inspection. I do not think anybody can want to see a finer body of men, or men more likely to do credit to their country. Remember that you represent the regiments of the Wellington Military District, many of which were formed in olden times as volunteer regiments, and many in the Maori wars, especially those from the Taranaki district and the King Country. I hope that you will all remember that in your hands is the honour of those New Zealand regiments.

'The artillery has been selected from all over the Dominion, and I have no hesitation in saying that it is the finest body of men I have ever seen in my life, in any part of the world. The Engineers came from all over the Dominion, and the same with the Medical Corps and Army Service Corps, and all of them worthily represent their sections. I wish to say to all of you men that you are going to represent your country, and your particular regiments, in a way that it should be every soldier's ambition to do. Remember that whatever your act or will may be, however anxious you may be to see active service, and however hard you are working, it is of no use unless you realise that it must be done with discipline. By discipline I mean the very best kind of discipline; not the discipline which makes a man act through fear of punishment, or the discipline of the martinet of the Germany army, but something very much higher than that—the discipline which actuates the conscientious soldier.

'Remember every one of you that you are not only

soldiers, but also comrades. You know perfectly well that unless you work together, and realise the value of leadership, you will be of no good. By your performances on board the troopship, by the way in which you will arrive in England, will New Zealand not only be judging you personally, but also your regiment. You will find yourselves beside regiments of the British Regular Army with great traditions, traditions which have reached a pitch of excellence that is impossible to be reached by any other army in the world. There is no reason why the men of New Zealand should not be able and competent to take their places beside the men of the British Army. When they do, they will find a high standard of personal appearance and *esprit de corps*, cleanliness, sobriety, and temperance in every way, and on these points I trust and believe you will not be found wanting.

'You will find the army discipline irksome. You do not go on active service expecting anything but hardship. I am perfectly certain that the men of Wellington, Hawke's Bay, Taranaki, and Manawatu will bear their fair share of the hardships that come along. We are all grateful, the military authorities and the Government, too, for the patriotic spirit shown not only by the volunteers, but also by the citizens. I wish you *bon voyage* and God-speed, and remember that the whole of New Zealand will be watching you, and they will expect to see something more than the ordinary from the men who are here. If I am any judge, and I ought to be after thirty years' soldiering, I think the men whom I now see before me will be well able to take their place in the ranks of the British Army when they reach home.'

August 31, 1914.

CAPTURE OF SAMOA: STATEMENTS OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE AND PRIME MINISTER

Wellington, Monday.

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 1, 1914.

According to the advice received by His Excellency the Governor, Apia was surrendered at 10 A.M. on August 29 (Western time).[1] As time in Samoa is later than New Zealand time, the surrender occurred, according to the New Zealand time, at 10.30 A.M. on Sunday.

[1] [See *Naval*, 1, pp. 135-60.]

Mr. Allen remarked that the ultimate disposition of the

island was a matter for decision by the Imperial authorities, but New Zealand might have something to say about it. 'We have simply done our duty as part of the Empire, in carrying out the task allotted to us,' he added, 'and now our duty is to hold Samoa for the Imperial Government. It is impossible to say how long the New Zealand Force will be required to stay there.'

. . . . . .

'It must be very satisfactory to the whole of the people of New Zealand,' said the Prime Minister this evening, 'that we have been able to take possession of the island with so very little trouble. Apart altogether from the area, which is approximately 1000 square miles, and the fertility of the island, Samoa is of very great strategical importance to both New Zealand and Australia. There is already a very powerful wireless station some distance inland from Apia, probably the most powerful in the Pacific, and we have reason to believe that it is still intact, though we have secured it much more easily than we expected. We have to hold Samoa,' Mr. Massey added. 'A strong force will be required to garrison the island for some considerable time to come. A further reason for gratification is that not only was the New Zealand force the first contingent of British troops to proceed overseas to its allotted task, but it is also the first to secure German territory for the Imperial Crown.'

September 2, 1914.

MESSAGE FROM CAPTAIN OF H.M.S. *NEW ZEALAND*

The following telegram has been received from Captain Halsey, commander of H.M.S. *New Zealand,* dated London, September 2 :— *New Zealand Herald,* Sept. 4, 1914.

'All on board the *New Zealand* congratulate Dominion on their action in Samoa.

'Please inform women of New Zealand that their ensign flew on board during the action after Heligoland.' [1]

[1] [See *Naval,* 1, p. 122.]

September 6, 1914.

SPEECH OF PRIME MINISTER AT CHRISTCHURCH

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 7, 1914.

A 'send-off' to the Canterbury section of the Expeditionary Force at King Edward Barracks on Saturday night, took the

form of a smoking concert. Members of the force attended in large numbers, and there were many ladies present. The Mayor presided and the Prime Minister, the Right Hon. W. F. Massey, the Leader of the Opposition, Sir Joseph Ward, and many leading citizens were present.

Mr. Massey received a great reception on rising to speak. In the course of an eloquent and patriotic speech, he said: 'I want to remind you of the bloodless victory of the first section of the Expeditionary Force. Do not imagine they ran no risk, and that there was no danger. From what we know, they ran a very serious risk, and we want to give credit where it is due. If it had not been for the assistance of the Australian Government and Navy, and the Navy of one of our Allies, the first section would never have been allowed to reach Samoa. Some day the history of what has taken place may be written, and then you will understand what I am telling you.

'I want you to remember this. The first soldiers of the Empire to haul down the German flag and replace it with the British flag were your fellow-soldiers and fellow-citizens. It is a good omen—an omen that will prove to be right. I am certain of this. Though we are going to have reverses and successes, I have not the slightest doubt of the ultimate result.'

September 8, 1914.

SPEECH OF PRIME MINISTER AT WELLINGTON

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 9. 1914.

A large Parliamentary party, at the invitation of the Shipping Companies, paid a visit to-day to the troopships now in port. The party included the Premier, the Minister of Defence, Sir Joseph Ward, and the Speaker of the House, and they were accompanied by General Sir Alexander Godley, Colonel Robin, Mr. Luke, Mayor of Wellington, and Bishop Sprott.

Mr. Massey proposed the toast of their hosts, the Shipping Companies. Mr. Massey said he had no doubt that the men were anxious to get to the front. Many of them were sorry they were not there now, co-operating with the British and French soldiers on the frontiers. They would not, however, be too late to share in the campaign. He referred to the tactics of the Germans, an instance of which he gave in the

cutting of the Pacific cable, which, no doubt, was done by a German ship sailing under French colours. That was one of the scores Britain had to wipe off when the day of reckoning came. The sinking of the *Kaipara* was another. There was no reason to be discouraged. The war would not come to an end with the investment of Paris, and would not end even with the downfall of Paris. The war would not end till the Allies reached Berlin, and when he referred to the Allies, he did not merely mean Russians, but British, French, and Belgians as well. He even mentioned his hope that some New Zealanders would be there too.

September 12, 1914.

MESSAGE FROM LORD KITCHENER AND STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

The Minister of Defence, the Honourable James Allen, inspected the troops at Tahuna Park yesterday morning. In the course of an address the Minister read the following message from Earl Kitchener, Commander-in-Chief of the British Forces :— *New Zealand Herald,* Sept. 14, 1914.

'I congratulate New Zealand on the contingent about to sail. I feel sure its members will receive a hearty welcome here, and that undoubted success will be theirs. I am proud that their Colonel-in-Chief is Lord Roberts. I learn with much gratification that the contingent from New Zealand is about to embark. (Signed) KITCHENER.'

In the course of an interview, Mr. Allen said the raising, organising, maintaining and returning, of the Expeditionary Force would be undertaken by the New Zealand Government. The Home Government would not even have to provide rations in England. Steps were being taken for organising immediately reinforcements amounting to twenty per cent. of the Expeditionary Force. The force was sure to go to Europe, and not to India for garrisoning purposes.

Mr. Allen said he did not at present purpose to inaugurate a war tax. The public had been so generous that to do so at present would be unfair. A war tax would probably come, for there was the payment of war expenses to be considered. The cash subscribed to the Empire Defence Fund was close on

£100,000, and local bodies, etc., must have in hand close on another £100,000. In addition the donations would amount to a value of anything from £50,000 to £100,000. All this was helping to equip the men, and was providing for all sorts of contingencies, and there was no reason why the Government should put on a war tax when the people had been so generous. The only object of levying such a tax at present would be to get at the man who was not contributing anything, but he would have to be left alone for the present.

The delay in the departure of the force was not due to unpreparedness. 'We were ready,' said the Minister, 'to send them away ten days or a fortnight ago, but we have to wait until the Admiralty gives the word.'

September 19, 1914.

ADDRESS OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 20, 1914.

The Expeditionary Force encamped at Epsom was reviewed on Saturday morning by the Minister of Defence, the Hon. J. Allen, at Alexandra Park, in the presence of a large number of civilians.

In the course of a stirring address to the soldiers, the Minister intimated that he had seen practically all the New Zealand troops who were going away to the front.

'I desire,' said the Minister, 'to say to you, and to the public of New Zealand, as Minister of Defence, that I have been highly gratified with what I have seen. I am proud to know that such a splendid body of officers, non-commissioned officers, and men is going away to represent New Zealand at this country's and the Empire's call. You are going to do a great duty for the Empire and for your country. I hope you will read in the papers what British statesmen have to say about the war. This is a righteous and a holy war on our part, and we look to you to assist the Mother Country to help a weaker nation—a nation weak in numbers, but strong in heroic valour.

'I know,' continued the Minister, 'that you must feel that you are going to do a right and proper duty. There are many remaining behind who would like to be in your shoes, and regret that they cannot go with you. I should like to be with you myself. Those who remain behind have a duty

as well as those who are going away. We give you the assurance that we will look after this fair country while you are away. Our duty is to see that we carry on the industries of this country, and to keep the place smiling and happy, so that those who go away may return to happy homes when the war is over.

'We are looking to you,' continued the Minister, 'to uphold the name of New Zealand and New Zealanders. Always remember that, though you belong to the Anglo-Saxon race, and are Britishers in one sense, yet in a nearer and dearer sense to us, you belong to your country, New Zealand. Even the Imperial officers who go with you we look upon, for the time being, as New Zealanders, and it is the fair name of New Zealand that you carry with you. We look to you to add to that fair name when you meet with Britishers and Allies, and we look to you to show them by your conduct what New Zealanders, in the best sense of the word, can be. We look to you when you meet your enemies to let them realise what it is to meet New Zealanders. I am firm in the confidence,' proceeded Mr. Allen, 'that you will add to the traditions of this country and those of the British race generally. As yet, New Zealand is young in history and in traditions. In the making of traditions greater opportunities came to the soldier than to the civilian, for a country never failed to recognise the sacrifices the soldier makes for home and country. You are going away to win honour and glory, and to add to the traditions of your country, and in after years our children will read with pride of the officers and men of the Expeditionary Force in the hour of trial in the history of our race.'

Proceeding, the Minister said that New Zealand had fulfilled to the utmost the bargain made with the Mother Country in regard to the equipping of the Expeditionary Force. 'We have,' he said, 'recognised our duty to do even more than we promised. We are, therefore, sending you away more fully equipped than we had first contemplated. We have doubled the 18-pound batteries, and are sending away a full brigade of artillery. We are sending away more Maxims than we had at first intended, and we are sending with you the best of our officers, for we are fully assured that we should not entrust the lives of from 8000 to 10,000 of our men to any but the best of officers.'

Proceeding, the Minister said that when the time came when daring, dash and courage were required, the troops would not fail, and he expressed the hope that should the occasion demand they would show mercy to the enemy, and respect the people they conquered. 'You will then come back to us with clean and honourable records, knowing that you have laid the foundation of traditions that would guide New Zealand in the future. You go at full strength,' added Mr. Allen, 'and we have promised to keep you up to full strength. If necessary, however, we will increase that strength.'

'There are,' went on the Minister, 'awaiting you now in England 250 New Zealanders, who have been training to join your ranks. I am glad that they have not forgotten New Zealand. I hope you will take the message to them that I am proud of them, and that New Zealand is proud of them. We are certain that, with the others, they will do their duty on the battle-field when they get there.'

The Minister intimated that a printed message had been prepared for the troops containing Earl Kitchener's advice to the British soldiers, and special messages from Earl Roberts, and from himself, as Minister of Defence.

In concluding his address, the Minister said that, although they were going away not quite so perfectly equipped, perhaps, as the Government would have desired, yet the best possible had been done, and he hoped the troops would carry away pleasing recollections of what the women of New Zealand had done for them. The country was grateful to the women for their valued help in equipping the troops.

Finally, the Minister said he wanted to remind the men that they carried the rifle as a weapon of defence and offence. He hoped they would recognise what that meant, and that they would take care of their rifles as they would of themselves. 'We want you to arrive in Britain as fit as you can be, and when you use the rifle at the front, let every bullet find its billet.'

Every one was proud of the British non-commissioned officer, and to the non-coms. of the Expeditionary Force he expressed the hope that they would also win a great reputation. To the officers he entrusted the care of the whole of the troops. 'Take care of them better than you would of yourselves. We trust to you to lead them as true New Zealanders, and every one will be glad to welcome you back, proud of the

fact that you stood the test alongside the best of the armies in Europe, and gallantly held your own.'

The Mayor called for three cheers for the Minister for his stirring address, and these were heartily given by the assembled troops and civilians.

September 20, 1914.

MESSAGES OF LORDS ROBERTS AND KITCHENER AND STATEMENT OF MINISTER OF DEFENCE

After reviewing the Auckland section of the Expeditionary force at Epsom, the Minister of Defence, the Hon. James Allen, announced that the Defence Department was distributing leaflets containing the full text of Earl Kitchener's message to the British troops, together with messages from Lord Roberts and the New Zealand Minister of Defence. *New Zealand Herald,* Sept. 21, 1914.

The message of Field-Marshal Earl Roberts, who is Colonel-in-Chief of the New Zealand Army, is as follows :—' I congratulate New Zealand on the contingent which is about to sail, and feel sure that they will meet with a hearty welcome here, and that unbounded success will be theirs. I am proud to be their Colonel-in-Chief.'

The following message, also contained in the leaflet, is from Earl Kitchener :—' I learn with much gratification that the contingent from New Zealand is about to embark, and can assure it a very hearty welcome from all here.'

The Hon. J. Allen's message is as follows :—' Remember that you will hold the Dominion's honour in your keeping. Remember that both the friends you meet and the enemies you fight will form their opinions of New Zealanders from you, therefore see that you are brave as you are honourable, and modest and courteous as you are brave.'

The New Zealand troops are urged to keep Earl Kitchener's last words to the troops on leaving England,[1] and the messages of welcome from Earl Kitchener and Earl Roberts always with them.

[1 See *Military,* I, pp. 18, 19.]

September 23, 1914.

SPEECHES OF MAYOR OF AUCKLAND AND PRIME MINISTER AT AUCKLAND

MR. C. J. PARR : ' May I say a word for Auckland, because you are Aucklanders, and the citizens, I am sure, would wish *New Zealand Herald,* Sept. 24, 1914.

me to give you their good wishes?' said the Mayor, Mr. C. J. Parr, addressing the troops. 'You are going to fight for a great cause. The issue is civilisation itself. Is the world to go back to barbarism, vandalism and savagery, and is the clock to be put back four hundred years? That is the issue. I am not over-stating the case a jot. Let us think of Louvain and Rheims, Old World cities, with their beautiful cathedrals levelled to the dust. Think of the treacherous mines sown on the high seas without regard to the laws of war and humanity. Let us not forget the hundreds of women and children slaughtered by savage soldiery. German culture will never find an excuse for violating poor little Belgium. You soldiers will know how to exact a penalty for these outrages against humanity. Drive home your attack wherever you are, and let all resolve to die rather than to submit. Every bullet, every bayonet, must find its mark, because until Prussian militarism is smashed, the world will know no peace or freedom.

'Look after your health above all things. Keep fit. Remember that you have to depend upon your health and your gun, and look after both. Obey orders to the letter. Show the world that discipline is not the weak point of the New Zealand soldier. Commit no excesses, and remember that you have New Zealand's fair fame in your keeping.

'I know that you will fight as brave men should, for no New Zealander will ever show the white feather. You must show the British and the world that you can play the game. Believe me, you boys are making history. You are going to help write the greatest page that has ever been written in the world's great drama. This war is the greatest conflict known to men, and in a hundred years from now it will be counted the highest honour that a man can claim that he came from stock that fought in the great world war of 1914 in the cause of priceless freedom.

'Auckland takes farewell of you to-day, and prays that the Almighty may, in His wisdom, ever be with you and shield you in the great struggle upon which you now enter. We shall know how to welcome you home after the conflict is over, when, as we pray, you come back to us with success, honour, and glory writ across your banners.'

MR. MASSEY: 'In this weather I do not propose to address you at any length. I consider it my duty, as well as my

privilege, on behalf of the Dominion, to join with the Auckland citizens in saying farewell to the Auckland section of the Expeditionary Force. New Zealand may be only a small country, with a comparatively small population, but New Zealand is not an unimportant part of the British Empire. In this crisis, the most serious ever experienced in the history of Britain, New Zealand has made up its mind to do its duty to the Empire, just as the Empire is doing its duty to civilisation and to humanity by protecting the weaker nations of the world against tyranny.

'In a short time from now there will leave our shores for the scenes of war the very pick of our male population—young New Zealanders—who will proceed to the other side of the world, to meet Britain's enemies in battle in countries where, centuries ago, the ancestors of our New Zealanders held their own on many a stubbornly-contested field. That you will do as well as your forefathers, I have not the very least doubt. That you will do your country credit, wherever you are, I feel sure.

'I have no doubt that by and by you will find yourselves with English, Scotch, and Irish troops, and with men representing other nations and other Dominions of the British Empire, and with the men who, during the last few weeks, have flung back the enemy from the very gates of Paris—every one of them willing to risk his life for his country and for humanity. You will find men there from the burning plains of India, from the snows of Canada, from the great Australian bush, from the wide veldt of South Africa, as well as your fellows from these islands of New Zealand.

'You will see what the world has never seen before—men of almost every clime, language, race and creed, bound together by one idea, one belief—that within the British Empire, and under the British flag, there is more justice, morality, and freedom than has been granted by any other nation to its own people, or to peoples within its gates. In consequence of that belief, scores of millions of men have made up their minds to keep the Empire intact, to resist tyranny and oppression to the uttermost, and to keep flying the flag that has braved a thousand years the battle and the breeze—the emblem of truth and right and justice, and everything that makes for the betterment of humanity.

'You will encounter many hardships,' continued the Prime Minister, 'not only on the scene of operations, but on the way thereto. But remember that you are enjoying the privilege of making history. In the ages to come millions of people will read with interest of the great events that are taking place to-day, and I hope that they will also read of how the New Zealanders distinguished themselves. You will have the privilege of striking hard for right and truth and against tyranny, and we know that that privilege is safe in your hands.

'On behalf of the people of the Dominion, I endorse what the Mayor has said to you. We commend you to the protection of Him without whose knowledge not even a sparrow can fall to the ground. I hope that this cruel war will soon come to an end—but it must be peace with honour, or no peace at all. I hope that in the not far-distant future we will have the pleasure of welcoming you back home again. On behalf of the people of New Zealand, I wish you God-speed. May God bless you!'

Cheers for the Prime Minister and for the troops, heartily given at the call of the Mayor, concluded the proceedings, and the troops formed up and left the domain on their march through the city.

September 24, 1914.

ADDRESSES OF THE GOVERNOR, PRIME MINISTER, AND LEADER OF OPPOSITION AT WELLINGTON

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 25, 1914.

The official farewell to the Wellington section of the main Expeditionary Force took place this afternoon in Newtown Park.

The GOVERNOR, addressing the men, said: 'This great assembly which you see around you to-day has come to wish you "God-speed." England is wanting all her sons to-day, and this young Dominion is sending home to the Mother Country her best. It has been a great pleasure, nay, I will say an honour, to inspect the men here to-day, and I do not think anybody will fear as to the future. You are indeed the very pick of the manhood of this Dominion, and I know you will give a good account of yourselves whenever you are called upon to do so. There is a tinge of sadness in my heart to-day,

and it is because I alone of all the reserve of officers in this Dominion, am unable to allow my name to be called in the roll of my old regiment. I can assure you all here, whether you be on parade, or you be spectators, that I shall do my best to serve your interests to the best of my power, as long as I am in the Dominion. No Government has ever faced war with a light heart; but if ever a Government had a righteous cause, if ever an Empire had a righteous cause, it is the Empire we have the honour to belong to. It has been oft repeated since the war began, that we would soon be signing peace, but peace will not be declared until we have made a right end of this war. We have been forced into it by an unrighteous foe, desirous to rule the world, and we have determined that as we have put our hands to the plough, we shall not look backwards.'

The PRIME MINISTER said: 'Not for the first time in recent years has the Empire seen fit to call upon younger nations for men who can ride and shoot. From every corner of the world the sons of the Dominions are rushing to assist the old mother. New Zealand is sending of its best, and in all probability, within a very few months, New Zealand will have 10,000 representatives at the scene of operations. I am very proud of those who are going away, on account of their physique and soldierly bearing, and their willingness to serve their country and Empire under any circumstances. I want to give you two words of advice. In the case of many of you, your mothers are still left. When you go to the other side of the world, never do anything of which your mothers would not approve. If you take that advice in the spirit in which it is given, you will never have reason to regret it. Just one other word, and it is this: Citizen soldiers, let me advise you to stand fast to the honour of the Empire, stand fast for the glory of the Flag, stand fast for the credit of your Empire, stand fast for the traditions of the Imperial race to which you belong. And now I can only hope that the Providence that has watched over and guided and guarded the destinies of the Empire, will watch over you, protect your footsteps, and in His own good time bring you back to your own land and to the friends you are leaving behind.'

SIR JOSEPH WARD said: 'It is only a little over seven weeks since this unparalleled war began. During that time

there have been deeds done by the British that have added to the brightness of the pages of British history, and have enhanced the glory of the British Empire. Talk about the suggestion of the decadence of the British Empire! Read only one or two of the incidents that have taken place during the last week or two, and any idea of the kind ought to be dissipated for ever. We may be only fighting in defence of a bit of shattered bunting, but we are fighting in defence of what that means to the humblest of the people in all the British territory. It means the suppression of that German Imperialism which aimed at dominating the civilised world. For that reason the men going forward are willing to fight or die in defence of the honour of the Empire, and there are men who are ready to follow them.'

September 25, 1914.

STATEMENTS *re* EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

New Zealand Herald, Sept. 26, 1914.

The following statement was issued to-day in regard to New Zealand Expeditionary Force :—

'His Excellency the Governor received advice from the Imperial Government early this morning that the New Zealand Expeditionary Force will not sail from the Dominion for some little time. The Governor is anxious, for obvious reasons, to take the people into his confidence in this matter at the earliest possible moment. He would earnestly request them not to make this the subject of comment, as the delay is solely caused by the exigencies of the service when such extensive operations are everywhere in progress, and applies, as well, to other Expeditionary Forces of the Overseas Dominions.'

The Hon. James Allen, Minister of Defence, informed a *Herald* representative this evening that the horses would be brought ashore from the ships, and also a sufficient number of men to take charge of them, and that two camps would be established in the neighbourhood of Wellington, one of them at Trentham. The dismounted men would not go into camp. They would sleep and mess on the ships, but would come ashore probably every day for training and exercise.

The Auckland transports, said Mr. Allen, had left Auckland, but had been recalled. They would not come to Wellington,

but the same arrangements would be followed in Auckland. The mounted men would go into camp.

The Prime Minister made a brief statement regarding the postponement when asked to do so this evening. 'There need be no uneasiness on the part of the public so far as our transports are concerned,' said Mr. Massey. 'The postponement of the date of sailing has been made under direct instructions from the Imperial authorities, and I have reason to believe they are similar to the instructions which have been issued to some of the other Dominions of the Empire. The people of New Zealand may be quite satisfied that a strong escort has been arranged to accompany the transports.'

It is understood that the reason for the postponement had nothing to do with the safety or otherwise of our own seas, and that there is no reason to fear that they are any less safe than they have been since the outbreak of war.

September 28, 1914.

MAORI CONTINGENT: STATEMENT BY HON. DR. M. POMARE

A contingent of 500 Maoris is being organised for service in the war. Of this number 250 are to proceed to Egypt, and 250 will be sent to Samoa for garrison duty. *New Zealand Herald,* Sept. 29, 1914.

Interviewed yesterday, prior to his departure for the South, the Hon. Dr. M. Pomare, member of the Executive representing the native race, informed a *Herald* representative that more applications for enrolment in the force are being received than can possibly be dealt with. The organisation of the Maori volunteers has been left to Dr. Pomare, and the other Native members of the House. Each member of this committee is organising his own district. It is intended to constitute the force as follows:—

East Coast Natives . .	180
West ,, ,, . .	180
North ,, ,, . .	100
South ,, ,, . .	40

Every tribe and all parts of the Dominion will be represented.

The entire Maori contingent will go into camp at Auckland

on about October 7, next, probably on a site at Avondale. Amongst the volunteers are several who held commissions in the South African War, and in all probability the officers of the contingent will be selected from these. The natives will be equipped as infantry, and steps are to be taken to make them as efficient as possible. Those Maoris who are members of the Territorials, and who join the first Expeditionary Force, will not be interfered with.

'The Maoris of the Dominion have expressed, as with one voice, unswerving loyalty to the British Throne,' said Dr. Pomare. 'They have expressed this loyalty with no uncertain sound. They recognise that the British cause is their cause, the British King is their King, and that the God of the British is the God of the Maoris too. In this they are absolutely one. This spirit has been expressed to me,' concluded Dr. Pomare, 'in hundreds of letters.'

APPENDIX

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE OF IMPERIAL DEFENCE UPON A GENERAL SCHEME OF DEFENCE FOR AUSTRALIA

Presented by command; ordered by the Senate to be printed, 15th August 1906

AUSTRALIA

GENERAL SCHEME OF DEFENCE

IN the following Memorandum it is proposed—

(i.) To review briefly the broad strategic principles on which any measures for the local defence of Australia must of necessity be based;

(ii.) To examine the requirements of a detailed scheme for the 'defence of the ports of the Commonwealth, framed in the light of present and future naval developments, as far as can be judged, and adapted to any attacking forces which may be reasonably expected';

(iii.) To consider 'the general organisation of the military forces, and peace and war establishments'; and

(iv.) To discuss the question of 'local naval defence for ports, harbours, and coastal trade,' and its bearing on the 'development of the maritime resources of the Commonwealth.'

Scale of war preparations.

2. The general principle that war preparations should be governed by the reasonable probabilities of the next few years rather than by remoter possibilities is beyond question; but its application must be separately considered in regard to the provision of material and the organisation of *personnel*.

Experience has shown that there is no finality in the matter of war material, and that on an average little more than a decade elapses between successive rearmaments, whether of infantry, field artillery, or coast defences. It is therefore inadvisable that expenditure should exceed the requirements of the near future, especially in the case of such costly elements of defence as coast batteries. Should future naval developments tend to reduce the importance of the fixed defences much wasted expenditure will thus be avoided. If, on the other

hand, improvements in these defences should become desirable a few years hence, the money saved now by restricting expenditure to guns of moderate calibre will be available then for the purchase of new guns with the latest improvements. The mere size of the guns is no adequate criterion of efficiency in the defences of a port, and the provision of unnecessarily heavy artillery may retard necessary revisions in the future by increasing the cost of each rearmament. It is consequently neither necessary nor advisable to anticipate more than the requirements of the near future when considering the provision of war material, and especially of coast artillery armaments.

On the other hand, the national armies, on which must depend in the last resort the issue of wars for national existence, cannot be brought into being without long and careful preparation in peace even though time for development after the outbreak of war may be guaranteed to them by the influence of sea power. The organisation of the active military forces maintained by the Commonwealth must consequently be designed not only to furnish the garrison troops which suffice under present conditions for local defence in Australia, but also to provide a certain number of field troops, organised in units of all arms with the necessary departmental services, and grouped in brigade formations, which will serve as the training school and model for the field forces that may be required in the future. At the same time it is necessary to extend opportunities of elementary military instruction in various forms to as large a proportion as possible of the population with a view to rendering military training as universal as circumstances may for the time being permit.

I.—Strategical Considerations

Maintenance of naval superiority.

3. The primary condition of the security of all British territory and trade in war is the maintenance of superiority at sea over the naval forces of any combination of Powers likely to be formed against us. The traditional rôle of the navy is to seek out all the ships of the enemy wherever they may be, and either bring them to action or mask them if they remain in port. This policy of active offence against the enemy's naval forces as opposed to one of local naval defence of our own coasts is still, as it has always been, the only possible way of giving effective protection to the shipping and maritime commerce in every sea on which the economic life of the widely dispersed members of the Empire depends.

Probable course of naval war.

4. The enormous advantages accruing to the belligerent who succeeds in establishing sea supremacy over his opponent are now well understood, and it is to be expected that any naval Power hoping to inflict serious injury upon us will, on the outbreak of war, attempt

to neutralise our naval superiority and, if possible, to wrest from us the command of the sea. This object can only be attained as the result of great battles in which the main fleets of the contending Powers are concentrated for the decisive encounters. Arrangements for this concentration must be made in time of peace, and the normal distribution of our battle fleets must be governed by the dispositions of the foreign fleets which for the time being are regarded as their most formidable rivals.

With a view to impairing our measures of concentration in war, and inducing us to weaken our main fleets, the enemy may endeavour to create a widespread feeling of insecurity and alarm throughout the Empire by utilising such classes of vessels as are unfitted for taking part in the decisive actions in raiding our sea-borne trade and threatening distant portions of the Empire. Although in themselves such raiding operations will be only of secondary importance, as the ultimate issue of the war must depend on the result of the fleet actions, it will be necessary to take a vigorous offensive against all such outlying raiding vessels in order to prevent the disturbance of trade and demoralisation which might be caused by their depredations.

Protection of floating trade.

5. It is the constant policy of the Admiralty to keep our squadrons on distant stations sufficiently strong to protect our trade from attack by the foreign squadrons normally stationed in those seas. It is, of course, possible that in war-time an enemy might send out additional cruisers to attack our Colonial trade, but in this case our superiority in vessels of this class and our greater facilities of ports would enable us to despatch a preponderating force in pursuit.

The distribution at any moment of foreign navies, and of all merchant vessels likely to be employed as armed auxiliaries, is known in time of peace. During the period of strained relations every effort will be made to keep the ships of the prospective enemy under observation. The great increase in the rapidity and certainty of transmission of intelligence consequent on the development of submarine cables and wireless telegraphy, have combined to add enormously to the difficulties of raiding operations depending for their success on tactics of evasion.

When the presence of a commerce raider in the Eastern seas is reported, it will be desirable to bring her to action without delay, and if possible before she can reach our own territorial waters. This points to the necessity of concerted action not only for direct pursuit, but also with a view to intercepting her at obligatory points of passage, and off hostile or even neutral ports at which she is likely to call. It is for this reason that under the Naval Agreement of 1903 the cruisers on the Australian Station are not necessarily confined in war to the

waters of that Station, while it is recognised that they will not be the only force used there should the necessity arise for a larger force. The object of making the naval Commander-in-Chief on the China Station responsible for the strategical distribution of the cruisers on the China, Australian, and East Indies Stations is simply to ensure that all the ships of the enemy in these seas may be dealt with at the earliest possible moment wherever they may be found. Closely concerted offensive action by powerful sea-going ships will afford the only effective protection to Australian floating trade, whether on the high seas or in local waters.

Naval limitations on attacks on Australian littoral.

6. Having regard to our present naval strength and dispositions, it follows from the above considerations that attacks on floating trade in distant seas will offer to an enemy but slight prospect of any but very transitory successes. Similar considerations impose even greater restrictions on the possible forms of attack on the Australian littoral.

In considering this subject it is necessary to draw a clear distinction between hasty raids, dependent for success on surprise and rapidity of execution rather than on the number of troops employed, and larger operations aiming at a prolonged or permanent occupation of Australian territory. The oversea conveyance from a distant base of operations of a military expedition strong enough for the latter purpose, and its continued supply with munitions of war when landed, would only be possible to a Power which was mistress of the seas and was able to destroy or mask all the hostile ships that might at any time be in a position to interrupt the communications of the expeditionary force. No such expedition has ever been carried to a successful conclusion unless this condition has been fulfilled, and some of the greatest military disasters recorded in history have resulted from failure to secure or retain the assured sea command which is essential for the prosecution of an oversea campaign. It is evident that so long as British naval strength is calculated and maintained on the basis of securing command of the sea as against all probable enemies, and protecting the maritime communications of the Empire against disturbance, the attacks upon the Australian littoral against which land defence is required will be limited to raids hastily carried out by single vessels or small squadrons which have temporarily evaded our naval forces.

Assuming it to be the object of the raiding vessels to avoid capture by our cruisers for as long a period as possible, while inflicting the maximum of injury on our commerce, their best course would be to remain in open waters, rather than to approach our coasts and commercial ports, where their presence would be quickly reported to our own ships, which, especially in Australian waters, will have a great advantage over them in respect of information. In the absence,

however, of suitable measures of defence on land, commerce raiders might be induced to raid a port if the advantages to be gained thereby appeared to outweigh the risks involved in the disclosure of their position.

II.—Measures of Local Defence

Measures of defence required on land.

7. The defensive measures required on land to provide against attacks by raiding cruisers acting under these limitations come within certain clearly defined categories.

From the point of view of the protection of sea-borne commerce it is necessary to provide a certain number of fortified harbours of refuge, where merchant shipping can, in case of need, seek protection from capture or molestation, and remain in safety until commerce raiders, reported in neighbouring waters, have been dealt with by His Majesty's ships, or compelled to withdraw from shortage of coal. In some few cases favourably situated harbours may have to be defended with this special strategical object in view, but in most cases it will be possible to utilise as harbours of refuge great commercial ports where fixed defences would in any case be provided for other reasons. Fixed defences are required at a commercial port if such resources as naval stores, graving docks, or extensive plants of coaling machinery, which are of essential value to our warships and mercantile marine, are collected within such a limited and exposed space that they might be seriously damaged by the gun-fire of raiding cruisers if no defences existed. The function of the fixed defences will be to keep the enemy's cruisers at a sufficient distance from the objects protected.

Raids on other commercial ports would gain for an enemy no advantage that he could not derive from attacking shipping on the high seas, and the inducements to bombard would be outweighed by the knowledge that attack would reveal the position of the raiding vessels, and by considerations of ammunition supply. A bombardment could inflict no substantial injury without an expenditure of ammunition which must be regarded as prohibitive when no object of strategic importance is involved. There is therefore no likelihood that an undefended town would be subjected to bombardment as an alternative to the payment of an indemnity even were it not the case that any wanton damage inflicted on such a place would inevitably provoke reprisals which must fall heavily on the weaker maritime Power.

At cable landing places, a small infantry defence is required to prevent damage to the shore ends of the cables by boats' crews landing from a raiding vessel. The measure of protection required is evidently only that which will involve such risk of loss to the attackers as will deter them from an enterprise which, even if successful, will cause only a temporary interruption to the particular cable attacked,

while communication by other alternative cable routes, of which there are now several, would still remain open.

In the future, the security of wireless telegraphy stations will have to be considered, but in most cases it should be possible to erect the installations in such positions that the necessity for special measures of defence will be obviated.

Selection of Australian ports in need of defence.

8. The application of these principles to Australian ports points to the retention of fixed defences at Fremantle, Port Adelaide, Port Phillip (Melbourne), Sydney, Newcastle, Brisbane, Normanby Sound (Torres Strait), and Hobart.

No other fortified ports are required as strategic harbours of refuge for merchant shipping, nor do any other commercial ports in Australia at present possess concentrated resources, either ashore or afloat, to such an extent as to justify the provision of defensive works at the present time. It is impossible to provide against every conceivable attack, or to enter upon war with the certainty of incurring no losses, and it is wiser to confine expenditure on local defence to protecting objectives of real strategic value than to attempt to extend protection to an indefinite number of places where the shipping and resources, though of local importance, are not essential to the general maintenance of maritime trade.

The supersession of Albany by Fremantle calls for some explanation. When King George's Sound was selected in 1882 as a mercantile strategic harbour of refuge in the neighbourhood of the great trade route which rounds Cape Leeuwin, to be fortified and garrisoned at the joint expense of the Australian Colonies, it was the only harbour in the south-west of Australia. This is no longer the case. From the point of view of position with reference to the trade route there is little to choose between King George's Sound and Fremantle, and as only one harbour of refuge is required in these waters, the selection should be governed by such considerations as the course of trade in peace and the facilities for shipping in regard to coaling and other marine resources. In these respects the balance of advantage has completely turned in favour of Fremantle, which, owing to its greatly improved harbour facilities, has now become the port of call for the various lines of mail steamers. Albany is, therefore, no longer required as a strategic harbour of refuge, and it does not fulfil the other conditions necessitating fixed defences.

Normanby Sound (Torres Strait) is the harbour of refuge now usually referred to as Thursday Island, where the guns for its protection are mounted. The resiting of the defences to meet modern requirements is discussed elsewhere.

9. In order to arrive at just conclusions in regard to the standards

of defence to be adopted at Australian defended ports, it is necessary to form as clear an idea as possible of the character of the vessels which may reasonably be expected to engage in raiding attacks in Australian waters, and of the strength of the landing parties which might be disembarked.

Scale of probable raiding attack on Australian ports.

As already stated, a powerful enemy is likely at the outset of war to use every endeavour to cripple our sea power, for which purpose all his armoured cruisers as well as his battleships will be required. Even when his battleships have been reduced to inactivity, there will still remain more urgent and suitable strategic tasks for those of his cruisers which are armoured, than attacks on distant defended ports. The experience of the recent Russo-Japanese war confirms the evidence afforded by the Spanish-American war of 1898 as to the improbability of any such employment of this important type of warship, which costs almost, if not quite, as much as a battleship, and takes as long to build. Thus in 1898 when Admiral Cervera's squadron was despatched across the Atlantic, there was never the slightest intention on the part of the Spanish naval authorities to attack the coast towns of the United States. Again, the rôle of the powerful squadron of armoured cruisers which was based on Vladivostock throughout 1904 was to interrupt the lines of communication of the expeditionary armies, and their feverish movements and eventual fate illustrate the precarious situation of the cruisers of a Power inferior at sea, even when acting from a near and secure base. It is worthy of notice also that the attacks on the Japanese transports would have been more serious if the Russian cruisers could have dispersed, but the strong probability of being destroyed singly if met by the Japanese cruiser squadron compelled them to keep together, and so to sacrifice the principle of ubiquity which has been considered the most formidable characteristic of cruiser raids. The recent changes in the distribution of the Royal Navy, which have aimed at disposing our forces in peace in the manner most likely to prove effective in war, have involved the formation of powerful squadrons of armoured cruisers. These changes, and the large number of modern vessels of this type of which this country is now possessed, have an important bearing on the question of the limitations attaching to the action of an enemy's armoured cruisers.

On the whole, it may now safely be assumed that the exigencies of modern naval warfare will, in all reasonable probability, compel an enemy to reserve his armoured cruisers for the more important strategical operations such as working with his battle fleets, operating against our detached squadrons, protecting his own commerce, and, in short, operating against other warships, and not against land defences. The employment of armoured cruisers, as of battleships, in Australian waters is not a contingency which in the light of present and future

naval developments, as far as can now be judged, need reasonably be expected.

If raiding attacks on Australian ports are attempted, the classes of vessels employed will, therefore, in all probability be those which are of small value for the major operations of naval warfare, such as unarmoured cruisers or armed merchant auxiliaries.

The number of vessels which may be expected to operate together must be small, since the main hope of success will lie in suddenness of execution and in ability to elude observation and avoid opposition by even an inferior naval force while the operations are in progress. The assumption on which Australian armaments have hitherto generally been based is that the number may be limited to a maximum of three or four, and nothing has occurred in recent naval warfare to give ground for supposing that this is other than a liberal estimate.

The number of men that three or four cruisers could disembark for a raid depends upon the following considerations. If only the normal complements are borne, it is estimated that the total number available would usually not exceed five hundred men. It is not unlikely, however, that raiders despatched to so great a distance from their base as Australia would carry numbers surplus to the complement in order to replace casualties and wastage, and these would be available to reinforce the landing party. An enemy willing to incur the very serious danger of losing his ships entailed by operations in these distant seas might not hesitate to risk a few hundred additional men in the enterprise, and although it may reasonably be assumed that the raiders would not hamper themselves by the presence of unarmed transports, and that every vessel must form a fighting unit, the embarkation of a limited number of troops in the cruisers for the express purpose of raids on ports cannot be excluded from the range of possible contingencies. On the other hand, it is clear that the necessity for keeping the ships at all times ready to fight an action, and the great importance of carrying large supplies of coal and ammunition, would militate against overcrowding the decks of the three or four unarmed vessels postulated.

For purposes of calculation, therefore, it may be assumed that the landing parties disembarked for a raid on an Australian port might reach a total of 1000 men at the outside. The strength and disposition of the force required to meet this attack will vary at different ports, according to the topographical conditions.

Standard of coast defences at Australian ports.

10. In determining the standard of the gun defences required at Australian ports, it is necessary to bear in mind that a most powerful deterrent to attack in these remote waters will be the probability of sustaining injury affecting the fighting efficiency or seaworthiness of the ships at a distance from any place where repairs could be effected.

The nearest foreign ports which at present possess the qualifications of naval bases are more than 4000 miles distant from the chief Australian ports. At such a distance from bases of repair and refitting and depots of ammunition and stores, the consequences of even partial disablement would be extremely serious, while considerations of ammunition supply will preclude an enemy from attempting to effect his object by a long-range bombardment. In considering this question of long-range fire it is necessary to avoid fallacious applications of the experience of recent naval actions. A ship at sea at a range of 10,000 yards or more constitutes a distinct target admitting of accuracy of aim and correction of sighting by observation of the effects of fire. The case is widely different if the target is a dock, or a ship lying in a harbour, which may not be clearly distinguishable from seaward, or even exposed to view at all. Failing the means of careful observation of the effects of fire, no serious damage could be expected from firing the limited amount of ammunition available, and the attacking vessels would have to approach to a distance measured not by the theoretical extreme range of their guns, but by the possibility of correcting their fire by observation. Here they would be exposed to great risk of disablement, especially if the enemy's targets were a long distance in rear of the coast defences.

It follows from these considerations, and from the nature of probable attack discussed in paragraph 9, that the type of gun selected for the defence of Australian ports should have great rapidity of fire and accuracy, with as large shell power as is obtainable without sacrifice of these essentials, but that it is unnecessary and inadvisable to seek after very long range and high power of penetrating armour protection. These latter qualities are not required, and could not be obtained without increasing calibre; and as calibre increases, handiness and speed of fire are lost, and the cost of guns, mountings, and emplacements rises rapidly. The chief defects of the armaments of Australian ports in the past have been want of homogeneity, and deficiencies in the accessories on which the value of modern guns is mainly dependent. By restricting the guns in future to a single and moderate calibre, and ensuring the completeness of their equipment, the Commonwealth Government will secure economy, efficiency, and simplicity, both in armaments and in arrangements for ammunition supply. For the armaments of those of the Imperial defended ports, abroad as well as at home, where the attack to be provided against is of the same nature as that to which the ports of Australia are liable, the 6-inch gun of the latest pattern is accepted, with the approval of the Committee of Imperial Defence, as the weapon which best fulfils requirements. This gun has a rate of fire of six rounds per minute, and a range at 10 deg. elevation of 9050 yards, as compared with a rate of fire of only three rounds a minute and a range

at 10 deg. elevation of 11,700 yards for the 7·5-inch gun, the next higher calibre. It has not been considered that the increase of range and armour penetration compensates for the great loss of rapidity, and this calibre has not been introduced into the Imperial land service in which there is now no gun intermediate between the 9·2-inch, which is mounted where the power to attack armour is considered essential, and the 6-inch, which is used where the most likely enemy will be unarmoured vessels.

It is not necessary to provide light armament against attacks by torpedo craft on merchant vessels lying in harbour. To sink such vessels without at least warning and examination would not be a legitimate operation of modern warfare, and the difficulty of distinguishing neutral ships would be a serious consideration. It may, moreover, be assumed that the mere destruction of a few merchantmen would not be considered a sufficient inducement for such an employment of torpedo craft, whose proper rôle is the attack of warships. His Majesty's ships are at all times prepared to defend themselves against attack by carried torpedo-boats, and in Australian ports they are secure from attack by sea-going torpedo craft by reason of the distance of all possible hostile torpedo flotilla bases. Boom defences are not necessary or advisable for enclosing portions of Australian harbours, but the actual dock and lock gates, where they exist, should be protected by any suitable contrivance which will prevent injury by a Whitehead torpedo, or by the application of explosive charges in any other form.

Electric lights will be required at most ports to aid the gun defences.

Submarine mine-fields at present exist at some of the Australian ports, but this form of defence is being discontinued at all ports in Imperial charge as a result of the consideration by the Committee of Imperial Defence of the general policy of submarine mining in relation to coast defence. The adoption of the same course has recently been recommended to the Governments of Canada and New Zealand, and is now recommended in the case of Australian ports. The submarine mining service has always been a very technical one, and in the past it has been possible to draw on the experience of a numerous *personnel* employed at many defended ports for the highly qualified experimental and administrative staffs, which have been indispensable for its direction. But even with the very complete system of instructional manuals and circulars issued from army headquarters, it has been found difficult to secure uniform efficiency at outlying ports to which the central inspection and control did not fully extend. It is scarcely necessary to point out the disastrous effect on maritime trade that would be produced in time of war by any untrustworthiness, or even suspicion of untrustworthiness, of the submarine mining defences of ports frequented by our shipping. Nothing but the highest degree

of efficiency would suffice, and all experience goes to show that this could not be maintained at a small number of isolated ports, even with selected *personnel* of high individual capacity. It is therefore recommended that this form of defence should be discontinued in Australia.

Detailed projects for coast armaments and garrisons.

11. Detailed projects for the revision of the gun defences and electric lights at each Australian defended port, and for the provision of necessary accessories, together with directions to guide the preparation of artillery and engineer manning tables for the works, and estimates of the infantry garrisons required for the defended ports and outlying cable landing places, have been printed in a separate secret Memorandum.

III.—Organisation of the Military Forces

Field and garrison troops.

12. The military forces of the Commonwealth are correctly divided into two categories, viz., field units brigaded in a field force organisation, and garrison troops allotted for the defence of particular localities.

Under the existing organisation the garrison troops are subdivided into two portions, called the 'district reserves' and the 'garrisons for forts.' There appears to be no strategical justification for this arrangement, and it is recommended that, after provision has been made for the actual garrisons of the defended ports and for the detachments guarding outlying cable stations, all other units of Militia and Volunteers should be included in the field force organisation.

Organisation of garrison troops.

13. It is very desirable that the garrisons of defended ports, and those allotted to cable landing places, should, wherever practicable, be raised locally, in order that the coast artillery and engineers may be constantly trained at the guns and electric lights they will man in war, and that the mobile portion of the garrison may be thoroughly acquainted with the local topography.

It will not be possible to bring up troops from a distance in time to prevent a rapidly executed raiding attack, and the garrison allotted for the protection of each defended port must be capable of repelling the attack without external aid.

Purpose of field force organisation.

14. The principle governing the maintenance of field troops has already been discussed in paragraph 2. A field force organisation in Australia provides a school of training in field units and higher formations, as distinguished from sedentary garrison service, and is a necessary factor in a complete system of national military training, especially in a country where no regular troops are maintained. In Australia it has been wisely decided to proceed from a basis of cadet training,

through training according to arm in the military unit, to combined training when brigaded in the higher formation. This system will diffuse among an increasing proportion of the population the knowledge and discipline which distinguish an army from an armed mob. Each unit and brigade will serve not only as a training school, but also as a pattern to be multiplied indefinitely in case of necessity. The peace unit should be the nucleus round which the materials for war expansion would be formed under a system of territorialisation, which will enlist to the full local effort and interest. A sound foundation will thus be laid in time of peace for the development of the national resources to meet a national crisis. The influence of sea power may prolong the period available after the outbreak of a great war for the expansion and training of land forces, and may transfer the scene of the decisive land battles to foreign soil, but it cannot by itself decide the issue of a war for national existence, which must in the last resort depend on the action of fully developed citizen forces. The main object of a field force organisation of part of the Militia in Australia is to supply the basis for expansion in case of grave national emergency.

Brigade organisation.

15. The system of organising the field units into brigades of light horse and infantry appears to be well adapted to the circumstances of the Commonwealth. At present there are nine of these brigades, six of light horse and three of infantry. The proportion of mounted to dismounted riflemen has the advantage of giving scope for the special qualifications for mounted service which have been so conspicuously displayed by Australians. In the allotment of units to the brigades every effort has rightly been made to form a complete brigade from units belonging to a single military district. Six of the present brigades are thus formed, but the remaining three brigades are made up of units drawn from two or more military districts, and can only be regarded as formations on paper. Having regard to difficulties of intercommunication, it seems unlikely that the brigadier would ever have an opportunity of training his brigade as such. Moreover, the organisation of units from two or more districts into one brigade might easily lead to a dual responsibility with its attendant drawbacks. It is true that this paper organisation of scattered units into brigades of the normal Australian pattern has the advantage of maintaining a uniform proportion between the different fighting arms and the very important but less popular departmental services, but there is no reason why this principle should be lost sight of so long as the brigades formed entirely in single districts remain as models of the fighting formations adopted by the Commonwealth. It is very desirable that the ultimate goal of organising and training all field units in normal brigades confined to their own districts should be kept in view. Until that object is attained it is recommended that

the field units surplus to the district brigade or brigades in the larger districts should be affiliated to one or other of the district brigades, and that the field units in each of the smaller districts should be grouped and trained together as a mixed force if they are insufficient to form a complete district brigade of normal composition.

Peace and war establishments.

16. As regards peace and war establishments, the arrangements at present in force have the grave defect that half of the war establishment of the light horse and infantry, and an even larger proportion of the artillery *personnel*, are to be introduced into the ranks for the first time on mobilisation. Such an arrangement is to be deprecated in any military force, and especially so where, as in the case of the Commonwealth Militia, the amount of military training is exceedingly limited. It is recognised, however, that the objections to such a course are, to some extent, diminished by the arrangement under which officers and non-commissioned officers are maintained in peace on practically a war establishment, and it is no doubt the case that in the country corps commanding officers might, owing to sparsity of population, find it exceedingly difficult to keep in touch with all portions of their units, if these were maintained in peace at a strength equal to war establishment.

Nevertheless, it should be possible to increase considerably the efficiency of units on mobilisation without introducing drastic changes into the existing organisation. Every opportunity should be taken of increasing the peace establishments of units already allotted to brigades, instead of creating new cadres, and the troops which now form the 'district reserves,' if not required to complete the garrisons recommended elsewhere for defended ports, should be absorbed into the brigade organisation. The men introduced on mobilisation to raise units from peace to war establishment, instead of being drawn entirely and indiscriminately from the rifle clubs, should be drawn from two classes, viz. (1) men who within three years previous to mobilisation have completed the third consecutive training in the active Militia or Volunteers, and (2) members of rifle clubs classified at the time as 'marksmen.' Lastly, it must be pointed out that the present annual period in camp, which alone offers any opportunity of a systematic training with the other arms, is very short, and should, if possible, be extended to at least ten days.

The field battery is the unit in which an increase of peace establishment is most required. Unless the gun detachments are thoroughly efficient at their drill, and the gun layers and fuse setters absolutely trustworthy, it is impossible for the most expert commanding officer to obtain effective results. Efficiency can only be attained if the battery is regularly drilled with full detachments, and this fact points to the desirability of raising batteries in towns rather

than in the country districts. It is recommended that batteries should throughout be limited to four guns; this is better fitted to the conditions of the Australian Militia than a six-gun organisation, and is well adapted to the Q.F. equipment now being introduced.

No force can keep the field without an ammunition column, but it appears that so far no arrangements have been made for supplying these essential units on mobilisation. Under Australian conditions, it is unnecessary to maintain the requisite *personnel* in peace, but the ammunition wagons with limbers and spare gun carriages should be provided in peace as 'mobilisation equipment.' The locally available equivalents of such vehicles as general service wagons and forage carts may, in the case of these as of all other field units, be left to be procured on mobilisation. Suitable arrangements must be worked out for providing the requisite officers, non-commissioned officers, men, and horses, for these columns on mobilisation. The *personnel* of all ranks should, as far as possible, be composed of officers and men who have previously served in the artillery, and will thus be qualified to fill casualties in the ranks of the batteries. This requirement affords an additional reason for a considerable increase in the peace establishment of a field battery.

Under present arrangements a brigade of light horse contains one six-gun battery, and a brigade of infantry three four-gun batteries, two of which are armed with the 18-pr. Q.F. gun, while the third is to be armed in one case with guns of position, and in another with howitzers. In the case of the infantry brigade this gives a smaller proportion of guns to rifles than is normal in modern armies. In a British army corps the average is somewhat over 5 guns per 1000 rifles, heavy guns being provided in the proportion of 1, and howitzers in the proportion of 1·5, to every 10 of the horse and field guns. It is, however, considered far more important that the existing Australian batteries should be given larger peace establishments than that any immediate effort should be made to increase the proportion of guns to rifles.

The shortage of peace as compared with war establishment can, in the case of the light horse, be remedied by adopting for war the establishment of the home Imperial Yeomanry. A regiment of Australian Light Horse on the present peace establishment of 296 all ranks would then be raised in war to 476 instead of to 583.

Two machine-guns should form part of the equipment of each regiment of light horse and battalion of infantry.

Rifle clubs.

17. With regard to rifle clubs, which form part of the military system of the Commonwealth, it is believed that much good would result from a system of affiliating each club to a neighbouring Militia unit. These clubs are of value in affording facilities to acquire pro-

ficiency in the use of the rifle to men who for one reason or another cannot belong to a Militia unit. It must, however, be remembered that the drill and discipline which can alone turn rifle shooting to good account on the battle-field cannot be acquired from membership in a rifle club, which can never be looked upon as an effective substitute for the military training afforded by service in the Militia. If the rifle clubs are affiliated to Militia units and administered under the supervision of the officers commanding these units, such a measure should tend to more economical and effective administration as regards rifle ranges, and to the simplification of arrangements on mobilisation, while promoting a spirit of comradeship and mutual interest between the two branches. If, as has been suggested above, a 'reserve' is formed of ex-militia-men undertaking to join their units on mobilisation should the occasion arise within two years of their completing their training in the active Militia, one condition of service in the reserve should be membership during that period in the rifle club affiliated to their unit, so that their proficiency with the rifle may be maintained.

Summary of recommendations as to organisation of military forces.

18. The recommendations made above respecting the organisation of the military forces may be summarised as follows :—

(1) Garrisons to be recruited locally as far as possible.
(2) The only organised brigades retained to be those which are, or can be, formed exclusively from units in a single military district. Other units either to be attached for administration and training to brigades in their own districts, or, in the less populous districts, to be administered and trained as mixed forces.
(3) Units now classed as 'district reserves' to be absorbed into the field units.
(4) A Militia reserve to be formed to provide, together with marksmen from the rifle clubs, the additional *personnel* required on mobilisation to raise units from peace to war establishment.
(5) The peace establishment of units, especially in the case of artillery, to be gradually raised.
(6) The annual training camp to be extended to ten days.
(7) Provision to be made for ammunition columns.
(8) The war establishment of a regiment of light horse to be reduced to 476 all ranks.
(9) Each regiment of light horse and battalion of infantry to be equipped with two machine-guns.
(10) Rifle clubs to be affiliated to Militia units.

IV.—Local Naval Defence

Local naval defence.

19. The subject of the provision of local naval defence for ports, harbours, and coastal trade is discussed in a Memorandum (Commonwealth Parliamentary Paper No. 66 of 1905) by Captain Creswell, Director of Naval Forces, which is forwarded for the information of the Committee of Imperial Defence, who are requested to consider these matters, as the sentiment in favour of the development of the maritime resources of Australia is one which, in the opinion of the Commonwealth Government, deserves and will repay encouragement.

Captain Creswell's proposals contemplate the provision of a separate Navy for the Commonwealth, comprising :—

3 Cruiser destroyers,[1]
16 Torpedo-boat destroyers,
15 Torpedo-boats (1st and 2nd class),

the acquisition of this force to be extended over a period of seven years, at a cost which he estimates at £2,300,000 for construction and maintenance of vessels alone.

As regards *personnel*, he estimates that an addition of 456 will be needed to the permanent forces, and 466 to the naval militia.

The rôle of this Navy is described as follows :—

'This will provide a defence not designed as a force for action against hostile fleets or squadrons, which is the province of the Imperial fleet, but as a line necessary to us within the defence line of the Imperial fleet—a purely defensive line, that will give security to our naval bases, populous centres, principal ports, and commerce.'

These proposals appear to be based upon an imperfect conception of the requirements of naval strategy at the present day, and of the proper application of naval force.

The services which, it is claimed, will be rendered by the proposed destroyers are to contribute to the security of defended ports and to the protection of floating trade.

Having regard to the nature of the attack to which Australian ports are liable (considered in paragraphs 6 to 10), the benefits to be rendered to the coast defence by destroyers appear altogether incommensurate with the expenditure that would be entailed by their maintenance. The Australian ports have already been provided with works and armaments, and the comparatively inexpensive revision now recommended will bring them up to modern requirements. The deterrent effect exercised by these defences, manned by vigilant local forces, may confidently be expected to exclude raiding cruisers

[1] It is not clear what type of vessel is indicated by this designation. It is presumed that it represents a new class of warship of the destroyer type with increased tonnage and coal endurance.

from the harbours of the Commonwealth by night as well as by day, while the defence against the landings possible from such cruisers can, with equal safety and economy of force, be entrusted to small infantry garrisons.

The protection of Australian floating trade, whether on the high seas or in local waters, demands for its effective accomplishment, as explained in paragraphs 3 to 5, the closely concerted action of powerful sea-going ships. Localised vessels of the destroyer type could play no effective part in securing this object.

There is therefore no strategical justification from either point of view for the creation at great expense of a local force of destroyers—a type of vessel designed for totally different uses. If in the future strategical conditions should ever so far alter as to necessitate the provision of warships of this type in Australian waters, it would devolve upon the Admiralty to provide them as part of their general responsibility for the strategical distribution of the naval forces of the Empire. Should this necessity arise, it will no doubt be advantageous that these vessels should be manned by Australians trained in sea-going fleets under the Naval Agreement. At present, however, no such strategical necessity exists, or threatens.

It may be added that the employment of a naval force as 'a purely defensive line' is a misapplication of maritime power opposed to every sound principle of naval strategy. To act deliberately on the defensive, and to organise naval forces with this object in view, is to adopt voluntarily the policy which is of necessity forced upon the weaker naval Power. Australia need not be reduced to assuming such a rôle so long as she is a member of an Empire which is the strongest naval Power in the world, and which extends naval protection not only to the homeland and to the most distant of the King's dominions beyond the seas, but also to all commerce sailing under the British flag.

The policy of devoting the entire naval forces of the Empire to seeking out and destroying the ships of the enemy wherever they may be is that which will best ensure not only the safety of floating trade, but also the immunity from attack of coast towns and harbours, and, if this policy is to be properly and efficiently carried out, the Royal Navy must be one and undivided. Unity of training and unity of command can alone ensure that thorough co-operation which is essential. A separate Australian Navy could not find in any effective organisation of the naval forces of the Empire a rôle commensurate with the cost of its creation and maintenance or worthy of the aptitude for sea service of the inhabitants of the island-continent. The existing Australian floating defences, consisting entirely of obsolete vessels, were originally provided mainly with a view to co-operation in local defence, and, although their value for this purpose was never

great, the Colonial Defence Committee have hitherto hesitated to recommend the extinction of the local naval forces, which afforded the only means of satisfying the inclination of Australians for service afloat, and of giving some effect to the desire in Australia to make some contribution in men as well as money to the naval strength of the Empire. The natural and legitimate aspiration in Australia to furnish a distinctively Australian element to the sea power of the Empire will find a satisfactory realisation in increasing degree when the scheme, still in its infancy, initiated by the Naval Agreement of 1903, has had time to take full effect. The preamble of the Agreement recognises, on the one hand, the necessity of a single Navy, and, on the other, the advantages which will be derived from developing the sea power of Australia. Article 5 provides for the manning by Australians of a certain number of ships; Article 6 secures that, in the future, there will be a steady supply of officers of Australian birth, who will be able to rise to the highest posts in the Royal Navy; and Article 7 establishes a branch of the Royal Naval Reserve in Australia. In the future it may be expected that an increasing number of ships, specially manned and officered by Australians, will be included in the fleets and squadrons of the Royal Navy. This will, in time of peace, ensure wide opportunities of training, and, by the healthy spirit of emulation induced, will enhance the fighting value of the units to a degree unattainable in a small Navy; while, in the event of war, these ships will represent Australia, and enable her to take a more worthy share in the operations than if her naval activity were confined to guarding against problematical attacks on her coasts.

LIBRARY OF THE BOMBAY BRANCH OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY

MEMORANDUM BY THE CHIEF OF THE GENERAL STAFF AND OF THE COMMONWEALTH SECTION OF THE IMPERIAL GENERAL STAFF, 1ST JULY 1909 TO 30TH JUNE 1910.

Headquarters, Melbourne, 8th July, 1910.

The following is a *résumé* of the work of the General Staff and the Commonwealth Section of the Imperial General Staff (1st July 1909—30th June 1910), with a review of the principles upon which it has been based.

1. *The need for a General Staff* 'selected from the Forces of the Empire as a whole' was affirmed by the Imperial Conference which met in London, in 1907—the duties in time of peace being defined as follows:—

> 'To study Military Science in all its branches; to collect and disseminate to the various Governments military information and intelligence; to undertake the preparation of schemes of defence on a common principle, and (without in the least interfering with questions connected with command and administration), at the request of the respective Governments, to advise as to the training, education, and war organisation of the Military Forces of the Crown in every part of the Empire.'

Consequent on this Conference, I was sent, in August 1908, to the War Office to 'confer with the General Staff as to the way of making an immediate beginning for the formation of an Australian Section of the Imperial General Staff.'

Definite proposals to give effect to the resolutions of the Conference were drawn up by the Chief of the General Staff, General Sir William Nicholson, G.C.B., in a memorandum, dated 7th December 1908.

This memorandum stated that 'the General Staff must be an entity throughout the Empire, and to make it so all its members ought to be uniformly trained in principles and practice in one school, under one head.'

While suggesting 'that each self-governing Dominion should arrange as soon as possible to prepare and send a suitable number of

officers to undergo a Staff College Course at Camberley, or Quetta, or at the local Staff Colleges; which it is hoped may soon be established,' the necessity for the immediate creation of an Imperial General Staff was admitted, in view of the contemplated expansion on new principles of the Military Forces of certain oversea Dominions, and the present means and how best to use them to bring such a Staff into being, were considered.

The draft proposals contained in this memorandum formed the basis for consideration and discussion at the War Office by the General Staff and Oversea Delegates, and finally certain broad principles and duties for the Imperial General Staff were defined and agreed to. The local application of these principles was left to the respective Governments.

Subsequently, and after consultation with the War Office authorities, Officers of the General Staff, General Officers Commanding in the United Kingdom, and also full inquiry into the system and the actual working of the General Staff, both in commands and at manœuvres, proposals were drawn up by me with regard to the formation of a Commonwealth Section of the Imperial General Staff. These proposals, with a few minor alterations, were concurred in by the Chief of the General Staff at the War Office.

After return to Australia, I was appointed Chief of the General Staff, and also Chief of the Commonwealth Section, Imperial General Staff, from 1st July 1909.

Allotment of Duties of Staff

Duties of Staff approved.

2. Approval was then given to my proposals, the Department was organised, and duties (M.O. 320/1909), based on the accepted principles, approved :—

COMMONWEALTH SECTION OF THE IMPERIAL GENERAL STAFF

At Headquarters

Chief of the Commonwealth Section—Imperial General Staff

Organisation for war. Plans of concentration for war. Intelligence concerning the Commonwealth. Preparation and maintenance of Defence Scheme.

Training and instruction. Supervision and inspection of training at camps, manœuvres, etc. Education and examination for promotion of officers. Recommendation for appointment to and promotion of officers of Commonwealth Section of Imperial General Staff.

Field operations and promulgation of operation orders. Schemes

for manœuvres and staff rides. Drill books and training manuals. General Staff libraries. Preparation of maps.

Advice upon raising and disbanding of units. Censorship in time of war.

Director of Defence Organisation

Organisation and plans of concentration for war. Defence schemes for the Commonwealth. Strategical and tactical reconnaissances.

Director of Military Training

Training and instruction of all arms. Education and examination for promotion of officers. Arrangement of classes of instruction. Conduct of examination of officers for Staff College, and for appointment to Permanent Forces.

Schemes for manœuvres and staff rides. Drill books and training manuals.

Advice upon the acquisition of training grounds and ranges.

Advice upon the allotment of funds for training and manœuvres.

Director of Intelligence

Intelligence. Preparation and issue of maps. Headquarters Library.

In Districts

Officers of the Commonwealth Section of the Imperial General Staff will, under the respective Commandants, carry out the duties in Districts corresponding to those laid down for the Commonwealth Section of the Imperial General Staff at Headquarters.

SUB-CONFERENCE ON MILITARY DEFENCE.—LONDON, 1909

Recommendations of Sub-Conference, 10th August 1909.

3. The recommendations of the Sub-Conference on Military Defence, London, dated 10th August 1909, supplementing the proposals of 1908, in regard to the work of local sections of the Imperial General Staff, were received just prior to my departure to Port Darwin to meet Field-Marshal Lord Kitchener. They had practically, however, already been embodied in the work carried out by the Commonwealth Section of the Imperial General Staff.

The organisation of the Commonwealth section as recommended by the Conference, divided the Directorate of Military Training into two branches—(*a*) Training, and (*b*) Staff Duties.

Local experience and the expansion of the work in the section had proved that the duties of this branch were too much for one officer to carry out.

The Conference also recommended that the designation of the 'Defence Organisation' Directorate be changed to that of 'Operations.'

The necessary amendments to give effect to the above recommendations were therefore submitted. (Cor. 1804/2/92.)

Office Accommodation

Office accommodation for General Staff.

4. Owing to the office accommodation at Headquarters being fully utilised, some difficulty was found in obtaining suitable offices for the General Staff, and in order to overcome this, I vacated the quarters occupied by me, which are occupied by the General Staff, and are in the same building as the remainder of the Headquarter Offices.

Appointments to Staff

Personnel of Staff.

5. (i.) Chief of the General Staff and Chief of the Commonwealth Section, Imperial General Staff (Major-General J. C. Hoad, C.M.G.

Director of Defence Organisation. (This position has not been filled, *vide* (iii.)).

Director of Military Training (Major F. A. Wilson, D.S.O., an Imperial exchange officer replacing Captain C. B. B. White, Commonwealth Forces, who is attached to the War Office as General Staff Officer, 3rd grade).

Director of Intelligence (Colonel the Hon. J. W. M'Cay., V.D., who is also the Officer Commanding the Australian Intelligence Corps).

Owing to the development of the work of the General Staff, the services of additional officers were urgently required, and the undermentioned officers were temporarily detailed from 1st April 1910:—

Captain (Tempy. Major) J. E. Robertson, R.A.A., to assist the Director of Military Training.

Captain (Hon. Major) F. J. Hayter, Administrative and Instructional Staff, to assist the Director of Defence Organisation.

Their appointments as 3rd Grade General Staff Officers, from 1st July 1910, have now been approved by the Minister.

(ii.) It is not proposed for the present to appoint General Staff Officers to Districts.

Director of Defence Organisation.

(iii.) There has been unexpected delay in making the appointment of Director of Defence Organisation and, consequently, much work has had to stand over. It is understood that it has been decided to appoint Lieut.-Colonel J. G. Legge temporarily to this position, in addition to his duties as Quartermaster-General; it being thought advisable, in view of the work of organisation which falls to the General

Staff in connection with the introduction of universal service, also the division of the Commonwealth into military areas and the framing of Regulations, that an officer with an intimate knowledge of local conditions should be appointed.

The initial work in connection with the detail on which the Defence Bill of 1909 was based and, for the last six months, the preliminary work of organisation in anticipation of any action that may be taken on Lord Kitchener's recommendations, has been done by Colonel Legge. This has entailed most arduous and continuous work.

Council of Defence

6. The powers and functions of the Council of Defence are defined as follows :— Council of Defence. No meetings held.

C.M.R. 1. 'The Council of Defence inquires into, discusses, and records opinions upon matters submitted to it by the Minister affecting—

(*a*) The general policy of the Naval and Military Defence of the Commonwealth.

(*b*) Measures necessary for the defence of the Commonwealth in time of war.

(*c*) The total expenditure on defence and its distribution.'

No meetings of this Council were held whilst I was Inspector-General (from 1st January 1907 to 30th June 1909), and a meeting has not been held since my appointment as Chief of the General Staff.

Defence Schemes

7. (i.) For the first time since the inauguration of the Commonwealth, the District Defence Schemes were brought to such a state of completion as admitted of their being printed and forwarded in December last to the War Office for remarks. Preparation and revision of Defence Schemes.

The schemes, although yet incomplete in some detail, form a basis for elaboration, and are sufficiently complete to permit details connected with the mobilisation of *personnel* and *matériel* being worked out. The compilation of mobilisation orders for *personnel* (Adjutant-General's Branch), and also *matériel* (Quartermaster-General's Branch) is now almost completed.

The procedure with regard to the method of dealing with the schemes has also been laid down, and District Defence Committees appointed in all States.

C.M. Standing Order 4 provides :—

'District Commandants will revise annually the schemes for the defence of the fortresses or defended ports under their

command, and will render to the Military Board on 1st January a report that this has been done, together with copies of their revised schemes, and this report shall be submitted for the consideration of the Military Board.'

Now that the schemes are in print, this order should be strictly adhered to in future.

(ii.) A Committee has been appointed, consisting of a representative from the Commonwealth Naval Forces, the General Staff, and the Postal Department, to discuss details and draft proposals of a scheme for utilisation of existing telegraph lines for military purposes during war, and also distribution of postal matter.

ORGANISATION

Tables of Organisation.

8. (i.) A new edition of the Tables of Organisation and Distribution of the Commonwealth Military Forces, superseding the Tables issued in 1909, was published in February 1910.

Changes of Organisation.

(ii.) Changes in organisation of the under-mentioned units have been approved :—

New South Wales.—1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th and 6th A.L.H. Regiments.
Victoria.—8th A.L.H. Regiment.
Queensland.—13th and 15th A.L.H. Regiments, 1st Batt. Wide Bay Infantry Regiment.
Western Australia.—18th A.L.H. Regiment.
Tasmania.—12th A.L.H. Regiment, Tasmanian Rangers.

And the following new units have been raised :—

No. 6 L.H. Transport and Supply Column, A.A.S.C., South Australia.
No. 4 Electric Coy., C. of A.E., Western Australia.

REORGANISATION OF THE ARTILLERY

R.A.A.

9. (i.) Proposals for the reorganisation of the Royal Australian Artillery have been approved. Lt.-Colonel R. Wallace, R.A.A., in addition to his duties as Chief of Ordnance, has been appointed Officer Commanding Royal Australian Artillery for the Commonwealth. The appointment was much needed. There were really six separate commands in the Regiment, *i.e.*, one in each State, and there was no guarantee that the administration and the interior economy of the Regiment were uniform throughout; in fact, questions raised from time to time have shown that they were not so. The principal duties of the O.C., R.A.A., are to be those of co-ordination of administration, training, and inspection; and following on this, he should be in a position to judge the capabilities of the *personnel* as a whole,

and make recommendations, etc., which will be in the best interests of the Service and of the Regiment in particular.

Re-allotment of the A.G.A.

(ii.) Investigation of the Manning Tables of the Defended Ports of the Commonwealth disclosed the fact that the Australian Garrison Artillery in Victoria might be reduced by at least two hundred all ranks, and that sufficient *personnel* would still remain for the approved number of reliefs for the service armament.

Recruiting was therefore suspended, and early in June the Corps was 101 below establishment. It may be expected that the discharges for non-effectiveness will still further reduce the strength.

It was at first proposed that the saving thus effected should be utilised towards defraying the cost of two batteries of Australian Field Artillery (18-pr. Q.F. guns). These two batteries were to be allotted —one to the 1st Infantry Brigade, N.S.W., and the other to the 2nd Infantry Brigade, Victoria, to take place of the 5″ B.L. Howitzer and 4·7″ Q.F. batteries which were to be included in the 'unallotted units.'

Formation of Permanent Field Artillery Batteries.

The proposal was approved, but, in the meantime, the alteration of Section 32 of the Defence Acts 1903-4 to the extent of permitting the formation of Permanent Field Artillery Batteries necessitated a reconsideration of the subject.

(iii.) I then recommended the establishment of two Permanent Field Batteries in lieu of the two Militia Batteries, and the absorption therein of the existing R.A.A. Instructional Cadres in New South Wales and Victoria.

Approval has been granted for provision to be included in the draft Estimates for these two Batteries which, if formed, will greatly assist in increasing the efficiency of the Militia Field Artillery Batteries, by providing better facilities for all ranks to learn their work, and furnishing a standard.

TRAINING BRANCH

10. I desire to record my high appreciation of the valuable work performed by Major F. A. Wilson, D.S.O., who during the past twelve months has devoted himself unsparingly, not only to the successful performance of the special duties appertaining to his appointment of 'Director of Military Training,' but to the general work of the Staff, which has been handicapped by the position of 'Director of Defence Organisation' remaining unfilled.

Military Education of Officers

Training General Staff Officers.

11. The need for Officers trained as General Staff Officers is urgent. With a view to meeting the proposal contained in memorandum

dated War Office, 7th December 1908, that 'each self-governing Dominion should arrange as soon as possible to prepare and send a suitable number of officers to undergo a Staff College Course at Camberley or Quetta,' arrangements were made for two officers of the Australian Permanent Forces to present themselves for examination in October 1909, for entrance this year to the Staff College, Camberley, England. Both failed to reach the prescribed standard, but special permission was granted for one of these to enter for the course at Camberley, and for the other at Quetta, India.

The examination for entrance next year to Camberley commenced on the 28th ultimo, and the nomination of two Australian officers has been approved. It has, however, been decided that before entrance to the College all officers must pass the qualifying examination. If successful, it is proposed that one should be sent to Camberley and the other to Quetta, the Indian Government having notified that nomination and examination for Camberley will be accepted for Quetta. The Staff College Course covers a period of two years.

Appointment of 'Relieving Officers' recommended.

12. As a certain number of permanent officers will be absent from Australia every year qualifying at the Staff Colleges (Camberley and Quetta), or undergoing special courses of instruction, and, as such officers will not be replaced by officers from abroad, I have recommended the establishment of permanent officers be increased to allow a percentage of officers, who in such cases will be available locally, to act as 'Relieving' officers.

13. The policy of exchange of officers with the British, Indian, and Canadian Forces is being continued.

Exchange officers and officers abroad for training and instruction (Appendix I.).

I wish to again record the opinion that if in future senior officers of the same rank were exchanged, and these officers were to perform the specific duties of the officers whom they temporarily replace in either England, India, Australia, or Canada, much more benefit would accrue to the Service.

In pursuance of the policy of sending selected officers of the Citizen Forces abroad for training, five officers proceeded to India in October last, and have now returned to Australia and resumed duty with their Corps.

All officers abroad for training or instruction furnish a monthly report, from which extracts on questions of general interest are sent to Districts for information.

Examinations for Promotion of Officers of Permanent Forces

APPENDIX II

Examination of officers of the Permanent Forces for promotion.

14. Arrangements have been made with the War Office for officers of the Commonwealth Permanent Forces to undergo the same examina-

tion for promotion as officers of the British and Canadian Forces. The papers are set and marked at the War Office, a common standard of professional attainments being thus secured. The examinations under this arrangement are held in December and May of each year. The first examination was held in December last, and it is gratifying to note that in forwarding the results the following remarks were contained in the covering despatches :—

War Office Despatch, 9.3.1910

'I am able to inform you that, with the exception of the substitution of certain questions in the papers in Military Law, the whole examination, as regards standard of marking, etc., has been carried out in exactly the same manner as that for officers of the Regular Forces examined at the same time.

'Under these circumstances, and especially considering that this is the first examination held under the present system, the Army Council desires to congratulate the majority of the officers concerned on the general results, which compares satisfactorily with that of the Regular Forces examined in England. Out of the seventeen officers examined, only two failed to pass in the subjects taken up by them.'

Secretary of State for the Colonies' Despatch, 11.3.1910

'Your Ministers will, no doubt, observe with satisfaction that, in the opinion of the Army Council, the work done by the Australian officers compares satisfactorily with that of the officers of the Regular Forces in England.'

EXAMINATION OF OFFICERS OF THE CITIZEN FORCES

Examination of officers of Citizen Forces.

15. (i.) As the Brigades, Regiments and Battalions of the Field Force are commanded by officers of the Citizen Forces, the standard of the examination of the tactical fitness to command of these officers (examination for promotion to the rank of Lieut.-Colonel) has been made the same as that for officers of the Permanent Forces.

Examinations conducted from office of C.G.S.

(ii.) Prior to February last the papers for the examination of officers of the Citizen Forces for confirmation of first appointment and for promotion had been set, printed, and marked locally in each District by District Boards. The system was unsatisfactory, as it did not ensure a uniform standard throughout the Commonwealth, and involved much unnecessary work. To remedy this, arrangements were made for the papers to be set and marked by a Central Board, and for the examinations for all officers of the Commonwealth Forces to be arranged and conducted from the office of the Chief of the General Staff.

The examinations take place half-yearly, in February and August, and the first examination under this arrangement was held in February last. A Central Board with representatives from the Districts set

and marked the papers and also arranged as to method of conducting the practical tests in the States so as to secure uniformity.

General criticism on the candidates' answers to examination papers were forwarded to Commandants.

Supervision examinations country districts.

(iii.) In isolated country districts where it is impracticable without expense and inconvenience to arrange for an officer to supervise the theoretical examination of a candidate, the adoption of the principle that arrangements may be made for a Justice of the Peace, Bank Manager, or Clergyman to do so has been approved.

General remarks.

(iv.) The general standard of military education in Australia, although greatly improved during the past few years, is still, in my opinion, below what is necessary.

Knowledge is the keystone of efficiency, and to bring military instruction within reasonable reach of officers of the Citizen Forces is one of the problems which is engaging the earnest attention of the Staff.

Bearing in mind that the time Citizen Officers are able to devote to military study is limited by their civil avocations, it is satisfactory to note that most commendable zeal is exhibited and many sacrifices made by these officers to take advantage of the instruction arranged for them. I consider, however, that there is room for improvement in systematising the instruction as now carried out. This is shown by the results of the last examination. (See Appendix III.)

Courses of Instruction

Courses of instruction.

16. (i.) Reports of all courses of instruction, showing programme of work, number attending, examination papers set at conclusion of course, and results of examination, forwarded from Districts to Headquarters, have been reviewed by the Staff.

(ii.) The Standing Orders in regard to 'Courses of Instruction' have been revised, and the Courses are now classified generally as follows:—

(*a*) 'Refresher Courses' for officers of and above the rank of Major, Staff and specially selected officers.
(4 whole days continuously—minimum, 30 hours.)

(*b*) 'Schools of Instruction' for officers, warrant and non-commissioned officers and men.
(10 days continuously—minimum, 70 hours.)

(*c*) 'Classes of Instruction' for officers, warrant and non-commissioned officers unable to attend a School of Instruction.
(For those who cannot give up 10 whole days continuously.)

Instruction carried out during the hours of early morning, afternoon, or evening, convenient to members attending.

At the conclusion of 'Schools of Instruction' certificates are issued, which are accepted, as prescribed by C.M.R. 106A, in lieu of examination for promotion in certain subjects.

Training Areas

Acquisition of Training Areas.

17. Suitable Training Grounds in each State are much needed. Consequent on closer settlement and increased population, it is apparent that the acquisition of these areas will become each year more difficult and costly.

Arrangements are practically complete for acquiring an area of about 120,000 acres at Liverpool, New South Wales, 30 miles from Sydney, between the main Southern and South Coast railway lines.

Negotiations are proceeding with the Government of the State of Queensland regarding an area of about 23,000 acres at Beerburrum, about 31 miles north of Brisbane, on the North Coast Railway, and with the Government of the State of Western Australia, in regard to an area of about 45,000 acres at Tammin, about 110 miles east of Perth by rail.

Several localities have been reported upon in Victoria, South Australia, and Tasmania, but no extensive area has yet been decided on in these States.

Training and Manœuvres

Camps of Training.

18. (i.) The troops in the various camps of training arranged for Lord Kitchener's inspection were seen under the most unfavourable conditions, in regard to the unsuitable time of the year—*the middle of summer*—the period of training, and, to some extent, muster. From July to December of each year attention is largely concentrated on recruiting in order to fill the places of those found 'inefficient' during the preceding year and those discharged for other reasons, and special attention is also given to the annual Musketry Course, while the first three months of the year (January to March) are largely devoted to preparatory training for the camps which are generally held at Easter.

A similar practice is adopted in England where the 'winter training' is carried out, followed by brigade and divisional training, and Staff tours, in order to prepare the troops for the manœuvres which are usually held in August and September.

Were the troops in England to be taken out for manœuvres *in the middle of winter*, the results could not be expected to be as satisfactory as they are under the present system.

The troops in camp had, unfortunately, been able to do little 'preliminary' field training, and, consequently, were unable to do themselves justice. In future years it is desirable that the annual camps should be held at the conclusion of company and battalion training.

The most noticeable deficiencies in training at the recent camps were—

(*a*) Generally a breakdown of communication throughout the Forces, due chiefly to the absence of trained Regimental Signallers and the failure of officers to recognise the importance, especially in timbered country, of maintaining lateral communication with the units on either flank.

(*b*) Failure on the part of superior commanders to make proper use of their reserves.

(*c*) In some cases the employment of Light Horse in action was faulty. The principle which should guide Light Horse in the attack is that it should engage the enemy by fire, while making the utmost use of its mobility. Any attack undertaken should be pressed with vigour and, where the presence of large numbers of horses precludes formations in depth and gradual building up of the firing line, the mobility of Light Horse must be employed to gain superiority of fire.

Neglect of this principle led to long advances on foot, surrender of mobility, and great exposure of horses.

Reconnaissance in enclosed country generally led to great distribution of force and consequent weakness.

Reconnaissance by means of officers' patrols, while keeping the main body concentrated on one road, does not appear to have been sufficiently studied.

(*d*) Failure of Artillery Commanders to keep in touch with the progress of the fight, and a general disinclination to approach to 'effective' and 'close' ranges.

Although in certain cases artillery is forced to open fire at 'distant' and 'long' ranges, they should, whenever covered approaches are available, be brought up to 'effective' range before opening fire.

(*e*) Lack of inter-communication in the Infantry was noticed on several occasions. Battalions and companies lost their direction, and in heavy timber became separated. The gradual building up of the firing line and employment of reserves was in few cases correctly carried out.

Company officers did not appear always to have their men in hand, probably due to the absence of 'preliminary training.'

(ii.) Generally speaking there was a tendency to attempt, at the first, schemes which were too elaborate, instead of proceeding from the simpler exercises to more advanced work.

Further, the exercises should be fully criticised from day to day,

the whole training culminating as far as possible in a final test of efficiency.

(iii.) Undoubtedly much good would result from an alteration to the Regulations making attendance at Camp compulsory for eight days. This should, in my opinion, *be the minimum period* for which troops are concentrated for continuous training. It has been recommended that pay for eight days should be 'ear-marked' for Camp only, and that 'casual' parades at which pay can be earned should be limited; and also that night parades for pay be much reduced. This should result in increased attendances at the main parades of Regiments and Corps.'

Staff Tours and Regimental Exercises

19. (i.) A Staff Tour, at which the Commandants of New South Wales, Victoria, Queensland, South Australia, and Tasmania, with the Senior Officers of their Staffs, will attend, has been arranged to take place this month. Headquarters Staff Tours.

The organisation of the troops is to be taken as laid down in the Tables of Organisation, and the special object of the Tour is to practise the arrangements necessary for the concentration of troops, the provision of transport, supply and maintenance in the field, and the organisation of lines of communication.

The Tour will be about the border of New South Wales and Victoria, in the vicinity of Albury.

(ii.) Staff Tours were held in New South Wales and Queensland. The work done has been reviewed by the Staff. Staff Tours

(iii.) Regimental exercises are a most valuable adjunct to training, and a sum of money has been placed on the Estimates for 1910-11, with the object of extending such training. Regimental Exercises.

Training Manuals

20. (i.) The Training Manuals of the Army are adopted for all arms of the Australian Forces, with the exception of the Light Horse, for which no suitable manual is published by the War Office, there being no corresponding 'arm' in the British Forces. The manual for the Australian Light Horse is compiled locally. Training Manuals.

A revision of this manual was necessitated by changes in the Imperial manuals, and this work was entrusted to a Committee of which the C.G.S. was president. The revised manual was issued in January last.

(ii.) Approval has been given for the free issue of the Training Manuals of the respective arms to each officer and non-commissioned officer of and above the rank of sergeant in the Commonwealth Military Forces. Free issue of Manuals

Syllabi of Examinations

Revised Syllabi issued.

21. Amendments to the syllabi of the various 'Arms,' consequent on the 'Field Service Regulations' superseding the 'Combined Training,' and revised syllabi for the following examinations have been issued :—

(i.) Promotion of officers to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel.
(ii.) First appointment and transfer to, and confirmation of probationary appointments in, Permanent Forces.
(iii.) Syllabus for the examination for first appointment and promotion of officers of the Citizen Forces up to the rank of Major for all 'arms,' and to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel in the A.A.M.C. and A.A.V.C.

The last-mentioned Syllabus, in addition to the main object of aiming to provide a professional examination, which will be a better test of an officer's fitness for promotion than the syllabi which it superseded, embodies in one publication information concerning all 'arms' which has hitherto been published in separate pamphlets, corrects many anomalies which had existed in the different pamphlets, and makes the general standard more uniform.

Acceptance of Local Educational Examination by the War Office

Local Educational Examinations accepted by Army Council.

22. The Army Council have recently had under consideration the general question of accepting certain local examinations in the Dominions as a test of a 'fair general education' in lieu of 'Leaving Certificate' for Army purposes or an 'Army Qualifying Certificate,' which is required for an officer of the Colonial Military Forces who is a candidate for a commission in the Regular Army on the nomination of the Governor-General.

The Army Council suggested that the Commonwealth section of the Imperial General Staff would be able to advise as to local substitutes for 'leaving' or 'qualifying' certificates, and recommendations have been approved by the Minister and transmitted to the War Office for consideration.

Australian Military College

Military College.

23. Upon the recommendation of the Military Board, a sum was readily placed on the 1909-10 Estimates towards the establishment of a much needed Australian Military College.

Military Libraries

Headquarters Library.

24. (i.) The Headquarters Library has been kept up to date by the addition of the latest manuals and books of military study. It

now comprises a valuable collection; all regulations and manuals therein are amended from time to time. The need for a printed catalogue was much felt, and this has now been compiled and issued.

District Headquarters Library.

(ii.) Although the formation of District Headquarters Libraries was authorised in 1907 and an annual amount provided for the purchase of books in each State, recent inquiries show that in one State a Library had not yet been instituted, and that in other States the fullest use was not made thereof. Instructions have been issued to rectify this. The books in these libraries are now available for use by all officers and non-commissioned officers of the Forces without expense.

Military Magazine

Military Magazine.

25. In connection with the proposed publication and free circulation of a monthly official military magazine, permission has been obtained from various English and American Service Magazines to reprint in the Commonwealth Military Magazine such articles or extracts as may be desired.

INTELLIGENCE BRANCH

Intelligence Diaries.

26. (i.) Monthly Intelligence Diaries are exchanged with India, South Africa, Canada, and New Zealand. Other information is also periodically received from and forwarded to the various sections of the Imperial General Staff, which tends to ensure uniformity of work.

History and Organisation of Intelligence Corps.

(ii.) The work of the Intelligence Branch in Districts is being carried out, under the Director of Intelligence, by the Australian Intelligence Corps, which has a total establishment of 74 officers and a present strength of 60. The formation of the Corps was authorised in December 1907, and the scope of its work was outlined and the establishment fixed in February 1908. The selection of Officers Commanding in Districts and the appointment of the majority of the officers was completed during 1908. During 1909, a special eight (8) day School of Instruction was held by the Officer Commanding the Corps, who is also Director of Intelligence, and the Corps' work began systematically. The work is sectionised and special work allotted to each officer.

The officers of the Corps have been selected because their civil occupations have made them specialists in some department of the work, *e.g.*, surveyors and draughtsmen, for topography; actuaries and library experts, for records; railway officials and controllers of road carrying, etc., for transport; and men with literary training, for compilation of hand-books.

Distribution of Work.

(iii.) The peace work of the Corps is divided into the following four

sections, and all officers are required to be proficient in Section III. and at least one other section :—

I. Commonwealth information, which specifically includes, *inter alia*, all questions of transport by road, rail, and water.
II. Information relating to Countries beyond the Commonwealth.
III. Topography.
IV. Library and records.

Permanent Survey Section.

(iv.) There is a permanent section for survey purposes attached to the Intelligence Corps. The *personnel* consists of—

1 Surveyor.
2 Draughtsmen.
4 N.C.O.'s of the Ordnance Survey Branch of the Royal Engineers.

It is proposed that the Surveyor should be first attached to the Royal Australian Engineers for six months, and then sent abroad for further instruction in military topographical work. It is considered that local men should be attached to the Military Survey Section, and trained to subsequently replace the N.C.O.'s of the Royal Engineers now under engagement with the Department.

Owing to the proposed large increases in defence expenditure in other directions, it was, however, decided that this question must remain in abeyance for the present.

Work being done.

(v.) The following work is being done or being actually arranged by the Corps which, considering its recent establishment, is highly satisfactory, reflecting credit on the Officer Commanding (Colonel M'Cay) and members of the Corps :—

Maps.

(*a*) The Survey Section is engaged in the compilation of contoured maps of selected areas in each district. The first area in each case is near the capital city, and forms part of the general scheme for the preparation ultimately of contoured maps for parts of the Commonwealth which are considered as probable theatres of operations.

Railways.

(*b*) Collection of military data on which description of standard trains for units of all arms mobilised on War Establishments are being agreed on between the Corps and the Railway Departments in each State. This is practically complete in Victoria.

Break-of-gauge schemes.

(*c*) Preparation of plans at break-of-gauge stations and chief railway centres. Preparation of complete schemes for transhipping units and brigades at break-of-gauge stations for which schemes data are now being collected.

(*d*) Preparation of complete railway train and time tables for

assembling and mobilisation of units from their actual locality on both Peace and War strengths at appointed places of assembly on mobilisation, together with alternative schemes for moving troops in various directions more probably required in war; data are now practically ready. Mobilisation and Movement Train Tables.

(*e*) Collection and recording of Australian information of military value, especially auxiliary transport and supply data and statistics. Local Information.

(*f*) Collection and recording of foreign information of military value, especially in the Pacific, which latter is allotted mainly to New South Wales and Queensland District Commands; other foreign information is to be undertaken direct by Corps' Headquarters. This is not yet much developed. Foreign Information.

(*g*) Preparation of a Military Handbook of each State. The draft of Chapter I. is ready in three States, and in preparation in the other three. Handbook.

(*h*) As to classification, indexing, and storing information, a tentative scheme was in partial operation for nine months and was reconsidered and revised at Easter, along with the question of systematically taking out of the records information, of which the value is exhausted except for historical purposes. Record.

(*i*) Road and water transport data collected and reports furnished to Quartermaster-General, on which current road transport experiments and schemes are founded. Further collection of information and inauguration of a register is to proceed this year with a view to ensuring requisitioned transport being specifically secured and allotted to all units. Water transport, harbour and coastal, is being undertaken this year. Road and Water Transport.

(*j*) Topographical and other information and executive duties asked for from time to time by District Commandants for Peace training purposes. Incidental.

(*k*) Monthly intelligence diaries. Diary.

(*l*) Annual central school of instruction in addition to ordinary school for promotion, etc., and annual conference from all States to assist in procuring uniformity of method, classification, etc. Also the leading service journals, general and of each arm, of England, France, Germany, and the United States are taken. A certain number of these are specially assigned to each District Command, which in turn allots each of its journals to a special officer, Instruction.

who reports on his journal, and specially as to any articles particularly useful. These appear in the Corps Intelligence Diary, with instructions as to reading them.

(vi.) It is now intended without delay to have compiled, reproduced, and kept in the office of the Intelligence Branch of the Department of the General Staff, so much of the information at present available in the District Intelligence offices as may affect the general considerations of the Defence of Australia as a whole, as distinct from particular considerations within each District.

Attachment of Military Officer to Commonwealth Staff, London

Services of Officer needed in London.

27. The need of the services in London of an officer with technical qualifications and a thorough knowledge of Australian requirements and of our armament and equipment has been much felt. This officer, in addition to following the progress made with the supply and manufacture of our warlike stores, inspecting them, and seeing to their despatch complete in every detail, is required there to keep in touch with the latest developments, and to be able to anticipate and immediately advise the Department in connection therewith. (Correspondence 1890/1/54.)

I recommended the attachment of an Australian Artillery or Engineer officer, and feel assured that the appointment of Major P. N. Buckley, R.A.E., to the position will be a material assistance to the Department.

Establishment of Imperial Horse-Breeding Stations and Depots in the Commonwealth

Imperial Horse-breeding Stations and Remount Depots in Australia.

28. The Imperial authorities apparently have under consideration the question of the establishment of Horse-breeding Stations and Remount Depots outside the United Kingdom, and it is trusted that the recommendation already submitted by me may be given effect to, that the special suitability of Australia for this purpose should be fully represented, and that the fullest information on the subject should be compiled and forwarded to the War Office.

During the five years 1904 to 1908, Australia exported 66,982 horses, or an average of 13,396 per annum.

The establishment of such stations and depots would give a great impetus to the horse-breeding industry, and ensure attention being paid to the breeding of gun horses, which I am informed on good authority, has been neglected during the past few years in favour of the 'Draught,' 'Cob,' and 'Pony' classes, which have been found more profitable.

Further—horses will be required for the Permanent Field Artillery

and for the Militia Batteries and probably for other Departments, such as the Postal Department.

South African Records

South African War records.

29. The importance of having complete lists of officers, N.C.O.'s, and men of the Australian Contingents sent to South Africa for the purpose of reference for all time, and also as a matter of historical record was apparent.

During the last three or four years I have had such lists compiled, but at present they are only in manuscript. As the permanency of such records is of some importance, it was recommended that they be printed, and the Minister approved of a sum of money being placed on the Estimates for the purpose. Copies of such lists could be made available to the various States and for issue to public libraries.

Visit of Field-Marshal Lord Kitchener

Appendix IV

Information prepared by General Staff.

30. (i.) In anticipation of the visit of Field-Marshal Lord Kitchener, the Staff devoted special attention to the collection, preparation, and compilation of data, in a concise form, concerning Australia and Australian defence, and also to the compilation of special maps. The work was completed in this office prior to the arrival of Colonel G. M. Kirkpatrick, and was taken to Port Darwin.

(ii.) I was deputed by the Government to meet Lord Kitchener at Port Darwin, and accompanied him throughout the tour of inspection in the Commonwealth.

(iii.) Memoranda on Lord Kitchener's memoranda on the defence of Australia formed the subject of a separate communication to the Minister.

Duty Outside the State by the C.G.S.

Appendix V

Particulars of travelling by C.G.S. in States.

31. Appended are particulars of visits to States.

Appendix V.

Pensions or Retiring Allowances

Pensions or retiring allowances advocated.

32. For many years I have strongly advocated the introduction of a scheme which would ensure adequate provision for members of the Forces on retirement.

In pre-Federation days, the absence of such provision greatly militated against the efficiency of the Permanent Services. To ensure efficiency, permanent officers must be both physically and mentally fit, and the age for retirement from active work may therefore be expected to be earlier in the military service.

The large expansion of the Citizen Forces within the next few years, and the adoption of the proposed area system, will throw great responsibility on and require the highest qualifications in the Australian permanent officer. The best brains must be attracted to the service, and an officer will be required to devote his greatest effort, not only to the special work allotted him, but to generally keeping himself up-to-date in military science.

To do this he must be relieved of an anxiety as to provision for the future and the dread of the 'black' letter day when he must stand aside for younger and more virile men.

SUBJECTS ON WHICH ACTION HAS NOT BEEN COMPLETED

Outstanding matters.

33. It is desired to invite attention to important questions which have emanated from this office since the 1st July last, for consideration.

Information concerning these questions will be found in files :—

Secret	1888/1/16
,,	79/14/12
Confidential	1997/5/55
Defence	1844/1/-
,,	1894/5/-

J. C. HOAD,
Chief of the General Staff and the Commonwealth Section, Imperial General Staff.

APPENDIX I

OFFICERS OF THE COMMONWEALTH MILITARY FORCES SENT ABROAD BY THE COMMONWEALTH ON SPECIAL DUTY OR FOR INSTRUCTION SINCE THE TAKING OVER OF DEFENCE BY COMMONWEALTH GOVERNMENT (1ST MARCH 1901).

(Names are arranged alphabetically.)

PERMANENT OFFICERS

Rank and Name.	Regiment or Corps.	Date of		Place.	Duty.
		Departure.	Return.		
Brigadier-General W. T. Bridges, C.M.G.	Headquarters Staff	19.1.06	2.1.07	England, Switzerland, and Canada	Defence Policy (Committee of Imperial Defence) and Report on Swiss Military System.
,, ,,	,,	26.5.09	30.5.10	England	Commonwealth Representative attached to General Staff at War Office.
Major J. H. Bruche	A. & I. Staff	25.1 10	...	,,	Exchange Officer, replaced by Major W. E. Manser, Royal Engineers.
Major S. E. Christian	R.A.A.	14.9 07	18.12.08	,,	Exchange Officer, replaced by Major H. G. Sandilands, R.F.A.
Major W. A. Coxen	,,	9.11.07	6.2.10	,,	Ordnance College Course, etc.

PERMANENT OFFICERS—*continued.*

Rank and Name.	Regiment or Corps.	Date of Departure.	Date of Return.	Place.	Duty.
Major H. W. Dangar	R.A.A.	17.11.03	.6.05	England	For instruction.
Major C. H. Foott	R.A.E.	19.11.07	4.2.09	,,	,, ,,
Major J. K. Forsyth	A. & I. Staff	14.9 09	...	India	Exchange Officer replaced by Major F. A. Maxwell, V.C., D.S.O., 18th Bengal Lancers, Indian Army.
Captain O. R. Griffiths	R.A.A.	4.9.07	6.10.08	Canada	Exchange Officer, replaced by Lieut. J. J. MacBrien, R.C. Dragoons,
Lieut. F. F. Harrison	,,	10.1.10	...	India	Staff College, Quetta.
Major F. B. Heritage	A. & I. Staff	6.8.07	2.11.08	England	For instruction.
Major-General J. C. Hoad, C.M.G.	Headquarters Staff	28.3.04	1.12.04	Japan and Manchuria	Russo - Japanese War, Commonwealth Military Attaché with Japanese Army.
,, ,,	,,	9.8.08	20.4.09	England, Ireland, U.S.A., and Canada	Formation of Commonwealth Section Imperial General Staff and to attend Manœuvres, etc.
Captain J. H. Hurst	R.A.A.	18.8.08	21.2.10	England	For Gunnery, Staff Course, Woolwich.
Lieut. P. S. Long-Innes	,,	30.4.06	[1]	Canada	Exchange Officer, replaced by Lieut. E. Clairmonte, R.C.A.
Lieut.-Col. G. G. H. Irving	A. & I. Staff	9.5.05	21.2.06	England and India	For instruction.
Major A. P. Luscombe	,,	21.7.06	29.7.07	,,	Exchange Officer, replaced by Major C. V. Mainwaring, 89th Punjabis.
Lieut. H. D. K. Macartney	R.A.A.	21.7.08	...	England	First as exchange Officer, replaced by Captain G. H. Reid, A.S.C. (Imperial), then joined Staff College, Camberley, January 1910.
Captain W. Mailer	A. & I. Staff	18.8.08	21.2.10	,,	For special instruction in Artillery.
[2] Major J. C. O'Brien	,,	27.10.08	13.12.09	India	Exchange Officer, replaced by Captain H. C. McWatters, 22nd Punjabis.
Major F. W. Osborne	R.A.A.	17.11.03	.6.05	England	For instruction.
Colonel J. W. Parnell	R.A.E.	25.7.04	.9.05	,,	,, ,,
Major W. G. Patterson	A. & I. Staff	3.7.06	24.7.07	England and India	,, ,,
Major P. W. G. Pinnock	,,	11.1.10	...	Canada	Exchange Officer, replaced by Captain C. H. Hill, Royal Canadian Regiment.
Captain W. St. L. Robertson	,,	6.8.07	15.10.08	India and England	Exchange Officer, replaced by Captain G. R. D. Churchill, 19th Punjabis.
Lieut.-Col. V. C. M. Sellheim, C.B.	,,	11.7.06	29.7.07	,,	Exchange Officer, replaced by Major E. C. Haag, 18th Hussars.
Captain C. B. B. White, *p.s.c.*	R.A.A.	28.11.05	Feb. '03	England	Staff College Course, Camberley.
,, ,,	,,	15.9.08	...	,,	G.S. Officer, 3rd Grade, War Office, replaced by Major F. Wilson, who perform duties of D.M.T.

[1] Resigned and remained in Canada.

[2] Since resigned.

OFFICERS—CITIZEN FORCES.

Rank and Name.	Regiment or Corps.	Date of Departure.	Date of Return.	Place.	Duty.
Captain E. A. D. Brockman	11th A.I. Regt.	7.9.08	11.5.09	India	For instruction.
Captain M. H. Cruickshank	Derwent Regt.	12.10.09	18.4.10	,,	,, ,,
Major M. T. Kirby, D.S.O.	A.F.A. (Vic.)	3.9.08	10.1.10	,,	,, ,,
Captain E. C. Oldham	10th A.I. Regt.	14.10.09	14.5.10	,,	,, ,,
Major R. St. J. Pearce	A.F.A. (N.S.W.)	9.10.09	18.4.10	,,	,, ,,
Major F. H. Russel	A.F.A. (Q'ld.)	5.9.08	28.4.09	,,	,, ,,
Colonel J. F. Flewell Smith, V.D.	Q'ld. Inf. Bde.	16.10.09	25.4.10	,,	,, ,,
Major E. L. Tilney	1st A.I. Regt.	5.9.08	28.4.09	,,	,, ,,
Captain H. A. F. Wilkinson	W.A.I. Regt.	18.10.09	...	,,	,, ,,

APPENDIX II

EXAMINATION IN CONNECTION WITH APPOINTMENT AND PROMOTION, ETC., OF OFFICERS OF THE PERMANENT FORCES FROM 1ST JULY 1909.

Examinations.	Date.	Number of Candidates.	Number Passed.	Number Failed.
	1909			
1. Officers of R.A.A. and R.A.E. for confirmation of probationary appointments.	10th to 14th August	3	2	1
2. Officers of R.A.A. and R.A.E. for confirmation of probationary appointments.	16th to 18th November	8	7	1
3. Promotion to rank of Lieut.-Colonel, Permanent Forces.	8th November	8	2	6
4. Promotion of Officers of the Permanent Forces up to the rank of Major.	6th to 10th December	17	15	2
	1910			
5. Officers of R.A.A. and R.A.E. for confirmation of probationary appointment.	11th April	7	5	2
6. Transfer as or promotion to Lieutenant, and for appointment to First Commissions in A. and I. Staff—Educational Qualifying Examination.	4th to 6th April	18	2	16
7. Promotion to the rank of Lieut.-Colonel, Permanent Forces.	18th April	6	4	2
8. Promotion of Officers of the Permanent Forces up to rank of Major.	16th to 20th May	8[1]	...	...
9. Transfer as or promotion to Lieutenant, and for appointment to First Commissions in A. and I. Staff—Military Competitive Examination.	6th to 9th June	17	9	8
10. Entrance to Staff College, Camberley	28th June to 7th July	2[1]	...	...
Totals	...	84	46	38

[1] Not included in total, as results are not yet available.

APPENDIX III

MILITARY FORCES OF THE COMMONWEALTH

HALF-YEARLY EXAMINATION OF MILITIA AND VOLUNTEER OFFICERS FOR CONFIRMATION OF FIRST APPOINTMENT AND FOR PROMOTION, FEBRUARY 1910.

| State. | Total Number of Candidates. | Number of Candidates for each Subject. | | |

APPENDIX IV

ALPHABETICAL INDEX TO DOCUMENTS, ETC., FROM THE COMMONWEALTH SECTION, IMPERIAL GENERAL STAFF, FOR FIELD-MARSHAL LORD KITCHENER

ACTS, ETC.—
- Commonwealth of Australia Constitution Act.
- Defence Acts 1903-4, Regulations and Standing Orders Commonwealth Military Forces.
- Defence Bill 1909 as introduced into the House of Representatives.
- Defence Bill 1909 as introduced into Senate with amendments by House of Representatives.
- Defence Bill 1909—Memorandum on.
- Speech of Minister of Defence on Defence Bill 1909.
- Debates from *Hansard* on Defence Bill 1909.

ARMAMENT—
- Field Artillery Armament.
- Classification Armament Fixed Defences.
- Armament of Fixed Defences.

CADETS—
- Regulations and Standing Orders Commonwealth Military Cadet Corps.
- Establishment and Strength.

COAST DEFENCES—
- Revision of Coast Defences—Memorandum by Colonial Defence Committee, May 1906.
- Report of local Committee on C.D.C., May 1906.
- Memorandum by Chief of the General Staff, Australia, *re* Armament.
- Particulars *re* Defences of Townsville, Thursday and Goode Islands.

DEFENCE SCHEMES—
- Report of Committee Imperial Defence upon General Scheme for Defence of Australia.
- District Defence Scheme for all States.

ESTABLISHMENTS—
- Summary of States, showing Establishments and Strengths.
- Statement showing increased *personnel* 1909-10.
- War and Peace 1909.

FACTORIES—
- Small Arms—*Précis* in connection with tenders for machinery.
- Small Arms—*Précis* action taken in regard to construction of buildings.

FINANCE—
- Estimate of Expenditure 1909-10.
- Schedule showing allotment of Funds for Military purposes.
- Schedule showing increases on Estimates 1909-10.

FORCES LISTS—
- Commonwealth Military Forces.
- Commonwealth Military Forces—Regimental.
- Commonwealth Military Cadet Corps.

GENERAL STAFF—
- *Précis* of steps taken *re* Formation of Commonwealth Section—Imperial General Staff.
- Notes by C.G.S., Australia, on Military System of Australia.
- Cost of the Office of C.G.S.

HORSE-BREEDING IN AUSTRALIA.

INSPECTOR-GENERAL—
- Memorandum by C.G.S., *re* Appointment of.

INTELLIGENCE CORPS—
- History and Work of.

MAPS—
- Distribution of Commonwealth Military Units.
- Distribution of Commonwealth Military Cadet Units.
- Distribution of Rifle Clubs.
- Australia, showing diagrams of Defended Ports.
- Australia, showing places visited by Inspector-General during year 1907.
- Geological Maps.

MOBILISATION—
- Notes on.

MUSKETRY—
- Instruction for Commonwealth Military Forces.

MEDICAL SERVICES—
- Standing Orders for A.A.M.C. Services.

NORTHERN TERRITORY—
- Bill for acceptance of Northern Territory by Commonwealth Government.
- Memorandum prepared by Minister in connection with Bill.
- Correspondence between Commonwealth and South Australian Governments *re* Taking over Territory.
- Reports of Government Resident, 1907 and 1908.

ORGANISATION—
- Organisation of the Commonwealth Military Forces.
- Numbers required to complete existing organisation to Peace Establishment.
- Notes by C.G.S., Australia, on Military System of Australia.

PARLIAMENTARY—
- List of Members of Commonwealth Parliament—House of Representatives and Senate.
- Debates on Defence Bill 1909.

POPULATION—
Estimated Population of Australia, 31st December 1908.
Estimated Population of Australia, 30th June 1909, and distribution on age basis.

PREFERENTIAL TRADE—
Memorandum by Minister of Customs.
Report of Proceedings of Deputation 7th Congress of Chambers of Commerce to Minister of Customs.

RAILWAYS—
Particulars of the State Railways, with Maps.
Transcontinental Railway (projected), North to South.
Transcontinental Railway (projected), East to West.

RESERVE FORCES—
Commonwealth Military Regulations.
Medical Reserve, A.A.M.C., Standing Orders.

RIFLE CLUBS—
Regulations governing.
Strength.

REPORTS—
Inspector-General Commonwealth Military Forces, 1905-6-7.
Military Board 1905-6.
Secretary for Defence, 1906.
Memorandum on Australian Military Defence and its progress since Federation.

STAFFS—
District and Instructional by States.
District Staff Officers, showing Ages, Ranks, and Qualifications.
Instructional Staff Officers, showing Ages, Ranks, etc.

STATISTICAL—
Commonwealth Year-Book of Australia, 1901-8

TELEGRAPHY—
Wireless—Report of Conference, 1907.

TRANSPORT—
Organisation of Wheeled Transport.

WATER SUPPLY—
Particulars of in Capital Cities.
Water Conservation and Irrigation.
Report State Rivers and Water Supply Commission, Victoria.

APPENDIX V

RETURN OF TRAVELLING ON DUTY BY CHIEF OF THE GENERAL STAFF BEYOND THE STATE OF VICTORIA FROM 1ST JULY 1909.

State, etc.	From—	To—	Duty.
New South Wales .	1.7.09	6.7.09	Defence Scheme.
	26.7.09	3.8.09	Committee—Revision of Light Horse Manual.
	15.10.09	20.10.09	National Rifle Association Meeting.
	5.3.10	11.3.10	Confer with Minister.
Tasmania . .	12.11.09	20.11.09	Inspection of Troops.
			LORD KITCHENER'S TOUR.
New South Wales .	3.12.09	6.12.09	*En route* to meet Lord Kitchener at Port Darwin.
Queensland . .	6.12.09	...	
Thursday Island .	14.12.09	16.12.09	
Northern Territory S.A., Port Darwin	20.12.09	21.12.09	
Thursday Island .	25.12.09	26.12.09	
Queensland . .	29.12.09	4.1.10	Townsville, 29.12.09. Brisbane, 1/4.1.10.
New South Wales .	5.1.10	12.1.10	Newcastle, 5.1.10. Sydney, Liverpool } 5 to 10.1.10. Lithgow, Bathurst } 10.1.10.
South Australia .	20.1.10	...	
Western Australia .	24.1.10	27.1.10	Fremantle, 24.1.10. Perth, 24.1.10. Tammin, 25/26.1.10.
South Australia .	31.1.10	3.2.10	Adelaide.
Tasmania . .	5.2.10	1.2.10	Burnie, 5.2.10. Hobart, 5/7.2.10. Ross, 7/8.2.10.

MEMORANDUM ON THE DEFENCE OF AUSTRALIA

by FIELD-MARSHAL VISCOUNT KITCHENER OF KHARTOUM, G.C.B., O.M., G.C.S I., G.C.M.G., G.C.I.E., Etc.

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS

I. In compliance with the invitation of the Commonwealth Government to visit and inspect the existing military forces and system in Australia, and subsequently to give them the benefit of my experience and advice regarding the development of their latest scheme of defence, I reached Port Darwin on the 21st December, and have since visited military camps in every State.

II. The Minister of Defence kindly arranged for the assembly of troops in these camps on dates to meet my convenience, and although the season was perhaps exceptionally trying and not the most suitable for both the men and their employers, good musters were everywhere obtained.

III. My best thanks are due for the facilities afforded me on all occasions to see the troops and fixed defences, as well as for the assistance given me by General Hoad and all the senior Australian officers in my study of the existing military system and local conditions in this country.

IV. Having had considerable experience of Australians working in the field during the South African war, I was not surprised to find what excellent material existed amongst the young manhood of Australia from whom the defenders of their country must come. I noticed in the camps the great keenness displayed by all ranks in rendering themselves proficient, and in applying the military knowledge they had acquired to the practical conditions of work on the manœuvre ground.

V. In these days, however, excellent fighting material and the greatest zeal, though indispensable adjuncts, are not of themselves sufficient to enable a force to take the field against thoroughly trained regular troops with any chance of success.

VI. I do not intend to criticise in any detail what I saw in the various camps of exercise, but a great part of my suggestions for the training and organisation of the Australian Citizen Forces, in Part I. of this Paper, have been devised to meet the principal defects I

observed, and to enable these camps of exercise in the future to be really instructional, as well as a thorough test of the work done during the year in their home training.

VII. Success in any technical career can only be achieved after a thorough elementary grounding, and this is, perhaps, more marked in the military than in any other profession. The A B C must be carefully studied and practised so as to understand how to learn properly, as well as how to teach. It is only by correcting mistakes on the spot, and clearly explaining their nature and results, as well as how they should be avoided, that practical instruction can be given in camps both to officers and men.

VIII. The training I saw in the camps indicated that there was a distinct tendency to go too fast, and to neglect essential preliminaries of training for more advanced studies which the troops engaged were not capable of carrying out properly.

IX. The conclusion I have come to is, shortly, that the present forces are inadequate in numbers, training, organisation, and munitions of war, to defend Australia from the dangers that are due to the present conditions that prevail in the country, as well as to its isolated position.

X. The danger of want of population and consequent ineffective occupation in many parts of the country is, in my opinion, a most serious existing condition in Australia, as it may greatly imperil the stability of the present state of affairs in the Commonwealth. I feel, however, that this is so well known and recognised that I need not emphasise it further.

XI. I would also mention that railway construction has, while developing the country, resulted in lines that would appear to be more favourable to an enemy invading Australia than to the defence of the country. Different gauges in most of the States isolate each system, and the want of systematic interior connection makes the present lines running inland of little use for defence, though possibly of considerable value to an enemy who would have temporary command of the sea.

XII. The new Defence Act will give sufficient numbers to defend the country effectively if the force provided under it is efficiently trained, organised, and equipped. It must, however, be distinctly recognised that a National Force maintained at a high standard of efficiency can only be produced by the work of years, and that such work must be steady and continuous; any divergence from the policy decided on may, and probably will, lead to chaos and useless expenditure of money.

XIII. If plans and essential preparations have been deferred until an emergency arises, it will then be found too late to act, because the strain of passing from peace to war will entirely absorb the energies of all engaged, even when every possible contingency has been foreseen.

XIV. Before putting these recommendations forward, I have carefully considered their financial aspect, and the burden that will thereby be thrown on the country for its defence. The annual cost when the force would be in full working order, after passing through the less costly transition period, works out to practically the same as the total sum contemplated under the Defence Bill, viz., £1,742,000.

XV. I have divided my subject into—

Part I.—Recommendations.
Part II.—Transition Period.
Part III.—Fixed Defences, which is confidential.[1]

XVI. In concluding these introductory remarks, I sincerely hope that the organisation I have proposed in Part I. may meet the requirements of Australia in forming an efficient National Force for the defence of the country; and I shall always take the greatest interest in the future of the National Forces of Australia, and hope to be able to give the Commonwealth Government at any time such further assistance as may be in my power.

KITCHENER, F.M.

MELBOURNE, 12*th February* 1910.

PART I.—RECOMMENDATIONS

STRATEGICAL CONSIDERATIONS

1. It is an axiom held by the British Government that the Empire's existence depends primarily upon the maintenance of adequate and efficient naval forces. As long as this condition is fulfilled, and as long as British superiority at sea is assured, then it is an accepted principle that no British Dominion can be successfully and permanently conquered by an organised invasion from oversea.

2. But in applying this principle to Australasia considerations of time and space cannot be disregarded. The conduct of a great war depends upon the calculated and proper combination of naval, military, and diplomatic forces; and it is quite conceivable that in the future, as in the past, national considerations may require the concentration of British naval forces in one or other theatre of operations. It follows that, in seas remote from such a concentration, the British Naval Forces may find themselves for the moment inferior in force to an actual, or potential, enemy. In such a situation, although our ultimate superiority at sea might not be a matter of doubt, some time might elapse before our command of the sea was definitely assured in all

[1] Printed separately.

waters. It, therefore, becomes the duty of all self-governing Dominions to provide a military force adequate, not only to deal promptly with any attempt at invasion, but also to ensure local safety and public confidence until our superiority at sea has been decisively and comprehensively asserted. For this reason it has recently been agreed that the Home Forces of the United Kingdom should be so organised as to compel an enemy contemplating an invasion to make the attempt on such a scale as to be unable to evade our naval forces. The same arguments apply to Australasia, and its land forces should be calculated and organised on this basis.

Strength Required

3. In estimating the strength of the land forces necessary to meet this requirement, three principal factors should be considered—

(*a*) The great ocean distances which lie between Australia and the territory of any possible enemies.

(*b*) The armed strength and power of transportation over sea of any conceivably hostile nation.

(*c*) The vast extent, and railway communication, of the Australian Continent, which covers an area of 2,948,366 square miles, and possesses a coastline of 12,210 miles; as contrasted with the smallness of its population, 4,275,000 souls, of whom 1,295,000 are males of a fighting age.

4. Consideration of these factors leads me to estimate the land forces required at 80,000 fighting troops. Of these numbers, half would be required to secure the larger cities and defended ports from attack, and so to maintain the public confidence and national credit, while the other half would be free to operate as a mobile striking force anywhere in Australia.

5. But the best defence is generally by taking the offensive, and there should therefore be no difference in the enrolment, organisation, and equipment of any unit.

Organisation of Force

6. The *Defence Bill* 1909, which has just been passed by the Commonwealth Parliament, gives effect to the principle that every citizen should be trained to defend his country, and I therefore propose to base the following advice as to the manner in which the force of 80,000 fighting men should be enrolled, organised, and trained on the principle embodied in that Act, which is designed to call into existence a National Citizen Force.

7. In my opinion, the forces should be organised as—,

21 brigades of 4 battalions each—84 battalions of infantry.
28 regiments of light horse.
49 four-gun field batteries, and
7 four-gun heavy and howitzer batteries, the whole totalling 224 guns.
7 communication companies and 14 field companies of engineers.

Departmental troops to be provided in proportion.

8. The peace and war establishments of units are given in detail in Tables V. and VI., but the rank and file may be summarised as—

	Rank and File.	
	Peace.	War.
Battalion	750	1001
Regiment of light horse	350	470
Battery	130	146

9. The peace establishment would be found from the 80,000 trained soldiers, and the augmentation to war establishment will be provided by the addition of the recruits and the 25–26-year men.

10. In this connection I wish to explain that, while taking the Defence Acts 1903–1909 as the basis of my proposals, I have departed from the training periods therein prescribed, because—

(*a*) While the cadet training is valuable as a preparation, it cannot, in my opinion, replace recruit training, which is a necessary preliminary to the production of an efficient and trained citizen soldier. For this reason I class the 18–19-year men as recruits, over and above the peace establishment of 80,000 men, but liable to be put in the ranks in war.

(*b*) Soldiers to be efficient should be exercised in camp annually, otherwise the men lose the incentive to home training, the habit of working in units, of moving and living in numbers, and of ready obedience to orders.

11. For this reason I advise that camp training in time of peace should be extended, and I consider that, having regard to the natural military aptitude of the Australian, favoured by the conditions of his civil life, the training should consist of six clear days annually, *i.e.* from a Monday to a Saturday inclusive, in addition to all home training.

12. I am of opinion that, if fully utilised under thoroughly competent officers, this training will meet requirements up to the 25th year. In the 25th–26th year a muster parade would suffice.

13. The training required by law, over and above home training, would then stand—

For junior cadets, 12 to 14 years—120 hours.

For senior cadets, 14 to 18 years—equivalent to 16 days.
Recruit training, 18 to 19 years—16 days, 8 of which to be in camp.
Trained soldiers, 19 to 20 years—16 days, 8 of which to be in camp.
20–21, 21–22, 22–23, 23–24, 24–25 years—6 days in camp.
25–26 years—Muster parade only.

RESERVES

14. After which they will be, for the period mentioned in clause 60 of the Act, available as reservists.

15. On this basis the yearly quotas enrolled in the Citizen Force would be—

TABLE I.—YEARLY QUOTAS ENROLLED IN THE CITIZEN ARMY

Years.	Infantry.	Light Horse.	Artillery.	Total.	Engineers and Departments.
18–19 . .	12,500	1,950	1,450	15,900	1,175
19–20 . .	11,800	1,850	1,370	15,020	1,125
20–21 . .	11,200	1,750	1,320	14,270	1,075
21–22 . .	10,700	1,650	1,240	13,590	1,025
22–23 . .	10,200	1,600	1,190	12,990	975
23-24 . .	9,800	1,500	1,130	12,430	925
24–25 . .	9,300	1,450	1,050	11,800	875
Total, 19–25	63,000	9,800	7,300	80,100	6,000
		80,100			
25–26 . .	9,200	1,400	1,000	11,600	850

NOTE.—In the above table an annual wastage of 5 per cent. is allowed for mortality, medical unfitness, absence, and other casualties.

PRINCIPLES REGARDING ENROLMENT

16. The first and imperative principle for the enrolment and maintenance of these 80,000 men as an efficient Citizen Force is that the nation as a whole should take a pride in its defenders, insist upon the organisation being real and designed for war purposes only, and

provide the means for properly educating, training, and equipping their officers and men.

17. Unless these requirements be met, no military system can be devised which will be other than an illusion and a source of waste of public funds.

18. The second principle for a successful Citizen Force is a complement of the first. The force must be an integral portion of the national life. The citizen should be brought up from boyhood to look forward to the day when he will be enrolled as fit to defend his country; and he should be accustomed to practise those habits of self-denial, of devotion to and emulation in the execution of his duty, of reticence, and of prompt obedience to lawful authority, which are essential to the formation of patriotic and efficient citizen soldiers.

19. These considerations show how completely a Citizen Force should be kept outside party politics. Political feeling in an army is always a serious drawback to efficiency, and may become a danger to the State.

20. Recruits should be drawn impartially from all portions of the country, and from the whole of the community; and upon the manner in which the reciprocal obligations of the nation to the force and of the citizen soldier to the nation are brought home to the cities, towns, and shires will depend the value of the armed strength of Australia.

Registration and Exemptions

21. The application of these principles entails a complete and thorough registration of the youths of the country, and the adoption of a system whereby those moving from one part of the country to another will be traced and required to continue their training.

22. The question of exemptions will also arise, and in this there are, I think, two broad guiding factors—

(*a*) That the welfare of the family should not be prejudiced.

(*b*) That the State should get the best men available.

Factor (*a*) points to the exemption of those who are the sole or main support of their family, such as the only or eldest son of a widow, or of a man who is himself incapable of earning a livelihood for those dependent on him.

23. Factor (*b*) demands the exclusion from the Citizen Force of all criminals, and should restrict the selection of annual quotas to those males who are physically the fittest of their year, and therefore the most eligible for the honour of serving their country. This question will, no doubt, as necessity arises, be fully considered by the Government.

The Division of the Country into 'Areas'

24. In my judgment, the only way to satisfactorily organise and train a Citizen Force of the nature about to be created in Australia is

to divide the country into areas from which the National Force will be drawn. Each area should be designed to provide a definite proportion of a fighting unit, and should be in charge of a thoroughly trained permanent instructional officer assisted by one or two non-commissioned officers.

25. By this means a trained officer will be supplied to live permanently amongst a definite number of the Citizen Forces whose military proficiency will entirely depend on his efforts to assist them in home training, as well as in maintaining the military spirit of self-denial and *esprit de corps* amongst not only those who are under training but also the whole community. He will thus be readily available on all occasions to assist both officers and men in his area in their endeavour to render themselves efficient defenders of their country; and when the unit that he has trained joins its battalion, and the battalion its brigade, each will vie with the other, and in this way promote a healthy spirit of emulation and competition in the force which will foster and encourage true and real efficiency. The estimation of the good services of these officers themselves will depend upon the comparison between the units provided by the various areas.

26. Ten areas should form one group under the supervision of a superior instructional officer, who becomes the brigade major in time of war. Similarly, each unit would then have a permanent instructional officer as adjutant—the remainder taking charge of the depots left to supply the wastage of the field force from reservists.

27. It is obvious that the extent of the 'area' which can be satisfactorily trained by an instructional officer will depend upon the density of the population, and, therefore, upon the time taken for the officer to reach the places where the soldiers assemble for home training as opportunity offers. It is also necessary to fix the relation of the 'area' to the unit of the force, and for this purpose I have taken the infantry battalion as the standard to govern all estimates.

28. After consideration of these principles I have come to the conclusion that in the cities two, and in the country three, 'areas' should be allowed per battalion of infantry, with a due proportion of other arms.

29. In this connection may I repeat that the whole success of the Citizen Force depends upon the thoroughness and amount of the home training under the area officer.

30. A project (Table II.)[1] based on the information now available, has been prepared, showing the division of Australia into 215 areas. It is merely an example of what might be done, and on further investigation variations will probably be necessary. To these there is no objection, provided there is no departure from the guiding principle

[1] [Table II. and the accompanying map have been omitted.]

that the 'area' produces its definite quota of the force, and is the sole charge of one permanent officer.

THE PERMANENT INSTRUCTIONAL OFFICER IN CHARGE OF THE AREA

31. The duties of the officer in charge of an area would include :—

(*a*) The inspection of the junior cadets training in the schools.
(*b*) The organisation and training of the senior cadets.
(*c*) The enrolment, equipment, and training of the adult from eighteen to nineteen years of age.
(*d*) The equipment, organisation, and training of the trained soldier from nineteen to twenty-five years of age.
(*e*) The supervision of the registration of all male inhabitants under clause 142 of the Act.
(*f*) The maintenance of lists of males twenty-five to twenty-six years of age who have just completed their training.
(*g*) Communication to other areas of all changes of residence of men under training, with particulars of their military proficiency.
(*h*) Information regarding the numbers, residence, and classification of the reserve men in the areas, and the organisation and maintenance of rifle clubs.
(*i*) A thorough acquaintance with the inhabitants of his area.

32. In all these matters, except registration and enrolment, he would be assisted by the officers of the Citizen Forces of the area.

33. Detailed instructions for the guidance of area officers should be drawn up, and should, amongst other things, require a monthly statement from each area of the progress made in registration, enrolment, organisation, equipment, and home training of the Citizen Forces under his charge.

34. The essential importance of these duties to the nation will make the area officer the keystone of the Citizen Force, whose organisation and fitness for war will chiefly depend upon the education and training received in the 'area.'

35. Under this system, it is evident that the responsibilities of the area officer will make it a national necessity that he should be a carefully-selected man, thoroughly grounded and trained in his profession, and scientifically educated. No social considerations, no influence, nothing but efficiency should be allowed to affect the selection and promotion of these officers. Their work should be judged by results alone.

36. The selection and education of suitable men for these instructional duties will thus be the foundation of a proficient Citizen Force. They should be taken young, given a complete military education calculated to make them good leaders, strict disciplinarians, and

thoroughly competent officers—brought up to realise that their career depends upon their ability to do their duty and on that alone.

37. In the United States of America, the Military College of West Point sets an example of a severe and thoroughly military training imposed by a Democratic Government, and I should advise that Australia can only expect to produce officers of the type required by the establishment of a Military College similar in ideals, if not altogether in practice—for that will vary with national characteristics—to West Point.

38. Hitherto it would have been difficult to find employment for the graduates of such a primary military educational establishment, but I have carefully examined this point, and find that now it has been decided to create a National Force, there will be ample posts to be filled by the graduates of a Military College.

39. The area officer should have reasonable prospects of promotion, and there must be systematic supervision of his work; for these reasons I have already advised that over every ten areas a supervising officer be appointed, who would, in war time, become the staff officer of the infantry brigade drawn from his group. In addition, as now, district staffs will be required in the six military districts of the Commonwealth, officers will be wanted for the Central administration and for the permanent troops.

Formation of a Staff Corps

40. My recommendation is that a Staff Corps be formed to provide the officers for all these requirements, areas, district and headquarters staffs, and permanent troops.

41. This Staff Corps should be entirely drawn from the Military College, and its members should further be sent abroad to study, and be attached to, the other land forces of the British Empire, so that an officer of this Staff Corps would be the equal, if not superior, in military education to the officers of any army in the world.

42. The proposed organisation contemplates the formation of 215 areas, which are required to produce a fighting force of 80,000 men. The officers in charge of each of these areas may be of the rank of captain or lieutenant. In addition, 22 majors will be required, one to supervise every ten areas. The six district staffs require 25 officers, mostly of field rank; headquarters will absorb 12; the Military College 8; and the permanent forces (on the present scale) 48.

43. To allow for officers being absent in other British Dominions, on attachment to or studying other armies, at staff colleges, on leave, etc., 6 per cent. of subalterns, captains, and majors should be added. In this way an establishment of 350 officers for the Staff Corps is

reached, and their distribution by ranks and duties is shown in Table III. below :—

TABLE III.—DISTRIBUTION BY RANKS AND DUTIES OF STAFF CORPS OFFICERS

Duty.	Lieutenants.	Captains.	Majors.	Lieut.-Colonels.	Colonels.	Total.
Area Officers for—						
215 areas	151	64	..	..	..	215
In charge of 10 areas	..	..	22	..	..	22
Permanent Forces	28	11	5	3	1	48
District Staff for 6 districts	..	6	10	6	3	25
Central Administration at Headquarters	..	1	6	3	2	12
Military College	1	4	1	1	1	8
Spare for sick, on special courses attached to other armies	10	4	6	..	..	20
Total	190	90	50	13	7	350

44. If men of the right stamp are to be attracted to the corps, the pay of each rank must be good; and in this connection it must be remembered that the circumstances of an officer's services prevent, and rightly so, his participation in commercial ventures. For the Staff Corps to be successful, its officers must concentrate all their energies on their profession, and their pay should, therefore, be sufficient not only for their keep while serving, but also to ensure to them a competence when retired.

45. In view of these conditions, I recommend rates of pay shown in Table IV., with the proviso that in each rank a compulsory deduction should be made, sufficient to assure an adequate provision for maintenance on retirement.

TABLE IV.—PROPOSED PAY OF THE STAFF CORPS OFFICERS

Establishment.		Pay per annum.
Ranks.	Number.	
		£
Colonel	7	800 to 900
Lieutenant-Colonels	13	700 to 800
Majors	50	550 to 650
Captains	90	375 to 450
Subalterns	190	250 to 350

THE MILITARY COLLEGE

46. I have shown that 350 officers are required for the Staff Corps, and I shall now discuss the organisation of a Military College to maintain that corps.

47. Taking 20 years as the average service of an officer, it appears that after the Staff Corps is up to establishment the yearly output required from the college will be about 18 cadets. The minimum length of course required to efficiently ground a cadet in his profession is three years.

48. As has already been pointed out, strict selection should be enforced from the moment a boy becomes a cadet. To allow for the necessary process of elimination, and also for those boys who may show proficiency for some other branch of the Public Service, I advise that thirty cadets be the annual entry; adding ten per cent. to this number for casualties, and the figure $33 \times 3 = 99$, say 100, cadets is reached as the establishment of the college.

49. The age of entry should be not less than 17 nor more than 19.

50. I consider that the method of entry into the college should be as follows:—

Candidates should be selected from the most capable of the senior cadets, each area officer submitting the name of his best cadet to the major in charge of ten areas, who will then examine these ten cadets and forward five names through the district headquarters, who will state their recommendations, if any, to the central administration. The latter will then select from the names received double the number required, and will refer the ultimate selection from these last to an authority to be determined by Government. This authority might be a Board of Examiners, or the Inspector-General, or the Commandant of the College.

51. A cadet having joined the college, his parents should pay £80 per annum for board, lodging, books, clothing, equipment, and instruction; except in the case of a cadet obtaining a scholarship, of which there should be twenty for the whole college.

52. Until the Staff Corps is up to establishment, the full output from the college will be required; once that stage is passed, or in the case of a student showing proficiency for a career other than a military one, he might be excused from military service on the following condition: that he serves and is efficient as an officer in the National Force for twelve years, and attends training, as may be laid down, and that during these twelve years he will perform any special military duty required of him at any time by the Central Administration.

53. During the course, the cadet must be kept under strict discipline, and taught to keep himself physically and mentally fit.

Any cadet unlikely to make an efficient officer, or lacking in the personality necessary to influence and command men, should be removed.

54. On the completion of his course at the college, the cadet should be given his commission, and sent either to India for a winter training, *i.e.* October to April, or to the United Kingdom for a summer training, *i.e.* April to October, as an attached officer to a British regiment. On return, he should do one year's duty under the best instructional officer available in an area, in order to learn how best to conduct registration and to promote home training in the area. He should then be fully capable to take over charge of an area.

55. It will be evident that the Director of such a college must be a man of exceptional qualifications, well educated, and accustomed to do his duty fearlessly and thoroughly. He should be supplied with two assistant directors and an adjutant of similar qualifications to himself, and a staff of professors to teach the curriculum, which should be based on that of West Point. From the estimates at the end of this part it will be seen that the establishment and cost of such a college, when in full working order, will be £15,050.

56. Any political interference with the management of such institution, in which disciplinary training forms an important part, and the efficiency of which is so essential to the defence of Australia, should be strictly avoided.

The Citizen Officer

57. While the Staff Corps will provide the trained instructor, the leadership of units of the Citizen Force will depend on the citizen officer, and it is therefore all important that he should be of the most promising material available, chosen young and selected solely for his capacity for leadership and military knowledge, and devotion to duty. Every opportunity must be taken to educate him in the spare moments of his civil business, and accordingly means of instruction should be available at or near his home.

58. Once selected, the welfare of the force requires that officers should serve more continuously and for longer periods than their men, and in this way repay the nation for the trust reposed in them.

59. A consideration of these requirements leads to the conclusion that—

(*a*) The citizen officer should be appointed as early as possible in his military career, so that he may, at the most receptive time of his life, study his duties as an officer, and develop his qualifications for imparting instruction and leadership of men.

(*b*) It should be understood that the acceptance of a commission entails a liability to serve as an officer for at least twelve years, but such a liability would not interfere with free movement from place to place in Australia; nor with resignation should the Governor-General be pleased to accept it; nor, subject to the exigencies of the service, with the privilege of leave on private affairs to visit countries outside Australia.

APPOINTMENT

60. I agree with the principle laid down in the Defence Act, that in Citizen Forces all promotions should be from the ranks; but, in order to get young officers, I advise that for this purpose service in the ranks of senior cadets should count. The ordinary procedure to be followed in the appointment of an officer would then generally be—

61. The area officer would nominate suitable senior cadets as sub-lieutenants in the Cadet Corps; such rank to carry no pay nor command outside the cadets. During the first year of their adult training these sub-lieutenants should be on probation as lieutenants in the Citizen Forces. When approved by the Battalion commander, and after passing the necessary tests, their names would be submitted, through the usual channels, for commissions.

62. As regards (*b*), the commission would then be granted on the declaration of the officer that he is willing to serve for twelve years. Under this system it is estimated that an officer would obtain his first commission between the ages of 18 and 20, would reach the rank of captain about 26, and of major about 30 or 32, *i.e.* when his twelve years' service is about to expire. Above the rank of major no obligation to serve should be necessary; zealous officers would remain in order to command their battalions or regiments, and subsequently brigades.

63. A citizen officer elected to any Parliament should be at once seconded.

INSTRUCTION

64. The instruction of a citizen officer will be in the first instance afforded to him at or near his home by the instructional officer, who will take special care that the officers of his unit are thoroughly taught in all the regimental work of the unit to which they belong. In addition to this instruction, special courses for technical subjects should be arranged by the district staffs, and the proficiency attained by the officer going through any of these courses be specially noted in his favour. Moreover, as these officers will doubtless have their evenings free for study, an excellent means for bringing the whole force together and of giving

instruction in military subjects would be the free circulation of a military magazine which should be edited by and published under the direction of the Headquarters Staff. The same agency should undertake a system of correspondence which has proved to be of value in India, whereby answers are given to questions on military subjects, papers are set, duly corrected and returned, strategical and tactical problems are explained, discussed, and corrected.

65. During the training period of his arm, 16 or 24 days, as the case may be, the citizen officer should receive good emoluments, and I advise that the pay of a subaltern for this period should be increased to £1 per diem, the other ranks being raised in proportion. The rates for each rank would then be—

	£	s.	d.
Subaltern	1	0	0
Captain	1	10	0
Major	2	0	0
Lieutenant-Colonel	2	10	0
Colonel	3	0	0

66. No pay should be allowed for attendance at schools of instruction, but bonuses sufficient to cover expenses should be granted to those officers who pass through the courses satisfactorily and attain the standard of qualification.

The Citizen Soldier

67. The Australian citizen soldier experiences much of military value in the everyday conditions of his civil life. He is generally a good rider, active, lithe, and intelligent. As a cadet he is taught to shoot, and learns the rudiments of drill, and, passing through his recruit adult training, he joins the force as an efficient soldier. Much will undoubtedly depend on the amount of training that, through self-denial and devotion to his duty, the citizen soldier performs at or near his home, and, if this is done, in my opinion he will be able to subsequently maintain his efficiency as a soldier under the training that has been proposed in this paper.

68. Throughout the period of service, the citizen soldier must remember that he is discharging a duty to his country, and that the pay he receives is not a wage, but an allowance to assist him in the discharge of his duty. I therefore think that the rates of pay laid down in the Act are adequate, and as, under my proposals, training will continue after the twentieth year, I consider that the pay of a soldier in all subsequent years should be at the rate laid down for the 19–20 year, namely, 4s. per diem.

Citizen Non-Commissioned Officers

69. When, however, a citizen soldier is selected for and is ready to assume the responsibilities of a non-commissioned officer, the case is different. He is doing more than his country absolutely requires, and he should, therefore, receive higher rates of pay—up to 8s. a day for a sergeant.

70. The selection and training of the non-commissioned officer will be primarily the work of the citizen officer. Promising non-commissioned officers should be sent to schools for further technical training on the same conditions as the citizen officer; they should be encouraged to extend their services, and are, of course, eligible for commissions.

The Establishment and Organisation of Units

71. The establishments of the Regular Army have hitherto been the standard for Australia, and this principle should be observed in the formation of the Citizen Forces.

72. In its application, however, local conditions may require slight variations. For instance, bandsmen are not necessary for a Citizen Force, drummers and buglers will supply all that is necessary; the details left at the base need not be so many.

Battalion of Infantry

73. I should, therefore, recommend that the combatant war establishment of a battalion of citizen infantry be fixed at 29 officers and 1001 other ranks, organised as follows:—

Table V.—Establishment of a Battalion of Infantry

	Officers.	Warrant and N.C.O's.	Drummers and Buglers.	Rank and File.
Headquarters	4	9	..	18
M.G. Section	1	1	..	15
8 Companies	24	40	16	880
Details to be left in areas	..	4	..	18
	29	54	16	931
		1001		

74. In working out the details it must be remembered that in the ranks will be found tradesmen of all kinds, such as shoemakers, tailors, and pioneers.

75. The establishment of 29 officers should be maintained in peace and war; that of the other ranks will vary as follows :—

Peace establishment	750
Recruits	143
25–26-year trained men	108
War establishment	1001

Regiment of Light Horse

76. Similarly a regiment of light horse would be organised in—

Table VI.—Establishment of a Regiment of Light Horse

	Officers.	Warrant and N.C.O's.	Trumpeters.	Rank and File.
Headquarters	4	12	..	15
M.G. Section	1	1	..	11
4 Squadrons	24	60	8	356
Left in areas	..	3	..	4
	29	76	8	386
		470		

which should be reached as follows :—

Peace establishment	350
Recruits	70
25–26-year men	50
War establishment	470

Battery of Artillery

77. The battery would, of course, vary slightly with the nature of the gun; but for the four-gun 18-pr. battery the present war establishment of 5 officers and 146 other ranks seems suitable.

The battery would then reach its war strength as follows :—

Peace establishment	130
Recruits	16
	146

Leaving ten recruits and eighteen 25–26-year men per battery (*i.e.*, a total of 1568) to form the nucleus of ammunition columns.

APPENDIX

TRAINING

78. The training of the citizen soldier may be divided into two parts—the home training, which will take place all the year round in the vicinity of the men's homes under the Staff Corps or the citizen officers of the area; and the camp training, which will be annually held in the neighbourhood, and will generally consist of a brigade of infantry with a proportion of other arms. In order to sustain the interest of the force, the instruction given should be of a progressive nature. The soldier should annually be taught the proper practical methods of carrying out some new exercise as well as being tested in what he has learnt before. Thus a fresh exercise would be studied every year in the area, and practically tested at the camp. When this has been done, the exercise to be studied during the next year should be initiated and explained.

79. This method of training naturally necessitates a systematised arrangement by which each soldier is gradually taught on the ground how to carry out all the duties of his arm.

80. For battalion and regimental training, the assembly of the quotas from two or three areas becomes necessary, and this home training can be done at week ends. In ordinary years there will be no necessity to go beyond brigade training, which requires the assembly of quotas from ten areas. The selection of the time and place for these annual camps will be the work of the brigade major, who should consult the convenience of employers and of the men.

81. Every year, three or more brigades should be selected for concentration so as to practise commanders, staffs, and railways in dealing with large bodies of troops. These concentrations should be specially arranged for by the Government on the advice of the Military Board.

82. Training should consist of all that is essential to good marching, accurate controlled shooting, and the combination of all arms in attack and defence.

83. Throughout, the principles contained in the manuals of the Regular Army should be followed, but they must be applied with intelligence and with due regard to the local conditions of *personnel*, ground, and composition of the force. Land will be required to properly and satisfactorily carry out this work, and in the selection of its site two often conflicting conditions must be reconciled—one that it should be close to cities in order that units and brigades will lose no time on the road, and the other that it should be large enough for manœuvres. The Act gives power to manœuvre over country at will, but where central large training grounds can be established in each State, there are many advantages in now doing so before the population

thickens and all ground is taken up. Such localities would be used for the annual trainings, and where possible might be made available for the breeding of artillery horses.

MOBILISATION

84. Thoroughly thought-out and practical plans for mobilisation and concentration are required before the Citizen Force can be considered prepared for war.

85. Preparation for mobilisation is primarily the work of the General Staff, who recommend the lines to be followed and advise where, and in what quantities, the munitions for war of the various units should be stored. Concentration can only be satisfactorily effected when the railway and military authorities are in the closest touch and work in absolute harmony. To secure this co-operation, I advise that a War Railway Council be formed, as is the case in the United Kingdom, composed of the Chief Railway Commissioner from each State, under the presidency of the Quartermaster-General of the Citizen Forces, and with an officer of the Headquarters Staff as Secretary.

DISTRICT STAFFS

86. It only remains to consider the staff organisation suitable to administer, control, and inspect the Citizen Force.

87. The organisation of military districts with their commandants and staffs should continue; but District Commandants should be made to decide all questions which are within their powers. In no other way can decentralisation be efficiently carried out, and it is preferable to run the risk of an occasional mistake rather than to encourage unnecessary dependence on Headquarters.

HEADQUARTERS STAFF

88. Accepting the Military Board system as I find it in Australia, I consider that its work requires careful allotment, as no subject, other than a matter of military policy, should be laid before the Board if solely in the department of one member who has power to deal with it. It should seldom be necessary to refer such questions as details of dress, saluting stations, loans of camp equipment, sick leave, dates of rifle matches, forms to be used for requisition, claims covered by regulation, etc., to the Board. The Military members of the Board should remember that on their advice on military subjects the administration of the forces greatly depends, and should therefore give their opinions on strictly military grounds, avoiding all political influences, and be

prepared to maintain their view under all circumstances. They will thus by their carefully considered advice afford great assistance to the Minister of Defence.

89. Consultative members should not, in my opinion, be added to the Board.

Department of Inspector-General

90. The recommendations contained in this part of my paper, and based on the Defence Act of 1909, will require constant and careful supervision to get the best results.

91. Factories of war material are projected, contracts for harness, clothing, etc., will be placed locally, and independent inspection of their methods and products will be essential to good and economical administration.

92. For these reasons I recommend that the appointment of Inspector-General be continued, and that he be supplied with a staff adequate to carry out the duties of the Department, and that he should be directly under the Minister.

93. The duties of the Department would be—

(*a*) The examination of the state of preparedness for war of the Citizen Force.
(*b*) The inspection of camps.
(*c*) The examination of the results attained by the systems of classification, enrolment, registration, organisation, and training of the cadets, the permanent and Citizen Forces and their transport.
(*d*) The periodical examination of explosives, guns, and all warlike stores on Commonwealth charge, and the inspection of all factories and contract supplies.
(*e*) Such further inquiries as the Minister might direct.

94. Under the conditions which exist in Australia it would appear to me advisable that the Inspector-General should be appointed President of the Board dealing with the promotion of officers above the rank of major, and should advise on the qualifications of field officers for appointment to the command of battalions, regiments, brigades, and districts.

95. It would seem sufficient to provide at first for—

(*a*) One Inspector-General, who, with an assistant, would be responsible for the department and for the inspection of the state of preparation for war, the troops, and systems.
(*b*) One Inspector of warlike stores, factories, and contracts.
(*c*) Such clerical staff as is required.

Estimated Military Budget

96. However suitable these recommendations may be to the requirements of the country, a great deal must depend on the burden which they will impose upon its financial resources. I have, therefore, calculated what the annual cost of the Citizen Force would be when all the proposals have reached fruition and would be in full working order. Naturally, during the transition period the cost of the force would be less than this forecast, but it must be remembered that a considerable amount of non-recurring expenditure in the shape of guns and munitions of war should be obtained during this transition period, the upkeep of which has been fully allowed for in my estimate.

The Staff Corps

97. The Staff Corps, composed of 350 officers at the rates of pay that I have suggested, amounts to a total annual cost of £142,000. There will be, in addition, the cost of the permanent services, and the 400 warrant officers and non-commissioned officers required in the areas. These under the new rates will amount to £234,000, making a total of £376,000.

The Citizen Force

98. The pay of the new Citizen Force has been estimated on the training periods proposed in my paper, and is calculated as follows :—

Table VII.—Pay of New Citizen Troops

Rank.	Artillery and Engineers.						Other Arms.					
	1st Year.		2nd Year.		Each of following Years.		1st Year.		2nd Year.		Each of following Years.	
	Days.	Rate.	Days.	Rate.	Days.	Rate.	Days.	Rate.	Days.	Rate.	Days.	Rate.
		s. d.		s. d.		s. d.		s. d.		s. d.		s. d.
Under Sergt.	17	3 0	17	4 0	13	4 0	8	3 0	8	4 0	6	4 0
Sergeants	..	..	..	..	25	8 0	..	..	..	..	16	8 0
Lieutenants	..	..	..	..	25	20 0	..	..	..	..	16	20 0
Captains	..	..	..	..	25	30 0	..	..	..	..	16	30 0
Majors	..	..	..	..	25	40 0	..	..	..	..	16	40 0
Lieut.-Colonel	..	..	..	..	25	50 0	..	..	..	..	16	50 0
Colonels	..	..	..	..	25	60 0	..	..	..	..	16	60 0

99. Although the number of days in camp decreases after the second compulsory year, officers and sergeants have to attend the full number in order to train first and second year men.

The training of the new citizen troops will thus cost—

Pay and horse allowance	£276,000
Rations during continuous training	38,000
Forage during continuous training	15,000
Transport of troops	78,000
Clothing, service pattern only	100,000
Horse hire and local transport	25,000
Miscellaneous	15,000
Total	£547,000

THE MILITARY COLLEGE

100. I would estimate the cost of the proposed Military College to be—

TABLE VIII.—MILITARY COLLEGE

Estimated cost for 100 Cadets, of whom 20 hold free scholarships.

Military Staff

Personnel—		£
1	Director—Brigadier-General	1,200
1	Assistant Director (Responsible for—(*a*) Science of war, military history, tactics; and)	1,000
1	„ „ (Responsible for—(*b*) Organisation, military law, and administration)	700
4	Instructors, at £500 each	2,000
	(*a*) Garrison Artillery. (*b*) Field Artillery. (*c*) Military engineering, topography, and civil surveying. (*d*) Light Horse and Infantry.	
1	Adjutant and Quartermaster (also instructor in signalling)	400
5	Staff Sergeant Instructors	1,000
2	Military Clerks	350

Civil Staff

6	Lecturers at £500 each	£3,000
	(*a*) Mathematics. (*b*) Modern languages (two)	

(*c*) General history and English.
(*d*) Chemistry, mineralogy, geology, and physical science.
(*e*) Drawing (including mechanical).

	Fees for lectures in special subjects, hygiene, veterinary, etc.	£200
	Maintenance of apparatus, books, and materials . .	900
	Fees to local practitioners for medical attendance . .	200
	Incidentals, postage, telegrams, etc.	500
	Uniforms for Cadets (free)	600
	Travelling expenses of officers and families, and double pay to prevent lapse in duties (average 1 per year) . .	900
	Ammunition (gun and S.A.) for practice . . .	1,000
	Catering and domestic services, at £50 per cadet . .	5,000
6	Pay of 1 farrier at £200, 5 stablemen at £150, and maintenance of 50 horses at £30, etc.	2,500
27		£21,450
	Deduct payment of £80 per annum by 80 cadets, 20 holding free scholarships	6,400
		£15,050

(The first cost of land, buildings, furniture, and horses, etc., is not included.)

Instructional Grant.

101. For the instruction of the citizen officer outside the Military College, I have allowed £4000, made up of :—

	The free circulation of a military magazine—one number per month—would cost annually up to .	£1,200
	One clerk	200
	Postage, prizes for problems and essays and incidentals	300
	Cost of materials, other publications, and articles from outside sources . . . . . (say)	300
	Total	£2,000
	In addition—	
	Staff for special courses for Citizen Officers .	2,000
		£4,000

SUMMARY.

102. The other items of the estimate work out at almost the same as that estimated in the fourth year of the Government scheme, except that, with increased training, more gun and small-arm ammunition will be required, and I have therefore added £44,000 to that estimate.

103. By estimating £100,000 for miscellaneous a margin of safety has, I think, been allowed.

104. The total cost can thus be summarised at £1,884,000, as below.

TABLE IX.—SUMMARY OF ANNUAL COST IN SEVENTH YEAR OF PROPOSED SCHEME

	Estimated Cost in Seventh Year of Proposed Scheme.
	£
Staff Corps	142,000
Permanent Services	234,000
New Citizen Troops.	
Pay, allowances and camp expenditure	547,000
New Military College	15,000
Home instruction of the citizen officer	4,000
Compulsory Cadet Training.	
Junior and senior organisations, including all stores required	161,000
Reserves.	
Members of rifle clubs, etc.	126,000
Fixed Defences.	
Material only, construction of works being provided from the 'New Works' vote	40,000
Mobile Armament.	
Field artillery and machine-guns, with vehicles, harness, and all stores	60,000
Small arms	85,000
Ammunition—gun and S.A.	136,000
General equipment	84,000
New works and buildings, rent, repair, and maintenance	150,000
Miscellaneous	100,000
Total	£1,884,000

PART II.—THE TRANSITION PERIOD

105. If the system I have recommended in Part I. is accepted by the Commonwealth Government, a period of transition must elapse before it comes into complete working order, during which much may be done to make or mar the scheme.

106. It would, therefore, be of great importance that the working out of the details during this time should be placed in charge of one or more officers who thoroughly understand the scope and the spirit of the system for the land defence of Australia which I have proposed.

107. It will be easily realised that proposals may be made which would prejudice in the future the efficient working of the new organisation, though in themselves momentarily expedient. I think it is, therefore, essential that all schemes should be tested in the light of their utility to the full-grown Citizen Force, and, when found wanting in that respect, should only be given effect to as purely temporary measures, to be discontinued as soon as the development of the new Citizen Force allows.

AREAS

108. A great deal of preparatory work may be done in the areas where registration will give the most suitable limits and organisation, and in which the young men should be got together in their respective classes with as little delay as possible.

109. I would, therefore, recommend that the post of area officers should be temporarily filled by the most suitable available Militia and Volunteer officers, as well as by the existing permanent instructional staff. As regards the former, areas convenient to their civil avocations might be chosen, and an adequate salary given for the work. By the efficient performance of their duties they will obtain valuable experience, which will doubtless qualify them for the future command of battalions, regiments, and brigades.

110. The process of merging the existing units into the National Citizen Force will be gradual, and I should advise that the designations and historical associations of the present regiments should be continued under the new system, in which each regiment should have a territorial title as well as a number. In this way the *esprit de corps* of the Militia and Volunteers would be transmitted to the new Citizen Force.

OFFICERS

111. I do not consider that any of the officers now serving should be transferred to the Staff Corps, which ought to be entirely formed from the graduates of the Military College, but in order to enable the

officers appointed to areas during the transition period to give instruction to the new force, I would put such officers, when necessary, through a short course in the duties of an area officer. For this purpose I have put in the estimates funds sufficient to provide additional instructors.

WARRANT AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS

112. Australia now maintains 229 instructional staff, warrant, and non-commissioned officers; eventually about 400 will be required.

113. During the transition stage, the existing warrant and non-commissioned officers should be distributed throughout the areas and supplemented by the most suitable appointments that can be made.

114. If these proposals are thoroughly carried out, the completely trained Staff Corps officer will find his area mapped out, the registration complete, the various classes from junior cadets upwards formed, and he should thus take over a going concern, only requiring the guidance which he, by reason of his thorough military grounding, can give to raise each quota of the National Force to the high standard of efficiency which, I hope, the people of Australia will always demand of their military forces.

* [Lord Kitchener, after inspecting the New Zealand Military Forces, advised that the New Zealand Army should be remodelled and developed on the same lines as the Australian.]

THE NAVAL FORCES OF THE COMMONWEALTH.—RECOMMENDATIONS by ADMIRAL SIR REGINALD HENDERSON, K.C.B., 1911

Melbourne, 1st March 1911.

SIR,—In accordance with the request made to me by the Commonwealth Government, I have the honour to forward herewith, for the consideration of that Government, my recommendations in regard to the general administration, organisation, distribution, etc., of the Naval Forces of the Commonwealth.

2. In your letter of 11th August 1910, you stated, on behalf of the Government, that 'the main points on which we wish to have the benefit of your experience are—

'(*a*) the best position for the Central Naval Base, and the works necessary to make it effective;

'(*b*) the positions for secondary bases for the service of a Fleet, and what we should, in your opinion, do to make them of best service in any naval operations.

We shall be also glad of your views as to the location and character of the training schools for preparing *personnel* for our Naval Service, to include both officers and men and all branches of the Service; and on any other naval matters upon which you may care to express an opinion.'

In subsequent conversation with you I learnt that, as far as practicable, all action necessary in the first stage of the development of the Commonwealth Fleet was being deferred until the receipt of my recommendations, and that it was the desire of the Government that I should embody in my report my views as regards all the measures to be taken, both forthwith and in the future, in the formation of the Fleet.

3. I have not, therefore, restricted my recommendations to any special points, but have tendered advice on all the steps which, in my opinion, should be taken.

4. In order to gain full knowledge of Australian conditions and resources, more especially in regard to its harbours and their suitability for Naval Bases, I have visited the following harbours:—

Western Australia

Fremantle (including Cockburn Sound).
Bunbury.
Albany.

South Australia

Port Adelaide (including Largs Bay, etc.).
Port Lincoln.
Wallaroo.
Port Victor.

Northern Territory

Port Darwin.

Queensland

Thursday Island.
Cooktown.
Cairns.
Townsville.
Rockhampton (including Keppel Bay).
Gladstone (Port Curtis).
Maryborough.
Brisbane (including Moreton Bay).

New South Wales

Port Stephens.
Newcastle (and Lake Macquarie).
Broken Bay.
Sydney (Port Jackson).
Botany Bay.
Wollongong.
Port Kembla.
Jervis Bay.
St. George's Basin and Sussex Inlet.
Twofold Bay.

Tasmania

Launceston and River Tamar.
Devonport.
Burnie.
Hobart.
D'Entrecasteaux Channel.

Tasmania

Huon River.
Port Esperance.
Port Arthur.
Norfolk Bay.
Frederick Henry Bay.

Victoria

Port Western.
Port Phillip generally (including Port Melbourne, Williamstown, Geelong, Corio Bay).
Portland.

5. I have also fully considered from charts, plans, and reports, the following harbours, which I had not opportunities of visiting :—

Western Australia

Broome.
Cone Bay (King Sound).
Wyndham.

Papua

Port Moresby.

Queensland

Bowen (Port Denison).

New South Wales

Kiama.

6. Although I have confined my attention as regards the question of Naval Bases to the ports of the Commonwealth and its dependencies (this being the scope of my present service), yet it has been necessary for me, when reviewing the whole naval situation in the South Pacific, to give consideration to the positions of New Zealand, Fiji, and other portions of the empire in the Pacific; and my proposals will admit of any future naval developments in New Zealand and the Pacific Islands being readily fitted into one complete scheme.

7. I desire to express my high appreciation of the courtesy shown, and the assistance rendered to me by their Excellencies the Governors of the respective States, the Resident of the Northern Territory, the

State Governments and their officers, the local authorities at all the places which I have visited, and by the Australian people generally. By their aid I have been enabled to carry out my investigations under most favourable conditions.

8. All the arrangements for my tour were made by Captain Creswell, C.M.G., Director of the Commonwealth Naval Forces, assisted by Staff-Paymaster A. M. Treacy, C.N.S., both of whom accompanied me. I have to thank these officers for the most satisfactory and efficient manner in which all these arrangements were carried out.

9. In establishing a fleet of her own and developing her own naval resources, Australia is taking a large share in the inauguration of an Imperial movement which must result in strengthening the sea power of the Empire. I wish, however, to emphasise especially the fact that, although the Government may propose and guide, and although the naval administration may organise and foster, the naval development of the Commonwealth, yet the ultimate success of this development rests, and must continue to rest, with the Australian people; upon their sincere and whole-hearted support and co-operation depends the efficiency of their fleet. Moreover, it will be to the *personnel* of that fleet that the people will entrust the guardianship of their homes.

I have full confidence that the people of this great country will show that they retain those maritime instincts which are the proud heritage of our race, and that they are determined to support their Government in having an ideal naval force imbued with the naval traditions of our past, thoroughly efficient in every respect; a force to which every officer and man will be proud to belong.

10. In conclusion, I would express the hope that my recommendations will assist and facilitate the Government in the furthering of their wise naval policy.

I have the honour to be, Sir, your obedient Servant,

REG. HENDERSON, *Admiral* (retired).

The Hon. the Minister of State for Defence.

INTRODUCTORY

Australia heretofore has trusted to the Mother Country for her protection, which has depended on the command of the sea, or in other words, upon sea power, and this sea power has enabled Australians to remain undisturbed in their magnificent country, and allowed them to arrive at their present condition of great prosperity. Australia has now determined to take her share of the defence of her own territory, and it is certain that it must still rest on the sea power of the Empire.

2. Once the command of the sea is lost by the Empire, no local system of defence, naval or military, could secure Australia's autonomy, and she would be the prey of the strongest maritime power.

3. Any nation that threatens or attacks the sea power of the Empire must be an enemy of Australia and of the whole Empire.

4. Unity of purpose in this matter with regard to all parts of the Empire will give great strength to the sea power of the Empire, and, too, unity of control in war of all the naval forces of the Empire is of paramount importance.

5. The primary object of an Australian Navy, therefore, should be the immediate support of the rest of the Empire's naval forces in their determination to retain the command of the sea.

6. The geographical position of Australia, its immense coastline, sparsely populated districts, large shipping and coasting trade, and over-sea communications, require that the secondary object should be the protection of ports and shipping from raids and incursions by hostile ships and cruisers.

7. Field-Marshal Viscount Kitchener of Khartoum has well set forth the strategic position of Australia in his Memorandum on the Defence of Australia, in which he says :—

> 'It is an axiom held by the British Government that the Empire's existence depends primarily upon the maintenance of adequate and efficient naval forces. As long as this condition is fulfilled, and as long as British superiority at sea is assured, then it is an accepted principle that no British Dominion can be successfully and permanently conquered by an organised invasion from over-sea.
>
> '2. But, in applying this principle to Australia, considerations of time and space cannot be disregarded. The conduct of a great war depends upon the calculated and proper combination of naval, military, and diplomatic forces, and it is quite conceivable that, in the future, as in the past, national considerations may require the concentration of British naval forces in one or other theatre of operations. It follows that, in seas remote from such a concentration, the British naval forces may find themselves for the moment inferior in force to an actual, or potential, enemy. In such a situation, although our ultimate superiority at sea might not be a matter of doubt, some time might elapse before our command of the sea was definitely assured in all waters. It therefore becomes the duty of all Self-Governing Dominions to provide a military force adequate, not only to deal promptly with any attempt at invasion, but also to ensure local safety and public confidence until our superiority at sea has been decisively and comprehensively asserted. For this reason it has been agreed that the Home

Forces of the United Kingdom should be so organised as to compel an enemy contemplating an invasion to make the attempt on such a scale as to be unable to evade our naval forces. The same arguments apply to Australia, and its land forces should be calculated and organised on this basis.'

8. The military policy of the Commonwealth is thus based on two assumptions:—

(*a*) That the sea supremacy of the Empire will be maintained, though some period may elapse after the outbreak of hostilities before the command of the sea becomes effective.

(*b*) That the naval forces in Australian waters will be of sufficient strength to preclude an enemy who attempts invasion on a large scale from evading them during such a period.

9. The Commonwealth Naval Forces will, therefore, be required to share in attaining (*a*) to fulfil (*b*), and also to render protection on the high seas to merchant-shipping, upon which the commerce, and therefore the prosperity, of Australia depend; and it is, with these requirements in view, that I make the following recommendations.

STRENGTH OF THE COMMONWEALTH FLEET

10. In the first instance it is necessary to find some basis on which to determine the strength of the fleet that should be maintained by the Commonwealth.

11. Being girt by the sea, and having no inland frontiers to protect, Australia is compelled to regard the sea itself as her first and natural line of defence. If Australia were an independent nation the sea power required by her to render her immune from aggression would be determined by the sea power of her possible enemy or enemies; her existence in a state of independence could only be assured by the maintenance of an Australian Naval Force equal to, if not greater than, that of the possible enemy. The enormous cost of modern navies, coupled with the present comparatively small population of the Commonwealth, place the contemplation of such an Australian Fleet beyond the bounds of practical politics, and outside the purview of my report.

12. Australia cannot, therefore, at the present time do more than undertake her share of the burden now borne, almost entirely, by the Mother Country: as the provision of adequate Naval Defence is essential to every Australian who desires to preserve his nationality, it would seem just to assess such share in proportion to population.

13. Population might be taken as a basis also because war affects all the members of a nation, not only the Government and its armed

forces; because it is on each individual that the duty of defending his country should, and would in the last resource, fall; because the strength of a nation must to a great extent, more especially where universal service obtains, depend upon its population; and, finally, because it is the people by their votes, where all are equal, who decide the policy of their Government.

14. The population of the United Kingdom may be taken as approximately 45 millions, the population of the Commonwealth as 4½ millions, a proportion of 10 to 1. In 1910 the United Kingdom voted approximately £40,000,000 for naval purposes for the current year; on this basis Australia's annual naval provision would be £4,000,000 now, increasing in later years proportionately to population.

15. Australia's over-sea commerce, which is the life-blood of her prosperity and wealth, should also furnish a measure of her share in the benefits, and of the obligations, arising from the maintenance of the sea power on which such commerce depends for its very existence.

16. For the year 1909, the total value of the exports and imports of the United Kingdom and Australia are recorded as follows, approximately :—

	£	£
United Kingdom		1,094,000,000
Australia—Oversea .	116,000,000	
Inter-State (sea-traffic)	46,000,000	
		162,000,000

17. On the basis of oversea trade Australia's share would thus be approximately 11 per cent., and on the total sea trade 15 per cent. of the naval expenditure of the Mother Country.

18. I have thought it reasonable, therefore, to frame my proposals on the assumption that Australia desires to possess, as early as practicable, a fleet whose annual cost approximates to this proportion, increasing gradually as the population and wealth of the Commonwealth grow. For this expenditure I am recommending the provision of a Fleet which should fulfil the requirements laid down in paragraph 9.

19. In order to obtain the necessary efficiency with the minimum cost, *continuity of policy* is essential; and the development of the Commonwealth Naval Forces must proceed on definite lines with a definite goal in view, so that each step taken will advance the completion of the whole, and the development must be regulated by her resources both in population and in wealth.

20. During the period of naval development the Commonwealth will have the advantage of benefiting by the experience of the British

Navy, and of obtaining from that Navy such *personnel* and *matériel* as she may require.

21. The first step towards the development of a Commonwealth Navy has already been decided upon, namely, the building of the 'Fleet Unit,' which comprises—

One armoured cruiser,
Three protected cruisers,
Six torpedo-boat destroyers,
Three submarines.

22. The mere possession of ships does not make a navy, though to a great extent the number and size of the vessels do regulate the provisions which are essential for its maintenance, of which provisions the following are the most important :—

A.—Control and Administration

Selection and appointment of a Naval Board which, by the reputation and qualifications of its members, will command not only the confidence of the Commonwealth, but will possess also the confidence, loyal sympathy, and support of the Navy it administrates.

B.—Personnel

Adoption of such conditions of service in the Commonwealth Navy as will compare favourably with the conditions of employment on shore in Australia, and, under a system of pensions for long service, State insurance, or annuities, attract suitable men to devote the best part of their lives to the naval profession.

C.—Training

Adoption of definite and thorough systems of training which will secure to the Commonwealth an efficient naval *personnel.*

D.—Naval Bases

Protection of selected naval bases.

Complete equipment of principal naval bases and selected subbases with all necessary plant and accessories essential to the maintenance of modern war vessels.

E.—Communications and Intelligence Systems

Organisation of a complete and efficient system of communications and intelligence.

F.—Naval Reserves

Regulation of the entry, training, etc., of the naval reserve officers and men.

G.—Stores

Efficient arrangements for the supply, and immediate readiness, of all naval stores and requirements.

23. All these provisions must be organised and developed concurrently with the building of the vessels, but it is necessary to emphasise the fact that, while a modern war vessel can be built within two years of her being ordered, the *personnel* require a period of training varying at the earliest from nine years and a half for a lieutenant to six years for a petty officer and two years for an able seaman, before each is fitted to take his place in such a vessel.

24. As regards the provision of ammunition, ordnance, shipbuilding, *matériel*, and naval stores, etc., generally, I am of opinion that it will be an advantage to the Commonwealth, either by the establishment of Government workshops, or by encouraging private enterprise, to build up the plant and power necessary to accomplish the whole of the manufacture of these, but that the progressive advancement should be slow and gradual with small beginning and ever-increasing accomplishment until all the requisites of a ship of war, including the largest guns, can be manufactured in Australia.

25. The determining factors which have guided me in my recommendations as to the composition and distribution of the Fleet (to be maintained on the above financial basis) are—

Primarily

The future Imperial responsibilities in the Pacific and their attendant obligations, as far as can be foreseen from the probable political situation, in conjunction with similar Imperial responsibilities and obligations in other parts of the world.

Secondarily

(*a*) The local naval needs of the Commonwealth in Australian waters.

(*b*) The possible assumption by the Commonwealth of responsibility for the peace patrol duties of the South Pacific generally.

26. I have divided my recommendations into three parts, comprising—

PART I.—THE COMPLETED FLEET (the goal to be attained).

PART II.—THE INITIAL STAGE—REQUIREMENTS OF THE FLEET UNIT AND FIRST SEVEN YEARS (the foundation).

PART III.—SUCCESSIVE STAGES OF DEVELOPMENT (culminating in the completed fleet).

APPENDICES, as shown in the list on page 391, those noted as confidential being printed separately.

PART I.—THE COMPLETED FLEET

1. The completed Fleet to be composed as follows :—

8 armoured cruisers,
10 protected cruisers,
18 destroyers,
12 submarines,
3 depot ships for flotillas,
1 fleet repair ship.

52

2. This fleet would when fully manned require a *personnel* of approximately 15,000 officers and men, divided as follows :—

Commissioned officers—	
Executive and engineer	461
Medical	54
Accountant	63
Subordinate officers—	
Executive	96
Accountant	11
Warrant officers—	
Executive	201
Engineer	43
Accountant	6
Petty officers and men—	
Seamen	5,865
Stokers	5,290
Carry forward,	12,090

Brought forward,	12,090
Artisans	591
Miscellaneous (including both officers and men)	1,151
Total	13,832
Under training and on passage	1,012
Grand Total	14,844

3. The Fleet to be divided into two Divisions as follows :—

EASTERN DIVISION.

Class of Vessel.	Number.		
	In Full Commission.	With Reduced Crew.	Total.
Armoured cruiser	3	1	4
Protected cruiser	3	2	5
Torpedo-boat destroyer	8	4	12
Submarine	3	..	3
Depot ship for torpedo-boat destroyers	2	..	2
Fleet repair ship	..	..	..
Total	19	7	26

WESTERN DIVISION.

Armoured cruiser	3	1	4
Protected cruiser	3	2	5
Torpedo-boat destroyer	4	2	6
Submarine	9	..	9
Depot ship for torpedo-boat destroyers	1	..	1
Fleet repair ship	1	..	1
Total	21	5	26
Grand Total of both Divisions	40	12	52

4. The Divisions to be divided into squadrons and flotillas, and the peace distribution to be as follows :—

Squadron or Flotilla.	Composition.	Principal Base.	Sub-Bases.
	EASTERN DIVISION.		
First Main Squadron	4 armoured cruisers (1 with reduced crew).	Sydney.	Thursday Island.
First Cruiser Squadron	5 protected cruisers (2 with reduced crew).	Sydney.	Thursday Island.
First Destroyer Flotilla	6 destroyers (2 with reduced crew).	Brisbane	Thursday Island. Townsville.
	1 depot ship.		
Second Destroyer Flotilla	6 destroyers (2 with reduced crew).	Port Western	River Tamar. Hobart.
	1 depot ship.		Port Lincoln.
First Submarine Flotilla	3 submarines . .	Port Stephens	Sydney. Brisbane.
	WESTERN DIVISION.		
Second Main Squadron	4 armoured cruisers (1 with reduced crew).	Fremantle	Port Darwin. Port Western.
	1 fleet repair ship.		
Second Cruiser Squadron	5 protected cruisers (2 with reduced crew).	Fremantle	Port Darwin. Port Western.
Third Destroyer Flotilla	6 destroyers (2 with reduced crew).	Fremantle	Albany. Cone Bay.
	1 depot ship.		Port Darwin.
Second Submarine Flotilla	3 submarines . .	Port Western	River Tamar. Hobart. Port Lincoln.
Third Submarine Flotilla	3 submarines . .	Port Lincoln	River Tamar. Hobart. Port Western
Fourth Submarine Flotilla	3 submarines . .	Fremantle	Albany. Cone Bay. Port Darwin.

5. For purposes of recruiting, Australia should be divided into two recruiting areas, eastern and western, to man the Eastern and Western Divisions respectively.

Area.	Main Recruiting Centre.	Sub-Centre.	States included.	
			State.	Population in Millions.
Eastern	Sydney	Brisbane Newcastle	Queensland	0·57
			New South Wales	1·62
			Total	2·19
Western	Melbourne	Adelaide Hobart Fremantle	Tasmania	0·18
			Victoria	1·30
			South Australia	0·41
			Western Australia	0·27
			Total	2·16

6. Naval depots and schools to be established at—

Sydney—Naval depot: gunnery, signal, wireless telegraphy, and cookery schools.

Port Western—Naval depot: torpedo school.

7. The following list contains the names of the places affected by the above proposals, in geographical order, from Thursday Island to Port Darwin, *viâ* the south, showing for what purpose each will be required:—

Thursday Island	Fleet secondary base; destroyer base.
Townsville	Destroyer sub-base.
Brisbane	Destroyer base; submarine sub-base; recruiting sub-centre.
Port Stephens	Submarine base.
Newcastle	Recruiting sub-centre.
Sydney	Fleet primary base; naval depot; gunnery, signal, wireless telegraphy and cookery schools; main recruiting centre (naval college and boys' training ship will also be at Sydney).

Hobart	Destroyer sub-base; submarine sub-base.
Beauty Point (River Tamar)	Destroyer sub-base; submarine sub-base.
Melbourne (or its vicinity)	Main recruiting centre.
Port Western	Destroyer base; submarine base; naval depot; torpedo school.
Adelaide	Recruiting sub-centre.
Port Lincoln	Submarine base; destroyer sub-base.
Albany	Destroyer sub-base; submarine sub-base.
Fremantle	Fleet primary base; destroyer base; submarine base; recruiting centre.
Cone Bay (or other port on N.W. coast	Destroyer sub-base; submarine sub-base.
Port Darwin	Fleet secondary base; destroyer sub-base; submarine sub-base.

NOTE.—See Appendix F as to which of these places will be used also as headquarters for training of Naval Reserves.

8. Though I have divided the proposed fleet into two Divisions (each of which should be under the command of an Admiral or Commodore), and have allocated certain bases and sub-bases to the squadron and flotillas of each Division, it is not intended that their sphere of employment should be restricted to the vicinity of the ports so named; in order to give all officers and men the opportunity of gaining acquaintance with the whole of the waters of Australia, ships of the two Divisions should be interchanged from time to time, and at least once a year the two Divisions should meet for fleet tactics and exercises under the Senior Admiral, and for manœuvres, in which one Division would be opposed to the other.

9. Excellent centres for such purpose in the summer time are Hobart and its vicinity, Jervis Bay, and Port Lincoln; in the winter time ships should work on the Northern Coast.

10. Port Western is a very good harbour, and *until Cockburn Sound (Fremantle), which is far more important from a strategical point of view, is ready,* this port should be utilised by the Western Division as one of its principal anchorages, and as a place where ships should be able to replenish with coal or oil fuel.

11. Port Stephens is also a very good harbour. My proposals only suggest its use as a submarine base for the present, but it should be surveyed and examined thoroughly, and land reserved, with a view to possible requirements of future naval expansion.

12. The Second Destroyer Flotilla, which is based on Port Western, could easily be utilised in time of war for service with the main fleet or elsewhere, as might be required; and in peace time it should be exchanged at times with other destroyer flotillas, which are employed under more trying conditions of climate, etc.

13. Cone Bay (King Sound) is suggested as the destroyer sub-base, which is required on the North-West Coast, though I have not visited it myself. I am informed that it is better protected in bad weather than Broome, but as surveying is now being carried out in that part of the coast, I suggest that this information should be confirmed, and it may be that a more suitable harbour than either could be selected.

14. In connection with my recommendations as to Port Darwin and also Fremantle, I desire to express, from a naval point of view, the urgent necessity of establishing railway communication between those places and the centres of population, manufactures, and resources which are required for the maintenance of a fleet.

15. I have not made any special proposals as regards fleet auxiliaries required for the services of the Fleet, as I consider that there are sufficient suitable merchant ships available in Australian waters to meet the needs in time of war. The necessary preparatory arrangements should, however, be completed in peace time, so that prompt action can be taken in war.

16. The above gives the general outline of the goal to be attained; in Parts II. and III. and in the Appendices further details of the requirements are embodied, with proposals as to how, and by what steps, they should be reached. Complete proposals as to wireless telegraph stations are contained in Appendix E.

PART II.—THE INITIAL STAGE (1911–1918).

I.—THE REQUIREMENTS OF THE FLEET UNIT.

II.—THE REQUIREMENTS OF THE HARBOUR TRAINING ESTABLISHMENTS.

III.—THE ADDITIONS TO THE FLEET UNIT TO BE EFFECTED BY 1918 AND THEIR REQUIREMENTS.

The preparatory measures which should be taken in hand forthwith are those necessary to meet the requirements of the fleet unit on its arrival in Australia. The actual vessels of which the fleet unit is to be composed have been decided on, viz.:—

1 Armoured cruiser,
3 Protected cruisers,
6 Torpedo-boat destroyers,
3 Submarines.

2. The further measures to be taken may be divided under the same headings as shown in the introductory remarks, paragraph 22.

A.—CONTROL AND ADMINISTRATION

3. A Naval Board should be constituted without delay, on the lines laid down in Appendix A.

B.—PERSONNEL

4. Appendix B[1] contains detailed information as to entry, training, etc., of the *personnel* required.

[1] [Omitted here.]

5. It is recommended that the requirements of the Commonwealth completed Fleet should be divided over four eras, consisting respectively of—

First Era —7 years Second Era—5 years Third Era —5 years Fourth Era—5 years	Total, 22 years.

6. These fixed eras are suggested only as a convenient guide to a procedure by which the recommendations embodied in this report can be carried out gradually, and by which the growth of the Fleet in size and number of vessels can proceed concurrently, as far as practicable, with the entry and education of the *personnel* that it will require.

7. The total period of 22 years is taken as the maximum required; the higher ranks of officers cannot be obtained in a shorter period, and a period of 22 years is also convenient because it is the length of service, from the age of 18, which continuous service men in the mother Navy are required to complete to be eligible for pension, and is the period which is recommended for adoption for 'long service' in the Commonwealth Fleet.

8. Should the Commonwealth desire to hasten the completion of their Fleet and its requirements, it would be easy to do so, as regards the provision of the lower ranks and ratings required, by a proportionate increase in the numbers to be entered annually, but provision of the higher grades could not be accelerated appreciably.

9. It is specially recommended that the first era should cover seven years, as this longer era will give the Commonwealth time and opportunity for devoting her energies to providing and equipping the necessary harbour establishments, naval bases, etc., as well as to putting the recruiting system on a sound basis.

Moreover, the requirements of *personnel* for the fleet unit with those for the various harbour establishments (which must be established in the initial stage) and the small additional requirements of

the vessels proposed to be added to the fleet unit during the first era will, together, be greater than those of the subsequent shorter eras.

10. The total numbers of ranks and ratings that will be required in the first eras are :—

(*a*) *Personnel* required for manning the fleet unit .	2501
(*b*) *Personnel* required for manning harbour establishments and for administration . . .	1137
(*c*) *Personnel* required for manning the additions to the fleet unit to be made by 1918 (viz., 6 torpedo-boat destroyers, 3 submarines, 1 depot ship) .	746
Total	4384

I.—Personnel Requirements of the Fleet Unit

Note.—The proposals as to obtaining ranks and ratings from the Mother Country are made subject to the concurrence of the Admiralty.

11. Of the 2501 required for the Fleet unit the following ranks and ratings cannot be provided by Australia in the two years available, and must, therefore, be obtained from the Mother Country, under the agreement made at the Imperial Conference of 1909 :—

Commissioned officers . . .	98	Total, 1623.
Subordinate officers . . .	12	
Warrant officers	34	
Chief petty and other petty officers	406	
Leading ratings	305	
Other ratings	768	

The balance, 878, should be provided by the Commonwealth by the time the vessels of the Fleet unit arrive in Australia.

12. As regards the 144 officers required from the Mother Country, it is recommended that, as far as compatible with efficient manning of the vessels, they be selected by the Admiralty from Australians and from volunteers for service in Australia—

(*a*) They should be lent for three years' service in the Australian Fleet, counting their service as service in the mother Fleet, on their return to that Fleet.

(*b*) Those who volunteer on the expiration of their three years' service, for transfer to the Commonwealth service, and are recommended, to be allowed to do so if required by the Commonwealth and if the Admiralty concur.

(*c*) Officers so lent to draw Australian rates of pay and allowances while in the Commonwealth Naval Service, but not to receive any naval pay from the Mother Country during such time.

(*d*) The Commonwealth to provide passages to England for officers returning to the mother Fleet after three years' service, and to continue officers on full pay up to the date of arrival in England and completion of 'Foreign Service' leave according to usual scale.

13. The 1479 ratings required from the Mother Country should, as far as practicable, be selected from Australians and from volunteers for service in Australia. They should be obtained as follows:—

(*a*) 816 ratings to be recruited, if available, in the United Kingdom from (i.) ratings who have completed time for pension in the mother Navy and left the active service, provided that not more than two years have elapsed since their discharge to pension; such men should be entered into the Commonwealth service for a term of engagement of five years; and from (ii.) ratings in the Royal Fleet Reserve who have completed not less than seven years, and not more than twelve years' service in the mother Navy before their transfer to the Reserve, provided that not more than two years have elapsed since their transfer; such men should be entered into the Commonwealth service for a term of engagement of either five or seven years.

NOTE.—These men would not be part of the active service *personnel* of the mother Navy, and could, therefore, be more easily spared. The adoption of this proposal as to recruiting in the United Kingdom will allow time during which Australia can recruit and train her own men, and it will, during such period, provide the Commonwealth temporarily with reliable and efficient ratings. At the end of their Australian engagements these ratings could be re-engaged for further short periods, if found desirable, or others could be similarly recruited in their places, until sufficient ratings recruited in Australia were available to fill their vacancies. Such of these ratings as hold non-substantive ratings (*i.e.*, special gunnery or torpedo qualifications) should go through a short re-qualifying course in one of the Home training establishments prior to their embarkation in the vessels of the fleet unit, so that their knowledge may be brought up to date.

I would suggest that these men should, on engagement, be given the option of having *either* a free passage home on completion of their engagement *or* 'assisted passages' to Australia for their wives and families at the time of engagement.

(*b*) 103 ratings (officers' stewards and cooks) should be recruited in the United Kingdom for non-continuous service, being entered as required for vessels of the Fleet unit; they should be replaced subsequently by Australians as convenient, being provided by the Commonwealth with passages back to the United Kingdom if they wish to return.

(*c*) 560 ratings should be *lent* from the active service *personnel* of the mother Navy for periods of three years. These

ratings would be drafted by the Admiralty as required, and should draw Australian rates of pay and allowances while in the Commonwealth Naval Service.

NOTE.—Should the numbers available from source (*a*) not prove adequate, it would be necessary to increase the number required to be lent under (*c*).

14. The number of ranks and ratings to be recruited in Australia for the Fleet unit is 878.

15. It is recommended that the ratings in the Commonwealth Navy eventually should be composed approximately as follows:—

Three-fourths of total number to be engaged for 'continuous service' (viz., engagement for twelve years from the age of eighteen, with the option of re-engaging for a further ten years).

One-fourth of total number to be engaged for 'short service' (viz., engagement for seven or five years).

If the first 'short service' engagement can be fixed at seven years instead of five, the building up of the Commonwealth's Australian-recruited *personnel* will be greatly facilitated. A greater proportion would be inclined to re-engage after seven years than after five (*i.e.*, re-engage to complete the 'long-service' period of 12 years), and the growth of the Commonwealth Fleet Reserve (*see* Appendix F), which Reserve will not be needed in the early stages of the Commonwealth Navy, would be retarded.

16. Officers of all branches of the Commonwealth Navy, except medical officers, chaplains, and naval instructors, should be entered under similar condition to those obtaining in the mother Navy. (*See* Appendix B.)

17. Ratings of all branches, except certain artisan ratings, officers' stewards, and cooks, bandsmen, and sick berth ratings, should be entered under similar conditions to those obtaining in the mother Navy (*see* Appendix B), except that, as recommended in paragraph 15, a term of seven years is proposed instead of a term of five years for the first engagement for 'short service' men.

18. It is not recommended that a corps of Royal Marines should be established in Australia, as the introduction of Royal Marines does not appear to be necessary in the initiation of a new Navy. Their places in the complements of vessels will be filled by additional seaman ratings.

19. I am of opinion that the duties and work of seaman and stoker ratings should be assimilated and combined, and recommend that this course be pursued with all *continuous service* seaman and stoker entrants until the time arrives for a selection to be made from them of men to qualify for gunnery and torpedo ratings. Men who qualified in such ratings would then be appropriated permanently to the seaman branch; the remainder should and could continue to fulfil both

duties until they attain a 'leading rating,' when they should be allocated as leading seamen or leading stokers, and remain in their respective branches permanently. Men should be given the advantage of choosing between the two branches when compatible with the requirements of the service.

20. In view of the substitution of seamen for marines in ships' complements, the duties of officers' stewards will have to be performed by some other ratings; a proportionate increase in the number of officers' stewards, 2nd and 3rd class, is therefore recommended; having regard to the fact that such substitution will, to a small extent, affect the fighting efficiency of the *personnel* as a whole, it is recommended that all officers' steward ratings, 2nd and 3rd class (who will be non-continuous service men), should be given a training similar to that required for the old rating of 'trained man' in the mother Navy, and no steward entered in the 3rd class should be eligible for advancement to the 2nd class unless he has been so trained.

21. As regards the chief petty officer rating of electrician now existing in the mother Navy, it is considered that the amalgamation of this rating with that of the armourer branch would be advantageous. It is therefore recommended that the rating of electrician should not be introduced into the Commonwealth Navy, but that additional armourer's crews should be entered, certain of whom (on attaining the rating of armourer's mate) would be trained specially in the torpedo school in electrical and torpedo work. A torpedo branch of the armourer ratings would thus be constituted in which men would advance, similarly to those who remained in the gunnery branch, to the rating of chief armourer. The total complements of ships would not be altered by this proposal, but armourers for torpedo work (of various grades of rank) would replace the electricians.

22. Thus, on the assumptions that the proposals will meet with the concurrence of the Admiralty, and that the ratings to be obtained from the United Kingdom will be available, the immediate measures to be taken by the Commonwealth for the provision of the 878 ranks and ratings required for the vessels of the Fleet unit are as follows:—

NOTE.—Though tabulated consecutively, these measures should be undertaken *concurrently*.

(*a*) Formulate the conditions of service and give them every possible publicity.

(*b*) Establish and open recruiting centres, and develop recruiting, as shown in Appendix C.[1]

(*c*) Acquire the *Sobraon* as a training ship for boys, and, as soon as she is ready, recruit 100 boys between the ages of 15½ and 16½, and train them so that they may be available to join the vessels of the Fleet unit on its arrival in Australia.

[1] [Omitted here.]

(*d*) Erect barracks and naval college at Sydney.
(*e*) Erect barracks at Port Western.
(*f*) Arrange for the transfer to the Commonwealth service of such Australians now belonging to the Imperial service and serving in certain of H.M. ships on the Australian Station and elsewhere as volunteer for transfer; for those who volunteer for such transfer to remain in the ships in which they are now serving until required by the Commonwealth; for such volunteers for transfer to be invited to effect a re-engagement for service of five or seven years in the Commonwealth Navy. Such transferees as are recommended and qualified for promotion should be advanced to the 'leading rating' of their respective grades and should be sent to the United Kingdom to qualify in non-substantive ratings, etc., preparative to embarking in the vessels built in the United Kingdom for Australia. The cost of men so transferred and cost of subsequent training to be borne by the Commonwealth from 1st July 1911.
(*g*) All recruiting in Australia hitherto performed by the Imperial naval authorities for service in the Imperial Navy to cease forthwith, and such recruiting to be taken over at once by the Commonwealth.
(*h*) The vessels of the Imperial Navy now employed in training Australasians to continue recruiting and training for the Commonwealth Navy; men so recruited to be available for service in any Commonwealth vessels as required by the Commonwealth, their cost from date of entry being borne by the Commonwealth.
(*i*) Pending the arrival of the Fleet unit in Australia, and the construction of the above-mentioned barracks, temporary arrangements to be made for the accommodation and preliminary training of certain artificer, artisan, and other ratings in the naval barracks at Garden Island and in the depot ship *Penguin*, where they might be examined as to fitness by the naval authorities and employed as assistants to the existing staff of that establishment, the cost being borne by the Commonwealth.

23. Of the 878 ranks and ratings to be provided by the Commonwealth for the unit:—

143 should be entered for continuous service, viz.:—

Officers

2 assistant clerks (accountant branch subordinate officers).

Ratings—Engagement for Twelve Years

25 engine-room artificers (chief petty officers).
5 electricians (dependent on continuance of rating; if rating be discontinued, enter 5 additional armourer's crews).
6 shipwrights (leading rating).
2 blacksmith's mates (leading rating).
6 armourer's crew (or 11 as above). A.B. rating.
5 second cook's mates or cook's mates. A.B. rating.
88 seaman boys from *Sobraon* (of whom 14, if trained in time, should be signal boys and 7 buglers).
2 boy writers (accountant branch).
2 ship's steward boys (accountant branch).

143

And 735 ranks and ratings should be entered for non-continuous service (viz., 7 or 5 years; 7 years preferred as regards ratings)—

Officers

9 surgeons (*see* Appendix B).
4 chaplains (*see* Appendix B).

Ratings

1 chief bandmaster (chief petty officer).
4 sick berth stewards (medical branch), petty officer.
4 plumber's mates (artisan branch). Leading rating.
4 painter's, second class (artisan branch). Leading rating.
1 band corporal. Leading rating.
1 second sick berth steward (medical branch). Leading rating.
464 able seamen or ordinary seamen, to be recruited or obtained by transfer from Imperial ships as above.
200 stokers to be recruited or obtained by transfer from Imperial ships as above.
10 carpenter's crews (artisan branch).
3 cooper's crews (artisan branch).
5 sick berth attendants (medical branch).
22 bandsmen.
3 ship's musicians. (*Note.*—This is a leading rating in the mother Navy.)

735

II.—Personnel Requirements of Harbour Establishments

24. The *personnel* required for the several harbour establishments, etc., amounts to a total of 1137 ranks and ratings, distributed as follows :—

	Details.	Ranks and Ratings.	Total.
1. Cadets' Training College, Sydney	128	....	128
2. Naval Barracks, Sydney	259		
(*a*) Gunnery School	42	Attached to the Naval Barracks, Sydney	321
(*b*) Signal School	10		
(*c*) Wireless Telegraph School	7		
(*d*) Cookery School	3		
3. Training ship *Sobraon*, Sydney	99	....	89
4. *Personnel* now allotted to H.M.S. *Penguin* for Dockyard duties at Garden Island	185	....	185
			733
5. Fremantle	10	....	10
6. Naval Barracks, Port Western	240		
(*a*) Torpedo School	42	Attached to the Naval Barracks, Port Western	292
(*b*) Destroyer base and submarine base	10		
7. Thursday Island	9		
8. Brisbane	14		
9. Port Stephens	11		
10. Port Lincoln	11		
11. Beauty Point (River Tamar)	6		
12. Townsville	9	....	102
13. Albany	10		
14. Cone Bay (or other port on N.W. Coast)	6		
15. Hobart	11		
16. Port Darwin	9		
17. Board of Administration	6		
Grand Total	1137	....	1137

25. The *personnel* (128) proposed for the Cadets' Training College is considered sufficient to undertake the training of 120 naval cadets at one time ; this complement does not include the professional staff.

It is considered that an annual entry of 30 naval cadets will be sufficient to meet and maintain the number of officers of the military branch (566) required for the completed Fleet.

26. At an annual entry of 30 and at the rate of wastage experienced in the mother Navy, the Commonwealth should possess approximately—

(*a*) In 9½ years—

6 lieutenants,
6 sub-lieutenants,
24 acting sub-lieutenants,
76 midshipmen,
27 naval cadets in training ship at sea,
114 naval cadets in the college.

253

(*b*) At the end of the twelfth year 46 lieutenants, 23 sub-lieutenants, and remaining ranks as at (*a*)—Total, 310.

(*c*) At the end of the 22nd year as a *possible maximum*—

26 commanders,
214 lieutenants,
23 sub-lieutenants,
24 acting sub-lieutenants,
76 midshipmen,
27 naval cadets in training ship at sea,
114 naval cadets in college,

making in all a total of 504 officers of the military branch.

27. The Naval Barracks at Sydney, which include gunnery school, signal school, wireless telegraphy school, and cookery school, should be capable of accommodating a *personnel* of 2000 ranks and ratings, including the proposed complement (*see* paragraph 24) of 321 ranks and ratings. This complement is considered to be sufficient to carry out the entry and preliminary training of the *personnel* required for the Eastern Division of the Fleet, and for the qualifications and requalification of the lower gunnery ratings, lower signal ratings, lower wireless telegraphy ratings, and lower cook ratings, required by the completed Fleet.

28. The *personnel* proposed for the complement of the training ship *Sobraon* (99 ranks and ratings) is considered to be sufficient to undertake the training of approximately 300 boys at one time.

It is recommended that the entry of boys be effected as follows :—

Year.	Entries.
1911–12	100
1912–13	150, plus wastage on first year's entry.
1913–14	200, plus wastage on first and second years' entries.
1914–15	250, plus wastage on first, second, and third years' entries.
1915–16	300
1916–17	300
1917–18	300

Calculating the foregoing entrants to waste at approximately 4 per cent. per annum, and allowing for the following allocation of each year's entry to the signal and wireless telegraph branches—

Year.	Signal Branch.	Wireless Telegraph Branch.
1911–12	14	6
1912–13	20	6
1913–14	20	6
1914–15	20	6
1915–16	25	6
1916–17	25	6
1917–18	25	6

it is anticipated that by the end of 1918 (end of first era), there should be from this source approximately 1460 ratings in the Fleet, comprising 1289 seamen or stokers, 134 signal ratings, 37 wireless telegraph ratings, graded respectively as follows :—

Seaman or stoker	63 leading ratings, 449 able seamen or stokers, 249 ordinary seamen, 259 boys at sea, 269 boys in *Sobraon*.
Signal branch	11 leading ratings, 51 signalmen, 23 ordinary signalmen, 24 signal boys, 25 boys in *Sobraon*.
Wireless telegraph branch	5 leading ratings, 15 telegraphists, 5 ordinary telegraphists, 6 wireless telegraph boys, 6 boys in *Sobraon*.

29. DOCKYARD PERSONNEL.—The *personnel* (185 ranks and ratings) now allowed and borne in the complement of H.M.S. *Penguin* for working the dockyard establishment at Garden Island are provided by the mother Navy. It is considered that this number of ranks and ratings should be retained in their existing positions until such time as the dockyard establishment at Cockatoo Island is taken over by the Commonwealth as a naval dockyard, when a revision of the complement will be necessary; it is considered that it should then be practicable to reduce the complement of Garden Island to a very small number.

30. FREMANTLE.—Of the *personnel* (10) proposed for Fremantle it is considered that two only need be appointed at present, viz., one commander or senior lieutenant and one petty officer gunner's mate.

31. PORT WESTERN.—The naval barracks at Port Western, which include the torpedo school and destroyer base and submarine base, should be capable of accommodating a *personnel* of 2000 ranks and ratings, including the proposed complement of 292 ranks and ratings (*see* paragraph 24). This complement is considered to be sufficient to undertake the entry and preliminary training of the *personnel* required by the Western Division of the Fleet and for the qualification and re-qualification of the lower torpedo ratings required by the completed Fleet.

32. THURSDAY ISLAND.—The *personnel* (9) proposed for Thursday Island is not required to be appropriated immediately. It is, however, desirable that, as soon as work is commenced on this base, a commander or senior lieutenant should be appointed, the balance of the complement being completed as required.

33. BRISBANE.—Brisbane being a destroyer base which will be in early use by a flotilla, it is desirable that half the total complement proposed (14) be appointed by the time the Fleet unit arrives in Australia, viz. :—

1 commander or senior lieutenant,
1 warrant officer (torpedo gunner),
1 seaman petty officer (gunner's mate),
1 engineer commander or senior engineer lieutenant,
1 stoker petty officer,
1 stoker,
1 leading signalman.

34. PORT STEPHENS.—Port Stephens being the first submarine base to be developed, it is desirable that the following ranks and ratings be appointed before the Fleet unit arrives in Australia :—

1 lieutenant,
1 seaman petty officer (torpedo gunner's mate),

and the balance of the complement proposed (11) as soon as required.

35. PORT LINCOLN.—The complement (11) proposed for Port Lincoln will not be required at present. A warrant officer should be appointed as soon as work is commenced on this submarine base.

36. BEAUTY POINT (RIVER TAMAR).—The complement (6) proposed for Beauty Point will not be required at present.

37. TOWNSVILLE.—This port is a sub-base for the flotilla based on Brisbane; of the complement proposed (9) 1 warrant officer and 1 seaman petty officer (torpedo gunner's mate) should be appropriated before the Fleet unit reaches Australia, and the balance of the complement as required.

38. ALBANY.—The complement (10) proposed for Albany will not be required at present.

39. CONE BAY (OR OTHER PORT ON THE N.W. COAST).—The complement (6) proposed for Cone Bay will not be required at present.

40. HOBART.—Of the complement (11) proposed for Hobart, 1 lieutenant and 1 seaman petty officer (gunner's mate) should be appointed by the time the Fleet unit reaches Australia.

41. PORT DARWIN.—The complement (9) allowed to Port Darwin will not be required for the present.

42. Thus of the total *personnel* (1137 ranks and ratings) required to form the complements of all harbour establishments, etc.:—

(*a*) Those allocated to the respective barracks and the training college and the *Sobraon* will have to be provided as soon as they can be accommodated in their respective establishments.

(*b*) Ranks and ratings required for H.M.S. *Penguin* and Garden Island are already there and should be maintained (*see* paragraph 29).

(*c*) The ranks and ratings required for the other ports named will have to be supplied as these places are developed.

43. To provide for these requirements (1137) it is recommended that—

(*a*) 522 ranks and ratings to be lent by the active service of the mother Navy.

(*b*) 223 ratings be entered for five or seven years from the pensioners and Royal Fleet Reserve men in the United Kingdom.

(*c*) 217 ranks and ratings be supplied by the Commonwealth Permanent Naval Forces.

(*d*) 175 ranks and ratings be supplied by the Commonwealth, being entered for non-continuous service.

Of (*a*) 185 ranks and ratings are already at Sydney; (*c*) 89 ranks and ratings are not required at present, and should be otherwise utilised in the interim.

44. In addition to the above needs, it will be necessary to provide certain tenders for sea-going instruction with special reduced crews, when the gunnery and torpedo schools are in full work, and an attendant vessel for the first submarine flotilla on arrival.

III.—Additions to Unit to be Effected by 1918

45. The following additional vessels should be provided between 1913 and 1918:—

1 depot vessel 3 submarines 3 torpedo-boat destroyers	to be ready by end of 1914
3 torpedo-boat destroyers	to be ready by end of 1916
	to be ready by end of 1917
	to be ready by end of 1918

46. The addition of these vessels involves the addition of 746 ranks and ratings to the *personnel*. Subject to the progress of recruiting, they should be provided as follows:—

337 ranks and ratings to be lent from the active service *personnel* of the mother Navy.
205 ratings to be entered for five or seven years from pensioners and Royal Fleet Reserve men in the United Kingdom.
49 continuous service ratings to be provided in the Commonwealth.
155 non-continuous service ranks and ratings to be provided in the Commonwealth.

746

Depot Vessel for Destroyers

47. It is very desirable that the depot vessel should be provided as soon as practicable for service with the torpedo-boat destroyers. She should be of about 5000 tons displacement, and be smooth-sided, without sponsons or other obstructions, so that destroyers can lie alongside her; she should be capable of steaming at least 15 knots and be armed sufficiently to be able to beat off the attack of any armed mercantile cruiser.

It is recommended that her armament should consist of two 6-inch guns and two 4-inch guns; the former to be pivot-mounted with light shields, one on the forecastle and the other on the poop; the latter to be mounted one on each side, and to be of the same pattern as those mounted in the destroyers.

The depot ship should carry also four good searchlights and a good power-worked derrick capable of lifting five tons.

She should have turbine engines and consume oil fuel, of which she should be able to stow at least 1000 tons.

She should be fitted with a powerful distilling plant, a good wireless telegraph installation, also with air compressors and an ice machine.

She should stow not less than 24 spare torpedoes for the flotilla, and have a small workshop capable of carrying out minor repairs to the flotilla and to torpedoes.

Good accommodation, including large mess deck, spare cabins, bath rooms, and a roomy sick bay, is desirable.

C.—TRAINING OF PERSONNEL

48. Details as to the several systems of training recommended are contained in Appendix B.

D.—NAVAL BASES AND SUB-BASES

49. The work to be done at the several naval bases and sub-bases enumerated in Part I. is shown in complete form in Appendix D.

E.—COMMUNICATIONS AND INTELLIGENCE

50. Appendix E contains details of the scheme as recommended. The following steps should be taken in 1911–13 :—

Erect wireless stations at—
Sydney (two stations).
Fremantle,
Brisbane,
Thursday Island,
Port Western,
} Medium-power stations.

These stations to be erected as soon as possible ; the remainder of those named in Appendix E to be erected subsequently, but as soon as possible. The cost to be met by Post Office votes.

Visual signal stations should be established as necessary to complete the scheme laid down in confidential Appendix H.

F.—NAVAL RESERVES

51. The scheme for Naval Reserves is contained in Appendix F.

The enrolment in 1911 of cadets under the Defence Act of 1909 necessitates immediate action as regards those who will be required for naval service as the Naval Reserve.

The transfer of the Australian portion of the Imperial Royal Naval Reserve from the Imperial authorities to the Commonwealth in 1912 or 1913 also renders necessary certain measures in the next two years.

A headquarters administration staff should be appointed *forthwith*, consisting of—

Director of Naval Reserves (captain).

Assistant to director (commander).
Secretary to director (an accountant officer).
Clerical staff (say, three clerks).
District commandants and staffs should be appointed at the places named in Appendix F..
The number of cadets and men to be enrolled in each year are shown in Appendix F.

G.—STORES

52. A statement as to the reserves of stores to be provided for the maintenance of the Fleet unit is contained in Appendix G.

PART III.—SUCCESSIVE STAGES OF DEVELOPMENT, CULMINATING IN THE COMPLETED FLEET (1918–1933)

The measures to be taken subsequent to those given in Part II. in order to reach the final requirements outlined in Part I. are recommended to be taken in hand as follows :–

(A).—PROVISION OF ADDITIONAL SHIPS

2. The ships required to complete and maintain the Fleet should be provided as follows. This does not include the provision of vessels to replace others as they become worn-out (*see* paragraph G) :—

Era. (*See* paragraph 5, Part II.)	Year.	Ships to be provided—					
		Armoured Cruiser.	Protected Cruiser.	Torpedo-Boat Destroyer.	Submarine.	Depot Ship.	Fleet Repair Ship.
Total at end of First Era .	7th year	1	3	12	6	1	...
Second Era, 1918–1923.	8th year	...	...	6	...	1	...
	9th „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	10th „	...	1	...	...	1	...
	11th „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	12th „	...	2	...	6	...	...
Total at end of Second Era	...	3	6	18	12	3	...
Third Era, 1923–1928 .	13th year	...	...	...	...	...	1
	14th „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	15th „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	16th „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	17th „	...	2	...	...	...	...
Total at end of Third Era .	...	6	8	18	12	3	1

Era. (*See* paragraph 5, Part II.)	Year.	Ships to be provided—*continued.*					
		Armoured Cruiser.	Protected Cruiser.	Torpedo-Boat Destroyer.	Submarine.	Depot Ship.	Fleet Repair Ship.
Fourth Era, 1928–1933 . .	18th year	...	...	...	...	...	...
	19th „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	20th „	...	...	...	...	...	...
	21st „	1	...	...	...	...	...
	22nd „	...	2	...	...	...	...
Total at end of Fourth Era (complete Fleet)	...	8	10	18	12	3	1

(B.)—Provision of Additional Personnel

Second Era

3. The increase to be made to the Fleet in the Second Era (1918–1923) involves the provision by the end of 1923 of 3860 *additional* ranks and ratings consisting of—

163 Commissioned officers (all branches).
26 Subordinate officers (all branches).
57 Warrant officers (all branches).
716 Chief and other petty officers (all branches).
509 Leading ratings (all branches).
2253 Seamen, stokers, and others.
136 Boys.

3860

4. Subject to the progress of the recruiting, it is proposed that the above numbers be provided as follows :—

	Active Service, Mother Navy.	Pensioners and Reserves, United Kingdom.	Commonwealth.	
			Continuous Service.	Non-continuous Service.
Commissioned officers .	66	..	70	27
Subordinate officers . .	..	..	26	..
Warrant officers . .	17	..	10	..
Chief and other petty officers	100	295	300	21
Leading ratings . . .	100	100	284	25
Seamen, stokers, etc. . .	..	..	1413	840
Seamen, boys, etc. . .	..	..	136	..
	313	395	2239	913

Third Era

5. The increase to be made to the Fleet (*see* paragraph 2) in the Third Era (1923–1928) involves the provision by the end of 1928 of 3574 *additional* ranks and ratings, consisting of—

119	Commissioned officers (all branches).
40	Subordinate officers (all branches).
56	Warrant officers (all branches).
607	Chief and petty officers (all branches).
471	Leading ratings (all branches).
2127	Seamen, stokers, etc.
154	Seamen, boys, etc.
3574	

6. Subject to the progress of the recruiting, it is proposed to provide the above numbers as follows :—

	Active Service, Mother Navy.	Pensioners and Reserves, United Kingdom.	Commonwealth.	
			Continuous Service.	Non-continuous Service.
Commissioned officers	[1] ..	..	94	25
Subordinate officers	..	..	40	..
Warrant officers	..	..	56	..
Chief and other petty officers	..	..	586	21
Leading ratings	..	..	441	30
Seamen, stokers, etc.	..	..	1307	820
Seamen, boys, etc.	..	..	154	..
Totals	..	..	2678	896

[1] NOTE.—By the end of 1928 there should be a considerable number of Australian commissioned officers, and though they may not be senior enough to fill all vacancies in the complements, they will be able to effect the reliefs of officers of the mother Navy who have been previously lent to the Commonwealth and who are employed in the vessels added in the former periods.

Fourth Era

7. The increase to be made to the Fleet (*see* paragraph 2) in the Fourth Era (1928–1933) involves the provision by the end of 1933 of 2424 *additional* ranks and ratings, consisting of—

78	Commissioned officers	All branches.
26	Subordinate officers	
34	Warrant officers	
390	Chief and petty officers	
318	Leading ratings	
1466	Seamen, stokers, etc.	
112	Seamen, boys, etc.	
2424		

8. Subject to the progress of the recruiting, it is proposed to provide the above numbers as follows :—

	Active Service, Mother Navy.	Pensioners and Reserves, United Kingdom.	Commonwealth.	
			Continuous Service.	Non-continuous Service.
Commissioned officers	[1] ..	..	60	18
Subordinate officers	..	..	26	..
Warrant officers	..	..	34	..
Chief and other petty officers	..	..	378	12
Leading ratings	..	..	300	18
Seamen, stokers, etc.	..	..	906	560
Seamen, boys, etc.	..	..	112	..
	..	..	1816	608

[1] NOTE.—By the end of 1933 the Commonwealth Navy should be in a position to effect the relief of all but the higher ranks of officers and some few chief and petty officers, etc., who have been lent by the mother Navy from time to time.

(C).—TRAINING OF PERSONNEL

(D.)—NAVAL BASES AND SUB-BASES, ETC.

9. The training of *personnel*, the work on the naval bases and sub-bases, and provision of the other requirements of the completed Fleet should be proceeded with as shown in the Appendices.

APPENDICES

	PAGE
A. CONTROL AND ADMINISTRATION	391
B. PERSONNEL: ENTRY, TRAINING, AND EMOLUMENTS	Omitted
C. RECRUITING	Omitted
D. NAVAL BASES AND SUB-BASES, AND THEIR REQUIREMENTS	396
E. COMMUNICATIONS, ETC. (INCLUDING WIRELESS TELEGRAPH STATIONS)	405
F. NAVAL RESERVES	409
G. FINANCIAL ESTIMATE	412
H. (*Confidential*)—VISUAL SIGNAL STATIONS	Printed separately.
J. (*Confidential*)—FIXED DEFENCES	
K. (*Confidential*)—MINING, ETC	
L. (*Confidential*)—COMPLEMENTS OF SHIPS AND ESTABLISHMENTS	Not printed. In original MS. only.

APPENDIX A

CONTROL AND ADMINISTRATION

PROPOSALS AND GENERAL REMARKS

Introductory Remarks

Under the Naval Forces Act of 1910 power is taken to constitute a Naval Board with such functions 'as may be prescribed.'

Under the Regulations and Standing Orders for the Naval Forces of the Commonwealth at present in force 'the Naval Board shall, subject to the control of the Minister, be charged with the administration of 'all matters relating to the naval forces,' and 'the members of the Board shall severally exercise such powers and perform such duties as are from time to time assigned to them by the Minister.'

The Board does not, however, appear to have any executive authority or control over the naval forces. The regulations as to the government of the forces are, 'the director and every member of the naval forces permanently employed shall faithfully and diligently employ the whole of their time in the service of the Commonwealth, and *shall in all things obey the orders and directions of the Government.*' 'All orders and directions of the Government with respect to the

administration of the forces shall be communicated by the Board, and commandants will issue the necessary orders to give effect to them.'

The control of the naval forces, under present conditions, is, therefore, exercised by the Government (*i.e.*, the Minister of Defence) through the Naval Board, but the Naval Board has no powers of its own, and is merely a mouthpiece.

In considering the question of the control of a service such as the Navy, there are two points to be met :—

(*a*) The system must admit of complete parliamentary control and responsibility; but as far as possible such control should in practice be restricted to matters of policy and finance, and the power of Parliament to interfere in matters of detail in the government and administration of the Navy should be reserved for very exceptional circumstances.

(*b*) The controlling authority should be such as will have the full confidence of the officers and men of the service, whose careers are entrusted to it, and should contain naval officers whose sole interest would be to maintain the Navy in an efficient state by providing for all its needs. The enormous value to the Naval Service of obtaining and retaining the confidence and loyal support of the *personnel* to its governing body cannot be too much emphasised.

In the Mother Country these two requirements are met by the appointment of a Board of Admiralty on which there are two political members and four senior officers of reputation; this Board is responsible *as a whole* for the government of the Navy, and is appointed, and acts, as a single authority.

I recognise that there is great difference between the conditions as regards the naval forces in the Mother Country and the Commonwealth; in the former both the Navy and the Board of Admiralty have been established for a long period, and have stood the test of time and experience; in the latter both the Navy and its controlling authority have to be created, and must necessarily be experimental. Nevertheless, I consider that a Board constituted on the lines of the Board of Admiralty, and having responsibility as a whole, would meet the requirements of the Commonwealth better, and would be well qualified to foster and develop the Australian Fleet. It is essential, too, that the controlling authority in Australia should have and retain the full and complete confidence of the Admiralty.

Ministers are here to-day and gone to-morrow; their responsibility ends with their tenure of office, whereas the Navy is a living and growing organism, the creation of years, for which continuity

of policy is essential. It should not be within the power of the Government of the day, for financial or any other reasons, to take steps which may have disastrous effect at a future date on the safety of the Commonwealth unless such steps are carried out with the full knowledge and approval of the people of Australia, who would have to bear the consequences; a Board on which senior officers of the Navy sit is not likely to suffer any such steps to be taken without protest.

In further development of this proposal, I consider that the annual estimates of expenditure as framed by the Board should be signed by each member of the Board, and be subject to alteration by Parliament alone.

I have dealt rather fully with this matter, as I view it as being of paramount importance to the well-being of the Commonwealth naval development, and I cannot too strongly express my hope that the Navy will be kept outside party politics. 'It must be distinctly recognised that a national force maintained at a high standard of efficiency can only be produced by the work of years, and that such work must be steady and continuous; any divergence from the policy decided on may, and probably will, lead to chaos and useless expenditure of money.' (*Lord Kitchener in his Memorandum on the Defence of Australia.*)

RECOMMENDATIONS AS TO THE CONSTITUTION OF THE NAVAL BOARD

The Board recommended is as follows:—

(1) The Minister of State for Defence (or for the Navy, should a separate naval department be created later).
(2) First Naval Member (to be a senior officer of the Commonwealth Navy not below the rank of captain).
(3) Second Naval Member (to be a senior officer of the Imperial Navy not below the rank of captain).
(4) Third Naval Member (to be a senior officer of the Commonwealth or Imperial Navy not below the rank of captain).
(5) Finance and Civil Member (to be a member of Parliament of the Senate when the Minister is in the House of Representatives and *vice versa*, or as an alternative this member might be a senior naval accountant officer or a civilian accountant).

With a permanent Secretary of the Board.

I also recommend that this Board should have a naval representative (at the outset a captain in the Imperial Navy should be selected) in London, to be attached to the staff of the High Commissioner, to

be accommodated with an office in the Admiralty building, and to be allowed personal access to the members of the Admiralty Board, and to the various Admiralty Departments; this officer to be the channel of communication between the Commonwealth Naval Board (whom he would represent, and from whom he would receive instructions) and the Home Board of Admiralty. This officer would, in fact, represent the Commonwealth Naval Board in the same way that the High Commissioner represents the Commonwealth Government, and he would be under the orders of and receive the support when necessary of the High Commissioner. He could be most useful in maintaining uniformity between the two Boards, and in ensuring harmonious action when both Boards had to act in concert, and in watching generally over the naval interests of Australia. This position should be held later by an officer of the Commonwealth Navy.

The selection of an Imperial officer for 2nd naval member is recommended because the Commonwealth Fleet is, and must continue for a very considerable time to be, dependent to a great extent on the *personnel* of the Imperial Navy, and it is desirable that such officers and men should know that they are represented by one of their own officers on the Board under which they will be serving.

The Naval Board should act as a whole, its orders being issued under the signature of its Secretary, but for matters of routine it would be convenient to allocate to each member certain special spheres of supervision, *e.g.* :—

(1) *The Minister.*—President of the Board and general supervision; represent department in Parliament; to be referred to by the member of the Board concerned on all questions of policy and important matters; to represent to the Governor in Council all senior appointments, commands, etc.

(2) *First Naval Member.*—War preparations, naval intelligence, naval ordnance, fleet exercises, manœuvres, gunnery and torpedo exercises, etc., naval works, advise as to senior appointments.

(3) *Second Naval Member.—Personnel* and reserves, discipline, stores, victualling, medical.

(4) *Third Naval Member.*—Construction and engineering of ships, repairs, control of naval dockyards and bases.

(5) *Finance and Civil Member.*—Finance, contracts, legal questions.

Permanent Secretary (does not vote as a member of the Board).—Charge of the clerical staff, and responsible for the clerical staff, and responsible for the clerical duties of the department; responsible for safe custody of confidential books and documents; signs Board Orders 'by order of the Naval Board.'

In the case of the Board of Admiralty, under the Admiralty Act, 1832, 'any two Commissioners may exercise and execute' all the legal powers of the Admiralty (*e.g.*, issue of Court-martial warrants, disciplinary orders, etc.), and it would probably be convenient to obtain such legal powers for any two members of the Naval Board.

Under the Naval Board there would be various administrative departments, who would be responsible to the Board as a whole, but for general work would, as a rule, deal with the particular member concerned with the work of the Department.

The following departmental heads would be required :—

Accountant-General—(Examination of accounts, preparation of estimates, etc.)

Director of Naval Construction and Dockyards—(Preparation of plans of ships, supervision of their construction, deal with repairs and alterations to vessels, advise on dockyard requirements and administration.)

Director of Works—(Preparation of plans for docks, buildings generally, supervision of their construction, repairs, and alterations, etc.)

Director of Stores, Victualling, and of naval contracts—(Purchase and supply of naval and victualling stores.)

Director of Naval Ordnance—(Gunnery and torpedo matters, including purchase and supply of material.)

The naval and clerical staff that would be required to assist the above may be taken approximately as—

1 commander as private secretary to Minister.
1 commander as assistant to 1st naval member and as President of Intelligence Committee.
1 clerk as private secretary to 1st naval member.
1 clerk as private secretary to 2nd naval member.
1 clerk as private secretary to 3rd naval member.
1 clerk as private secretary to finance member.
20 clerks for secretary's and other departments.

I would add that I consider it essential to the efficiency of the department that the control of its staff should rest in the department, and that the Commonwealth Public Service Commissioner should have no authority over any of them such as he now possesses.

Similarly, I consider that the system under which certain expenditure on naval buildings is controlled by the department of Home Affairs is unsound; all such work should be under the naval department.

I have not touched upon the legal difficulties that may arise as

regards the control of the Commonwealth ships and their crews when outside Australian waters, as I understand that this matter will be discussed in England during 1911.

APPENDIX B

ENTRY, TRAINING, AND EMOLUMENTS OF PERSONNEL.

APPENDIX C

RECRUITING

[*These Appendices are omitted here.*]

APPENDIX D

NAVAL BASES AND SUB-BASES

(A) COMPLETE REQUIREMENTS

(B) ORDER IN WHICH WORKS SHOULD BE TAKEN IN HAND

(NOTE.—A complete list of the bases and sub-bases is given in paragraph 7 of Part I.)

(A) COMPLETE REQUIREMENTS

I.—FLEET PRIMARY BASES

SYDNEY : FREMANTLE

GENERAL REQUIREMENTS.—The general requirements of these Fleet primary bases are :—

(*a*) Docks capable of receiving the largest vessels when in an injured condition.

(*b*) Workshops capable of effecting any repairs to, or replacements required in, hull machinery, fittings, or armament of all types of vessel ; to include facilities for lifting out and replacing the heaviest weights, such as guns, gun-mountings and machinery.

(*c*) Provision of the necessary equipment and supplies for replenishment of all naval ordnance, naval stores (including coal and oil) and provisions.

(*d*) Easy and safe communication with the manufactories of shipbuilding material, ordnance, and ammunition.
(*e*) Facilities for the rapid coaling of ships.
(*f*) Necessary equipment for testing chain cables.
(*g*) Safe storage for reserves of ammunition and explosives.
(*h*) Moorings and wharfage for ships under repair or in reserve.
(*i*) Satisfactory arrangements for reception and treatment of the sick and wounded.

SPECIAL REQUIREMENTS.—The following are special requirements at the places named :—

SYDNEY

(*a*) The necessary alterations to be made to the large dock on Cockatoo Island and its approaches so as to render it available for the largest vessels in the fleet.
(It is desirable that Messrs. Mort & Co. should be encouraged to improve their Woolwich dock in the same way.)
(*b*) Sheers, or a crane capable of lifting the heaviest weights (say, 100 tons), to be placed on Cockatoo Island.
(*c*) Cockatoo Island Dockyard to become a naval dockyard for the building of warships and for effecting warships' repairs.
(*d*) Garden Island to be transformed gradually into a storage ground for naval ordnance (guns and gun-mountings) and naval stores generally ; a workshop might be retained on Garden Island, with some of the existing plant, so as to enable a ship's artificers to use it for carrying out minor repairs without recourse to dockyard (*i.e.*, Cockatoo Island) assistance.
(*e*) The storage of ammunition and explosives to be transferred from Spectacle Island to some other convenient position (not yet definitely selected) ; Spectacle Island to be connected (eventually) to Cockatoo Island and form part of the naval dockyard.
(*f*) Victualling stores to be kept in the building now used for that purpose.
The following are also required at Sydney for the training, etc., of the *personnel* of the fleet :—
(*g*) College for training of naval cadets (site on Middle Head recommended).
(*h*) Boys' training ship to be moored in Rose Bay (acquisition of New South Wales' training ship *Sobraon* recommended ; the Royal Naval recreation ground in Rose Bay to be

utilised as a drill and recreation ground for the boys, and any future reclamation land in Rose Bay to be reserved as a naval recreation ground.

(*i*) Naval barracks, including :—

Gunnery schools,
Signal schools,
Wireless telegraphy schools,
Cookery schools,

to be erected on the mainland on a site selected.

FREMANTLE

(*a*) SPECIAL REQUIREMENTS.—The harbour of Cockburn Sound, including Owen's Anchorage and Jervoise Bay, to be examined thoroughly *as soon as possible* by experts, with a view to locating the site of the future naval dockyard. The site should include space for graving docks, building ships, workshops, storehouses, and all plant, etc., for the building of ships and for the repairs and maintenance of a fleet. It appeared to me that a site in the vicinity of Jervoise Bay was best suited for naval dockyard requirements. A channel for deep-draught ships would have to be dredged through the Parmelia and Success Banks, and slight dredging would be required in other places. It would probably also be necessary that a short breakwater should be thrown out from Woodman's Point.

I understand that plans and estimates have been framed for carrying out of a great part of this dredging, and I am sure that it will prove of the greatest benefit not only to the navy but also to merchant shipping and commercial interests, as it would greatly relieve the pressure on Fremantle Harbour for shipping accommodation which the future must inevitably bring.

In the interim the needs of the Fleet will be met by :—

1st. The completion of the dock now building at Fremantle and of the repair and refitting shops proposed to be attached thereto at as early a date as possible.
2nd. The temporary provision of a base for six destroyers and three submarines in the Swan River.
3rd. The dredging of the channel, so that large vessels can find a safe anchorage in Cockburn Sound.
4th. The provision of adequate reserves of coal and oil fuel, etc.

(*b*) A large area of land should be reserved for naval purposes, so as to allow of considerable future expansion.

(*c*) A site to be selected for storage of ammunition and explosives.

APPENDIX

II.—Fleet Secondary Bases

THURSDAY ISLAND, PORT DARWIN

General Requirements.—The general requirements of these Fleet secondary bases are :—

(*a*) A good sheltered anchorage or moorings for a large Fleet.
(*b*) Satisfactory arrangements for storing stocks of coal, oil fuel, lubricating oil, etc.
(*c*) Facilities for rapid coaling.

THURSDAY ISLAND

Special Requirements.—Thursday Island has a very important strategical position at the entrance to the Torres Strait and at the head of the Barrier Passage, in which passage torpedo-boat destroyers could act with great advantage :—

(*a*) Bertie Bay (Goode Island) appears to be harbour best suited for use as the base, and it should be surveyed thoroughly and examined with a view to enlarging the anchorage and space available for large ships, and also to giving a safe and secure anchorage for torpedo-boat destroyers.
(*b*) This will also be a base for torpedo-boat destroyers, and should have all the requirements laid down under III., including an *iron* floating dock and a workshop adequate to carry out destroyers' repairs.

PORT DARWIN

Special Requirements.—Port Darwin is a good harbour, and occupies a very important strategical position. It should develop gradually into as important a base as, say, Hong Kong, possessing docks (either floating or graving) capable of receiving the largest ships and machine shops, etc., adequate for carrying out any repairs to warships.

Later, at Port Darwin there should also be maintained reserves of coal, oil, and naval stores and provisions.

Owing to the lack of proper land communications and of population, no steps can be recommended to be taken at Port Darwin at present; but when the north to south transcontinental railway line is completed, Port Darwin's position will be valuable, and measures should then be put in hand to make it a useful naval base.

In the interim it should be utilised by the Fleet as an anchorage, the Fleet providing for its protection as a base if required in war time.

A thorough survey and examination of the harbour should be

undertaken forthwith, and sites for docks, dockyard, etc., allocated and reserved for future developments. (*See* also V. as to its requirements as a destroyer sub-base.)

III.—Destroyer Bases

THURSDAY ISLAND, BRISBANE, PORT WESTERN, FREMANTLE

General Requirements.—The general requirements of these destroyer bases are—

(*a*) A graving dock or floating dock or slip capable of receiving a destroyer, and possessing facilities for rapid docking, cleaning, and undocking. Special cradles must be provided in the case of slips for destroyers.
(*b*) Workshops adequate to deal with destroyers' repairs.
(*c*) Wharfage accommodation for six boats (two deep) (or a hulk suitable for this purpose), with facilities for adjusting gyroscopes.
(*d*) Adequate reserves of oil fuel, lubricating oil, and boiler water, with facilities for rapid handling.
(*e*) Reserve stocks of the following :—
Bottom composition.
Spare propellers.
Plates suitable for small repairs or temporary repairs to a badly damaged destroyer.

THURSDAY ISLAND

Special Requirements.—(*See* remarks under II., as a secondary Fleet base.)

BRISBANE

Special Requirements.—Requirements are already provided; necessary local arrangements should be made as to supplies of stores required, repairs, docking, etc.

PORT WESTERN

Special Requirements.—The dock accommodation at or near Melbourne should be utilised for destroyers, and so render provision of a dock at Port Western unnecessary.

In addition to its use as a destroyer base, and also (*see* IV.) as a submarine base, Port Western will be the training centre for the Western Fleet, for which purpose the following will be required :—

(*a*) Naval barracks, including torpedo school, to be erected on the foreshore between Sandy Point and Stony Point. (The necessary land should be reserved now.)

(*b*) A land-locked range for the adjustment of repaired or new torpedoes.

Also, as a temporary measure until Fremantle is completed to Fleet requirements, adequate supplies of coal, oil, fuel, etc., must be maintained to meet the needs of the Western Fleet. (*See* paragraph 10 of Part I.)

FREMANTLE

SPECIAL REQUIREMENTS.—(*See* remarks under I., as a primary Fleet base.)

IV.—SUBMARINE BASES

PORT STEPHENS, PORT WESTERN, PORT LINCOLN, FREMANTLE

GENERAL REQUIREMENTS.—The general requirements of these submarine bases are—

(*a*) A graving dock, floating dock, or slip, capable of receiving one submarine at a time, possessing facilities for rapid docking, cleaning, and undocking.

(*b*) Small workshops.

(*c*) Enclosed wharfage accommodation for four boats, with facilities for adjusting gyroscopes. If desirable a suitable hulk might be used, but the structure must not be coppered.

Good sleeping and other accommodation is required for all officers and men either on shore or in the hulk.

(*d*) Storage for adequate reserves of oil fuel.

PORT STEPHENS

SPECIAL REQUIREMENTS.—Suitable site to be selected and necessary land reserved.

Land should also be reserved for further expansion, in case required, on the south side of Salamander Bay.

PORT WESTERN

SPECIAL REQUIREMENTS.—(*See* remarks under III. as a destroyer base.)

PORT LINCOLN

SPECIAL REQUIREMENTS:—

(*a*) As a temporary measure the slips on the Adelaide River should be utilised.

(*b*) Port Lincoln Harbour should be examined with a view to determining the most suitable position for a submarine base (and destroyer sub-base, *see* V.).

(*c*) Land to be reserved for the erection of the establishments that will be required eventually, and also a site selected for a small graving dock, floating dock or slip. (A floating dock would be the most suitable.)

(*See also* V., as to its requirements as a destroyer sub-base.

FREMANTLE

(*See* remarks under I. as a primary Fleet base.)

V.—Destroyer Sub-Bases

TOWNSVILLE, HOBART, BEAUTY POINT (RIVER TAMAR), PORT LINCOLN, ALBANY, CONE BAY (or other port on N.W. Coast), PORT DARWIN.

General Requirements.—The general requirements of these destroyer sub-bases are—

(*a*) Wharfage accommodation, or smooth water anchorage, for six destroyers.

(*b*) Adequate reserve of oil fuel, lubricating oil, and boiler water.

Special Requirements.—Each harbour to be examined and site selected. (*See also* II. as to Port Darwin, and IV. as to Port Lincoln.)

VI.—Submarine Sub-Bases

BRISBANE, HOBART, BEAUTY POINT (RIVER TAMAR), ALBANY, CONE BAY (or other port on N.W. Coast), PORT DARWIN

General Requirements.—The general requirements of these submarine sub-bases are the same as those of the submarine bases (*see* IV.), with the exception of the docking and repairing facilities.

Special Requirements.—None (but *see* III. as regards Brisbane, II. as regards Port Darwin, V. as regards Hobart, Beauty Point, Albany, and Cone Bay).

VII.—General

Generally it is desirable that the health and comfort of the men should be cared for by the provision of suitable recreation grounds and canteens at the principal naval ports, this matter being of the greatest importance in the case of the crews of submarine boats, who, whilst in their boats, lead a life of considerable discomfort due to the cramped space available.

(B) ORDER IN WHICH THE WORKS SHOULD BE TAKEN IN HAND

First Stage

SYDNEY

(*a*) Effect necessary alterations to the Sutherland Dock (Cockatoo Island) and its approaches to make it suitable for a modern armoured cruiser.

(*b*) Provide sheers and necessary appliances on Cockatoo Island for lifting the largest guns and weights (say 100 tons).

(*c*) Build the naval college for cadets.

(*d*) Acquire site for, and build, the naval barracks and schools (gunnery, signal, wireless telegraphy, and cookery schools).

(*e*) Acquire the training ship *Sobraon*, prepare her for training boys, acquire necessary land for boys' drill, recreation, etc.

(*f*) Establish a new store for ammunition and explosives in anticipation of these stores being removed from Spectacle Island; full and adequate provision should be made for modern ammunition.

FREMANTLE

(*a*) Proceed with, and complete, the construction of the dock and of the repair shops and machinery, including sheers, etc., connected therewith.

(*b*) Undertake thorough survey of Cockburn Sound and the surrounding land; reserve necessary land; dredge out channel so as to make the anchorage suitable for a fleet of large vessels.

(*c*) Make arrangements for storage of coal, oil, fuel, etc.

(*d*) Establish *temporary* destroyer and submarine bases in the Swan River.

PORT WESTERN

(*a*) Acquire site for, and build, naval barracks, including torpedo school.

(*b*) Survey land, and reserve portions required.

(*c*) Obtain the requisite legal powers to close parts of the harbour for the purposes of Whitehead torpedo practice and adjustment.

(*d*) Establish the destroyer and submarine bases.

THURSDAY ISLAND

(*a*) Survey and examine thoroughly Bertie Bay.

(*b*) Establish the destroyer base.

(*c*) Provide a small floating dock, and workshops capable of dealing with one destroyer.

BRISBANE

Establish destroyer base.

PORT STEPHENS

(*a*) Survey and examine thoroughly the harbour and reserve land on south side of Salamander Bay.
(*b*) Establish submarine base.
(*c*) Provide floating dock and workshops.

GENERAL

All the above works should be put in hand as early as possible, and should be proceeded with, as far as circumstances will admit, simultaneously, so as to be completed by the time that the Fleet unit arrives in Australia.

Second Stage

PORT LINCOLN

(*a*) Examine thoroughly the harbour and surrounding land.
(*b*) Establish destroyer and submarine bases.
(*c*) Reserve land as requisite.

BEAUTY POINT (RIVER TAMAR)

Acquire necessary land and establish destroyer and submarine sub-bases.

TOWNSVILLE

Establish destroyer sub-base.

Third Stage

ALBANY CONE BAY (or other port on N.W. coast) HOBART	Establish destroyer and submarine sub-bases.

PORT DARWIN

It is useless to establish works at this important place until the transcontinental railway is completed. On the completion of the railway, Port Darwin should be developed into a Fleet secondary base as the Commonwealth Fleet grows.

Subsequent Years

(As the Fleet increases.)

APPENDIX

FREMANTLE

Development as a Fleet primary base to be completed.

PORT WESTERN

Provide works for repairing and readjusting torpedoes.

GENERAL

Also establish at Hobart or at such place as may be found desirable—

(*a*) College for sub-lieutenants.
(*b*) Navigation School.
(*c*) 'War College' for senior officers.

APPENDIX E

COMMUNICATIONS AND INTELLIGENCE SYSTEM

The Fleet will rely for its communications and for its 'Intelligence' system upon—

(*a*) Its own methods of inter-communication between ships of the Fleet;
(*b*) Wireless telegraph stations on shore;
(*c*) Visual signal stations on shore;
(*d*) Land telegraph lines and cables;
(*e*) Communication by wireless telegraphy or by visual signalling with merchant ships;
(*f*) Special naval intelligence centres.

(a) *Inter-communication between War Ships*

2. This will be attained by training the necessary *personnel* (*see* Appendix B) in wireless telegraphy and visual signalling, and supplying the ships with the requisite apparatus.

(b) *Wireless Telegraph Stations on Shore*

3. The complete scheme of wireless telegraph stations considered necessary for Australia, from a naval point of view, comprises—

(*a*) A system of high-power stations. These stations are required primarily to transmit messages from the central authority to the Fleets at sea when the latter are within the effective range of these stations, and, secondarily, to inter-communicate between themselves as an alternative means to the

land lines or cables. Such stations are, however, not suitable for the purpose of *inter*-communication with ships or small-power stations.

(*b*) A system of medium-power stations. These stations are required for the normal ship-to-shore communication purposes of the Fleet. Many of these stations will be able to do a large amount of ordinary commercial working, and should be encouraged to do so.

4. Three high-power stations will eventually be required. They should be capable of sending a message to a first-class ship at any hour of the day or night at a distance of 1250 miles oversea, and of inter-communication between themselves. These stations should be situated in the neighbourhood of Sydney, Port Darwin, and Perth. Owing to the great range and power of these stations the exact position of the sites should be determined more with reference to technical suitability and possibility of defence from marauders than to their geographical situation.

5. Of these three stations, the one in the neighbourhood of Sydney is required *now*; the station near Perth will be required when the Western Division of the Fleet approaches completion and Fremantle becomes an important naval port.

The Port Darwin station will not be required until the developments of British Wireless Telegraphy render it desirable.

6. Thirteen medium-power stations will be required eventually at or near the following places :—

*Thursday Island.	*Sydney.	*Fremantle.
Port Moresby.	*Port Western.	Cone Bay (or other port
Townsville.	Port Lincoln.	on N.W. coast).
*Brisbane.	Hobart.	Port Darwin.
Port Stephens.	Beauty Point.	

7. Of these stations Port Western will be able to do the commercial work for Melbourne, Port Stephens will be able to do the commercial work for Newcastle, Port Lincoln will be able to do the commercial work for Adelaide.

8. At the places (Sydney, Fremantle, Port Darwin) where two stations, one high-power and one medium-power, are required, the stations should not be within 5 miles of one another.

9. The medium-power stations should be capable of communicating with a first-class ship at a distance of 500 miles oversea at any hour of the day or night, on any selected wave-length between 600 and 2200 metres.

10. The stations marked * are required as soon as possible; the

remainder should be completed concurrently with the naval establishments which are required at the places (*see* Appendix D).

11. All wireless telegraph stations should be under the direct control of the Postmaster-General, and he should take the necessary steps to restrict all non-naval traffic at any time that the naval authorities may desire it.

12. Should the Postmaster-General be unable for any reason to undertake to establish and maintain a wireless telegraph service in all respects suited to the requirements of a modern navy, it will be necessary for the naval authorities to establish and maintain stations of its own, and to formulate its own system, with all the attendant disadvantages of duplication and divided control. This matter of wireless telegraphy, involving the whole subject of rapid and distant communication, is of the highest importance in the distribution and disposition of fleets.

13. It is of the highest importance that all wireless telegraph stations should be efficiently connected with the land line telegraphic system of the country, and arrangements must be made to place these connecting lines at the disposal of the naval authorities in times of national emergency.

14. Each of the wireless telegraph stations mentioned should have a private telegraph line direct to the nearest centre of local intelligence (*see* Confidential Appendix H), and should also be connected to the general telegraphic system of the country. Arrangements should be made to 'switch through' such post offices as are not kept open continuously so as to ensure an unbroken day and night communication between the wireless telegraph station and headquarters.

15. The stations at Port Western, Port Stephens, and Port Lincoln should also have private and direct lines in the central Post Offices of Melbourne (or Port Melbourne), Newcastle, and Adelaide respectively so as to enable commercial messages for those ports to be dealt with rapidly.

16. Though telephone instruments are useful for ordinary purposes, telegraph instruments are necessary for the transmission of *coded* messages, and such messages constitute the bulk of naval work. The private lines referred to in paragraphs 14 and 15 should be fitted with both types of instruments (telephone and telegraph).

17. Appended below is an outline scheme of a wireless telegraph service which has been drawn up with a view to meeting the difficulties which, as experience in European waters has shown, are likely to arise when wireless telegraph traffic becomes an important factor.

(c) *Visual Signal Stations on Shore*

An elaborate system of visual signal stations is not now of such vital importance as it was before the developments of wireless tele-

graphy, which have so greatly extended the range of communications. A properly equipped and controlled system of visual signal stations may be of great value, both as a system for reporting the movements of hostile or foreign shipping, and as a channel of communication between a central authority and friendly shipping.

The existing system of commercial signal stations should be organised and consolidated so as to comply with the scheme laid down in the Confidential Appendix H. In the future, as development progresses, other stations will be required, and the scheme laid down must from time to time be reorganised to suit the changing conditions of mercantile traffic and the probable war requirements of the Navy.

As time goes on all men at these signal stations should be required to become sufficiently expert in all forms of marine signalling to communicate readily with passing merchant ships or with men-of-war, and also to become expert telegraphists.

(d) *Land Telegraph Lines and Cables*

Arrangements should be made by the Postmaster-General for 'priority' to be given to naval messages in time of emergency or war.

(e) *Communication with Merchant Ships*

Every effort should be made to encourage signalling, whether by wireless telegraphy or by visual methods, between British merchant ships and the vessels of the Fleet, and also visual signalling between British merchant ships and shore stations, as merchant ships will be able in time of emergency or war to furnish most valuable information.

(f) *Special Naval Intelligence Centres*

These centres should be established as necessary (*see* Confidential Appendix H).

NAVAL INTELLIGENCE COMMITTEE AND GENERAL ORGANISATION

(*See* Confidential Appendix H).

ORGANISATION OF A WIRELESS TELEGRAPH BRANCH OF THE GENERAL POST OFFICE

[*Not reproduced here.*]

APPENDIX F

NAVAL RESERVES

There are four different classes of Naval Reserves in Australia :—

I. The Australasian Branch of the Imperial Royal Naval Reserve, at present controlled by the Commander-in-Chief of the Australian Squadron. This consists of the following numbers, and will (except the New Zealand portion of this Reserve) be taken over by the Commonwealth Government on the arrival of the Fleet unit :—

Rank or Rating	Total Numbers on 31st December 1910, exclusive of New Zealand portion.
Lieutenant	4
Sub-Lieutenant	6
Qualified seaman	23
Seaman	203
Qualified stoker	25
Stoker	156
Total	417

The officers serve till the age of 45, and are required to perform 28 days' drill per annum.

The men engage for five years at a time (not allowed to enrol after age of 54), and are required to perform—

Seamen—28 days' drill per annum.

Stokers—21 days in first year.
14 days in subsequent years.

The officers are recruited from the Mercantile Marine officers as for the Home R.N.R.

The men are recruited—

Qualified seamen and qualified stokers from men who have served as Australasians in Imperial ships for at least three years.

Seamen and stokers from the Mercantile Marine, fishing craft, etc.

II. The Commonwealth Naval Militia (to be called Naval Reserve under the Naval Defence Act, 1910), entered from civil occupation for 3 years' service, being required to drill for 21 days each year.

III. The Commonwealth Naval Volunteers, entered for voluntary service, composed wholly of cadets.

IV. The persons who are liable under the Defence Act to be trained in the junior or senior cadets or in the Citizen Forces, and who are allotted to the Naval Forces.

And there will also be a fifth class, viz. :—

Those men who have completed 5, 7, or 12 years' service in the Commonwealth Navy and have transferred to the Reserve (the 'Fleet Reserve').

It is recommended that no further entries be made into the Australian portion of I., and that men now serving therein should on completion of their current engagement be discharged, but given the opportunity, if under the age of 35, of re-enrolling in the Commonwealth Naval Reserve for five years under the conditions to be laid down for that Reserve.

It is recommended that officers under I. should be transferred to the Commonwealth Naval Reserve under the conditions to be laid down for that Reserve.

It is recommended that no further entries be made to the Naval Militia, and that officers and men therein should be transferred, if they are willing, to the Naval Volunteer Reserve under the conditions to be laid down for that force.

It is recommended that no cadets be entered into the Naval Volunteer Reserve in future except those enrolled under the Defence Act and allotted to the Naval Forces; Naval Volunteer cadets now serving to whom the Defence Act may apply should be retained in the Naval Forces. All such cadets should continue with the Naval Volunteers for the remainder of their period of service under the Defence Act.

Persons liable for service under the Defence Act and allotted to the Naval Forces, whether as cadets or later, should come under the conditions to be laid down for the Naval Volunteer Reserve, and should be encouraged to remain in that Reserve after the period of their obligatory service in the Citizen Forces expires.

Men transferred to the Reserve after a period of at least five years in the Regular Forces should be entered into the Fleet Reserve under the conditions to be laid down for that Reserve.

It is recommended that the strength of the Reserve *personnel* to be attained eventually should, at first, be fixed on a basis of about 30 per cent. of the total number there will be in the active service when the Fleet is completed, *i.e.* an eventual total Reserve of about 5000.

Of this number it is probable that from 2000 to 3000 will be provided from those who have served in the Fleet (*i.e.*, from the Fleet Reserve): the remainder should be provided by men who are in their second year or subsequent service (*i.e.*, age of 19 and above) under the Defence Act (Naval Volunteer Reserve).

The number of cadets to be allotted for naval service on 1st July 1911 should be based on the requirements of 1st July 1916, say 2000, to be obtained as follows, allowing for wastage :—

1st year senior cadets	. . . 800	approximately.
2nd year senior cadets	. . . 750	
3rd year senior cadets	. . . 700	
4th year senior cadets	. . . 650	

The number of officers, R.N.R., to be entered should not exceed 100 sub-lieutenants and lieutenants.

The number of officers, R.N.V.R., should be regulated according to the number of men in the R.N.V.R. at any time, observing that as a general rule such officers would not be professionally qualified to replace active service officers afloat though available for shore and harbour service.

It is recommended that the conditions of service and training of the reserve forces should be on the lines of those in force for corresponding reserves in the United Kingdom, amended as necessary to meet Australian conditions. Officers and men who may be detailed for special harbour or shore service in time of war should be trained in such duties in peace time in lieu of, or in addition to, the ordinary courses laid down.

Administrative Staff

The following Headquarters Staff should be appointed forthwith :—

Director of Naval Reserves (a captain).
Assistant to director (a commander).
Secretary (a naval accountant officer).
Clerical staff (say, three clerks).

And 'district commandants' at the following places, of such ranks as may be found desirable :—

Thursday Island.	Port Melbourne.	Albany.
Townsville.	Hobart.	Fremantle.
Brisbane.	River Tamar.	Cone Bay.
Port Stephens.	Port Adelaide.	Port Darwin.
Sydney.	Port Lincoln.	

These officers would also perform the following duties :—

(*a*) Take charge of all naval establishments (except at Sydney and Fremantle, or other port where an officer is specially appointed for charge of naval establishments).
(*b*) Act as recruiting officer for the area allotted to the port.
(*c*) Act as naval harbour master.
(*d*) Act as intelligence centre officer.

These 'district commandants' should be provided with such instructional petty officers and staff as may be necessary.

APPENDIX G

FINANCIAL ESTIMATE

The following estimate of cost must be regarded as a very rough approximation; it has not been possible with the data, and in the time available, to furnish an accurate statement of the probable cost of the completed Fleet, etc.

2. In calculating the cost of the *personnel* an average expenditure per head of £150 per annum (about 8s. 3d. per diem) has been taken as the basis, on the assumption that the average scales of pay attached to Appendix B are adopted, and that the proportions of the various ranks and ratings to one and another remain constant. This sum of £150 per annum includes 'active pay,' 'deferred pay,' allowance for uniform or clothing, and cost of rations.

3. The expenditure on the Naval Forces may be divided into 'non-recurring' and 'recurring' charges.

I.—NON-RECURRING CHARGES

4. The non-recurring charges are—

(*a*) The initial expenditure on the construction of ships until the Fleet is completed, *i.e.*:—

Ships.	Estimated Initial Cost.
	£
The Fleet unit	3,500,000
7 armoured cruisers	14,000,000
7 protected cruisers	3,150,000
12 torpedo-boat destroyers	1,080,000
9 submarines	810,000
3 depot ships	600,000
1 Fleet repair ship	150,000
Total	23,290,000
Of which there has already been expended in 1909 to 1911	910,000
Of which there has already been voted for expenditure in 1911–1913 (Act No. 18, 1910)	2,590,000
	3,500,000
Leaving a balance to be provided in 1913–1933 (20 years) of	19,790,000
i.e., an average, per annum, of	989,590

(*b*) The initial naval expenditure on dockyards, naval barracks and schools, naval bases and sub-bases, etc. (*See* Appendix D.) These are designated naval 'works.'

It is not practicable to furnish in this report any estimate as to the cost of the 'works' recommended, and they should be taken in hand (in the order shown in Appendix D) as money is available; in some cases there should be some revenue returnable for the benefits accruing to commercial interests.

It is desirable, however, that the 'works' should be carried out as early as possible, and the accompanying financial table shows approximately what money would be available annually for this purpose.

(*c*) The initial expenditure on establishing *Reserves* of stores (including coal, oil, ammunition, guns, gun-mountings, torpedoes, etc.), exclusive of the *annual* expenditure on the stores used by the Fleet.

It is estimated that the reserves of stores that would be necessary for the completed Fleet would be—

Item.	Approximate Cost.	
		£
Coal (36,000 tons)		30,000
Oil (20,000 tons)		60,000
2 years' supply of permanent sea stores	say,	500,000
2 ,, ,, consumable sea stores		
2 ,, ,, repair stores		180,000
Reserve of guns	say,	1,230,000
,, gun-mountings		
,, torpedoes		
,, ammunition		
Total		2,000,000

The stores to be provided as reserves for the Fleet unit would cost about £600,000, and the remainder should be provided gradually at an average annual cost of £70,000 per annum.

NOTE.—Arrangements should be made with the Admiralty for the Commonwealth to take over from them all suitable naval stores there may be at Sydney when the Fleet unit arrives.

II.—Recurring Charges

5. The recurring charges are—

(*a*) Annual allowance for the depreciation of ships (*i.e.*, for their replacement when worn out). As soon as the Fleet is completed, the non-recurrent charges for the construction of ships will cease, and the construction of vessels, as necessary to replace others worn out, will be defrayed from the annual depreciation allowance.

For this purpose it is considered that ships will require replacement as follows :—

Description of Vessel.	Approximate.	
	Period for which Serviceable.	Value of Annual Depreciation.
	Years.	£
Armoured cruiser	20	100,000
Protected cruiser	20	22,500
Torpedo-boat destroyer	15	6,000
Submarine	15	6,000
Depot ship	20	10,000
Fleet repair ship	20	7,500

On that basis, the value of the annual depreciation of the completed fleet would be £1,242,500, and after 1933 such sum would be required as an annual average for construction of new vessels to replace those worn out.

During the four eras in which this fleet is being completed, this sum should include the cost of construction of new vessels (an annual average of £989,500, *see* paragraph 4 (*a*) above), and thus there would be an annual balance of £253,000 available for expenditure on replacement of worn-out vessels. In 20 years this would amount to 75,060,000, and would provide the 'replacement' vessels that would probably be required during these 20 years, viz. :—

Vessels to be Replaced.	Era.	Cost.
		£
6 Torpedo-boat destroyers	3rd	540,000
3 Submarines	3rd	270,000
3 Submarines	4th	270,000
6 Torpedo-boat destroyers	4th	540,000
3 Protected cruisers	4th	1,350,000
1 Armoured cruiser	4th	2,000,000
Total	...	4,970,000

(*b*) Annual cost of *personnel*, at £150 per head (including cost of administration staff) :—

Number of *personnel* in 1912-13, say, 3444, cost	516,000
1932-33, 14,844, cost .	2,226,600
i.e., an increase in 20 years of 11,400, cost .	1,710,600
An average increase per annum of 570, cost .	85,530

(*c*) Annual cost of maintenance of ships in commission (repairs, sea stores, fuel, naval ordnance, stores, etc.), at the following rates per annum :—

Ship (in full Commission).	Annual Cost of Maintenance.
Armoured cruiser	£100,000
Protected cruiser	25,000
Torpedo-boat destroyer	12,000
Submarine	5,000
Depot ship	12,000
Fleet repair ship	12,000
Thus, the maintenance of Fleet unit (1913-14) would be	262,000
,, ,, completed fleet (1933-34) would be . . .	1,226,000*

* A deduction of 40 per cent. being made in the annual cost of ships 'with reduced crews.' (*See* paragraph 4, Part I.)

(*d*) Annual cost of maintenance of dockyards, buildings, training establishments, etc. (*i.e.*, of 'Naval Works').

This cannot be estimated for the same reasons as those given above (paragraph 4) (*b*) ; the expenditure should be met out of the balance available for 'Works.'

(*e*) Cost of naval reserves.

On a basis of an eventual total reserve of 5000 ranks and ratings it is considered that £100,000 per annum would cover all expenditure necessary, varying from 1912-13, say, £20,000, to 1932-33, £100,000, at an average increase per annum of £4,000.

FINANCIAL TABLE

6. The following table embodies the preceding estimates:—

Era.	Year.	'Non-recurring' Charges.		Recurring Charges.					Total.	Balance available for Expenditure on 'Works' if, say £3,000,000 † is voted Annually.
		Construction. — Building of Ships.	Stores — Establishment of Reserves of Stores.	Construction. — Depreciation Fund for *Replacement* of Ships.	*Personnel.* (*Number.*)	*Personnel.* Cost.	Cost of Maintenance of Ships in the Fleet.	Cost of Naval Reserves.		
		£1,000	£1,000	£1,000		£1,000	£1,000	£1,000	£1,000	£1,000
1st	1911–12	1,295*	50	...	(670)	100	36	10	1,491	1,509
	1912–13	1,295*	300	...	(3,444)	516	200	20	2,331	669
	1913–14	989	220	253	(4,014)	601	262	24	2,349	651
	1914–15	989	120	253	(4,584)	686	274	28	2,350	650
	1915–16	989	120	253	(5,154)	771	274	32	2,439	561
	1916–17	989	70	253	(5,724)	856	289	36	2,493	507
	1917–18	989	70	253	(6,294)	941	320	40	2,613	387
2nd	1918–19	989	70	253	(6,864)	1,026	351	44	2,733	1,267†
	1919–20	989	70	253	(7,434)	1,111	418	48	2,889	1,111
	1920–21	989	70	253	(8,004)	1,196	518	52	3,078	922
	1921–22	989	70	253	(8,574)	1,281	545	56	3,194	806
	1922–23	989	70	253	(9,144)	1,366	645	60	3,383	617
3rd	1923–24	989	70	253	(9,714)	1,451	725	64	3,552	948†
	1924–25	989	70	253	(10,284)	1,536	737	68	3,653	847
	1925–26	989	70	253	(10,854)	1,621	797	72	3,802	698
	1926–27	989	70	253	(11,424)	1,706	897	76	3,991	509
	1927–28	989	70	253	(11,994)	1,791	997	80	4,180	320
4th	1928–29	989	70	253	(12,560)	1,876	1,027	84	4,299	701†
	1929–30	989	70	253	(13,130)	1,961	1,027	88	4,388	612
	1930–31	989	70	253	(13,700)	2,046	1,127	92	4,577	423
	1931–32	989	70	253	(14,270)	2,131	1,127	96	4,666	334
	1932–33	989	70	253	(14,844)	2,226	1,186	100	4,824	176
		22,370‡	2,000	5,060	...	...	...	...	...	15,225
	1933–34	...	...	1,242	(14,844)	2,226	1,226	100	4,794	216

* Already voted (Act No. 18 of 1910), but may be divided differently between the two years.

† If £3,000,000 is voted in 1st Era; £4,000,000 in 2nd Era; £4,500,000 in 3rd Era; £5,000,000 in 4th Era.

‡ £910,000 has already been provided in 1910-11.

REPORT ON AN INSPECTION OF THE MILITARY FORCES OF THE COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA by GENERAL SIR IAN HAMILTON, G.C.B., D.S.O., General Officer Commander-in-Chief, Mediterranean, and Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces.

(*Presented by Command; ordered to be printed, 20th May* 1914.)

From the Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces, to the Honourable the Minister of Defence, Commonwealth of Australia

Hobart, 24th April 1914.

SIR,—I have the honour to forward herewith my Report upon the inspection I have carried out at the request of the Australian Government. A separate and secret document, dealing with the fixed defences of Australian ports, will follow in due course.

I landed in Western Australia on 3rd February last, and am to-day leaving Australian territory for New Zealand. During these eleven weeks I have visited the State capitals, most of the larger towns, as well as many country districts and training camps. By rail alone some 7660 miles have been travelled and, on horseback and in motors, a conscientious endeavour has been made to break all previous records. In one way or another no less than 149 Militia units, some 52,000 Senior Cadets, and a number of Rifle Clubs have been passed in review by me. All factories employed in turning out war material and uniforms have also been visited. With the exception of Thursday Island, the armament, scheme of defence, and *personnel* of every defended port has, with its garrison and armament, been inspected, and, in addition, it has been my privilege to investigate what is being done at Duntroon, as well as at the Gunnery and Musketry Schools. Last, but not least, I saw, and, having seen, shall ever treasure in my memory, the wonderful exhibition of physical training given on the Melbourne Cricket Ground by some 7000 boys and girls of the local schools. Never did Australia seem to me to be more clearly pledging the future generations to high ideals of citizenship than on that great occasion. If only I can convey to our British schoolmasters and schoolmistresses one tithe of the meaning of that sight, their hearts will be touched, and they will

insist upon being given similar opportunity of brightening the lives of the little ones entrusted by the State to their charge.

To one and all with whom I have been brought in contact, both officially and socially, I desire to express my own deepest thanks, and also the gratitude of my staff, for the extraordinary kindness extended to us everywhere. Our tour through Australia has been just one long holiday jaunt with the holiday part cut out.

I am greatly indebted to District Commandants and their staffs for the constant support they have given me; my thanks also are due to all at Army Headquarters for the trouble they have taken in elucidating for me many matters connected with the military institutions of Australia. To the Adjutant-General in particular, and to those working under him, I trust I may be allowed to express my special thanks for the infinite pains they have taken in elaborating the scheme of territorial reorganisation referred to in Chapters IV. to VI.[1] of my Report.

[1] [Omitted here.]

Most of all, I have to thank you, Sir, for your invariable kindness, and for the sage advice I have received from you where constitutional problems were involved. Whatever merits my views on the subject of decentralisation may possess, I feel I could never have carried them to their logical conclusion without your sympathetic assistance.

I have the honour to be, Sir, Your obedient Servant,

IAN HAMILTON, *General,*
Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces.

I.—EXPLANATORY

PROBLEM OF AUSTRALIAN DEFENCE

1. The potential strength of a State resides in its patriotism, its population, and its purse. The actual strength of a State consists in the aggregate striking power of its armies and its fleets which should, in war time, be as interdependent as the forefinger and thumb of a human hand.

In the United Kingdom the Secretary of State for War and the First Lord of the Admiralty are each members of the Cabinet, and each separately responsible to Parliament. Hence debates wherein defenders are weighed against invaders as though submarines had not yet been invented, and fleet against fleet as though Greater Britain had not a practical monopoly of the defended ports of the world.

Here, in Australia, where one Minister accepts the whole responsibility for defence, it should be easier than in the Old Country to readjust from time to time the balance between naval and military expenditure in due and scientific proportion. Only—no amount of balancing will show a balance credit if the account has been overdrawn, and this leads

me straight to my point that, apart from new expenditure on the Navy, the Australian Army will ultimately cost just about twice as much as was originally anticipated.

Financial Considerations of Paramount Importance

2. Twice as much! Through all my inspections I have carried about with me this cast-iron fact as a shield against incessant showers of missives urging expenditure—large—immediate, and under every conceivable head. More professional instructors, more remounts, more wagons, more and better drill halls, more storehouses, more training grounds, more ranges, more aeroplanes. Powerful advocates stand behind each of these claims and, without question, every single one of them is in itself desirable; but they cannot be thus insulated by any responsible soldier or statesman. Before any group can be dealt with by such a man he must, or, at least, he certainly should, tabulate the entire list and make an estimate of the aggregate cost. The figure would stagger Australia, and would show more clearly than pages of written argument the dangers, for some time to come, of sanctioning expenditure under fresh heads unless a corresponding economy can be booked in a parallel column.[1]

Dangers of Too Great Haste

3. The building up of the Australian Army cannot be rushed except at the risk of a reaction. Haste, in this case, must be the enemy to speed.

Much of the existing outlay is for initial purposes only, *e.g.*, provision of guns, rifles, and equipment, inauguration of factories for the output of clothing and warlike stores, erection of storehouses, barracks, and works required under the scheme of universal training, etc., etc. Such expenditure will lapse to a large extent in a few years' time, but, until that time arrives, efforts should be entirely concentrated upon maintaining a high standard of war efficiency amongst the *personnel* and upon providing war essentials—and essentials only—in the way of *matériel*. The one fatal thing will be to lower standards of training for the sake of maintaining mere numbers,[2] or, to stint instruction for the purpose of stocking any class of warlike stores and equipment which could, at a pinch, be commandeered in Australia itself.

[1] A table attached as Appendix A shows what the progress in expenditure has been during the past ten years.

[2] To save money on the men's musketry or training facilities is to throw dust into the eyes of the State; to save money by reducing numbers under severer medical tests is to deal fairly and squarely with the State.

The Australian Militia

4. The Commonwealth has definitely adopted the Militia principle as a means of raising its military forces. This implies, or should imply, the abandonment of all idea of maintaining permanent troops, save in so far as they may be considered an indispensable adjunct to the Militia. Everything outside the Militia—the Regular Force, for example, the Rifle Clubs and the Cadets—are essentially of military interest and value only in so far as they affect the well-being of Australia's real war instrument—her Militia Army.

Prominently though the Regular Force may stand out in peace, its *rôle* in war must, in the nature of things, be limited. It is not, and cannot be, numerous; bullets and disease will, on service, too soon take a heavy toll of it, and there are headquarters and territorial duties it must undertake in war as well as in peace. As regards war, then it is a Militia Army, led mainly by militiamen, with which I am called on to deal, and I shall assume throughout this Report that the existence in peace of every Regular officer, non-commissioned officer and man has to be justified on the ground, either that he is necessary to the well-being of the Militia, or that the work he is doing could not be performed by a Militiaman.

Character of a National Militia

5. Throughout my inspection I have consistently kept four guiding principles in view—so much so that the whole of this Report is but a series of reflections from them as observed at different angles.

The first is that an effective National Militia must, in war, express the life of the nation in its widest sense. The mere enrolment in units of a certain number of trainees is not enough. Nothing less than the war organisation of the whole resources of the nation will suffice.

This does not imply that every able-bodied man is to be trained, clothed, and paid by the State. As a principle it is compatible with an actual reduction in the numbers of the trainees. But it does imply that every man of military age, whether he is a trainee or not, should know what he would be expected to do, if ever Australia were invaded.

The history of the old Greek and Roman republics, and the state of affairs that obtains to-day in countries like Switzerland, are sufficient proof that a national organisation for war is, without too exhausting an effort, an attainable ideal. An enemy contemplating an attack on Australia must be taught to realise that he will find there a true nation-in-arms, every national resource having been organised beforehand for the purpose of defence.

No Room for a Peace System

6. The second principle is that, in a Militia Army, the system obtaining in peace must, as nearly as possible, coincide with the system definitely accepted for war. In such a force there is no room for a peace system that is divorced from war requirements. Even in a professional standing Army an avowed peace system, though it may be inevitable, is yet purely objectionable. It breeds a host of ideas each of which is wholly inapplicable to war and is only sloughed off with extremest difficulty after mobilisation. Also, it tends to promote men to high places who, by the very fact of their being experts in a peace system, have become painfully unfitted to adapt their minds to the large and unprecedented issues of war.

Therefore, during peace the Militiaman's service should be organised under war conditions. This maximum applies not merely to the training of the troops in the field, but to the system of supply; to the Army forms and books in use; to the method of correspondence; to the procedure followed in paying the troops; to the registration in record offices of information affecting the individual soldier; and, indeed, to each and every detail of military procedure. Regulations which have to be changed on mobilisation are blots on a Militia organisation. The soldier who starts on a campaign by having to unlearn has been badly handicapped by his Government.

Difference between a Militia and a Regular Army

7. The third principle is that a Militia and a Regular Army are essentially different entities. They are intended for different purposes and their problems of organisation cannot but have separate solutions. For instance, a Regular Army, with world-wide duties to perform, must aim at rendering itself self-contained. In peace and in war it must be prepared to act far from the civilian resources of the home country, and it requires therefore engineers skilled in railway work, in building operations, in drainage schemes, and in similar work of a highly technical nature. It may equally be necessary to maintain one or more corps of skilled artificers, who can set up and run and repair intricate machinery on the spot.

But, as an integral portion, in peace, of a Militia destined to act, in war, in its own country, such expensive and highly technical *personnel* is superfluous. Only unoriginal minds—minds unable to extricate themselves from the regular military tradition—could think of saddling a home defence Militia with a full outfit of the cut-and-dried adjuncts devised to enable an Expeditionary Force or an Army of Occupation to function in foreign and inhospitable lands. In a Militia the technical resources of the country itself, properly organised, should suffice both in peace and in war.

Here, then, is my third principle:—Much of the expenditure in peace, which is inevitable for a Regular Overseas Army, can, in the case of a Militia, be avoided without unduly impairing war efficiency, provided always that national resources have been adequately organised. I deal with this matter more fully later on in a chapter headed 'National Organisation for War.'

Specialisation most Necessary for a Militia

8. The fourth principle is that, even when the same theory applies to a Regular and a Militia system, it may be very much more vital to the one form of service than to the other. Thus, recently, it has come to be recognised in the Old Country that there is a fundamental distinction, both in peace and in war, between the command of an army and its administration, and that, more and more under modern conditions, the training of the commander and of the military administrator must take place in separate compartments. Now a rigid application of this distinction is much more necessary in a Militia than in a Regular force. An optimist, were he a bad one, might permit himself to hope for wonders from the Regular officer who devotes his whole life to his profession. He might, for instance, expect to find in the one and same individual a talent for training and leading men in the open field combined with an inclination to sit glued to an office chair grappling with the intricacies and chicaneries of business and finance. But where is the Militia officer who can hope to find time or scope to develop himself into a double-barrelled genius of this Napoleonic type? The thing is not, humanly speaking, possible, and so it becomes essential that steps should be taken in peace to form in Australia a specialised business department whose *personnel* shall, from the outset, devote themselves to purely administrative work. I hope, therefore, that the business men of Australia will support and encourage the new department, not only by accepting commissions in it as Militia officers, but also by recognising that the part the administrative officer plays in war is fully as vital and as patriotic as that played by his brother in arms, the fighter.

The Swiss Example

9. Later on I refer several times to Switzerland. The fact is, I specially prepared myself for my Australian tour by attending the Swiss manœuvres privately, and by availing myself to the utmost of the advice and experience of the higher officers of that famous bulwark of freedom, the Swiss Army. I did this, out of a very brief period of leave, because I hoped the Antipodes might ultimately get some value from such a visit, and because I knew that not only had the problem of home defence, pure and simple, engaged the serious attention of the

brave Helvetian democracy for many generations, but that the Australian scheme of training had, in its early days, been shaped to some degree on their model.

The Swiss Army as it exists to-day, resolutely denying right of way to two of the greatest powers on earth, is indeed a model from which no nation adopting a Militia principle need be ashamed to borrow. Not merely its training, but its organisation as well, has been tuned up to as high a pitch as the Militia principle can be expected to stand.[1]

The Period of Transition

10. In conclusion, I feel bound to express my feeling of admiration for the loyalty and goodwill which have smoothed the path of the transition of the Australian Military Forces from the old order of things to the new. Since the 1st July 1912, the elaboration of the new scheme has thrown a vast volume of work on all concerned. Headquarters and district staffs, the administrative services, the officers and men of the permanent units, and all members of the Administrative and Instructional Staff have responded nobly to the call made on them. Without unceasing and self-sacrificing efforts on their part, the present stage of development could not possibly have been reached in so short a time.

Equally—at least equally—are the thanks of their fellow-citizens due to the officers, non-commissioned officers, and men of the old Militia who have stuck to the colours during the past two years. In spite of much that was most discouraging, such as changes in regimental numbers, uniforms and badges, and the inevitable loss of cherished traditions, they have for two years past continued doing splendid work for the country. Only by the loyal support and co-operation of these men has the Defence Department been enabled to carry out successfully the reorganisation of the Australian Forces. To them, above all other, is due the present sound and growing system of universal military training in Australia.

II.—THE MILITARY INSTITUTIONS OF AUSTRALIA

Headquarters Organisation

11. The Minister of State for Defence is responsible to Parliament for both the Navy and the Army of the Commonwealth. On matters

[1] The Swiss system is an extremely economical one. For a good deal less than £2,000,000 per annum 90,000 officers and men get an annual training, and a field army of over 200,000 officers and men, with 250,000 more for reserve units and auxiliary services, can be mobilised for war. The men of course receive practically no pay when out for training. Certain other items of heavy expenditure, which are inevitable in Australia, are also non-existent in Switzerland.

connected with naval and military policy and expenditure he is advised by a Council of Defence, consisting of :—

Himself, as President,
The Treasurer,
2 Naval Officers,
2 Military Officers,
The Consulting Military Engineer,

with the Permanent Head of the Defence Department as Secretary.

The Military Forces of Australia are controlled and administered by a Military Board, which consists of the following members :—

The Minister of State for Defence (President),
The Chief of the General Staff,
The Adjutant-General,
The Quartermaster-General,
The Chief of Ordnance,
The Finance Member,

with a Secretary from the office of the Permanent Head of the Defence Department.

The distribution of duties among the members of the Board is detailed in Appendix B.

There is also an Inspector-General of the Military Forces whose business it is to review, and to report to the Minister, the practical results of the policy of the Government as administered by the Military Board.

Territorial Organisation

12. The Commonwealth is divided into six Military Districts (Appendix C), each under a District Commandant, assisted by a District Staff. The boundaries of the Districts are, practically, coterminous with the six political State boundaries.

The basis of the territorial system is the battalion area, which provides a battalion of Senior Cadets, and will eventually provide a battalion of Infantry, as well as its quota for other arms—Light Horse, Field Artillery, and Garrison Artillery.

Four battalion areas are grouped to form a brigade area, which eventually will furnish an Infantry brigade, one company of Engineers, one of Army Service Corps, and a Field Ambulance.

For purposes of territorial administration and for the training of Senior Cadets, each battalion area is subdivided into two or three training areas, each administered by an Area Officer. There are in all 215 training areas. Area Officers are at present temporary appointments. Eventually permanent officers will be appointed as they become available from the Royal Military College. In each battalion

area, one of the permanent Area Officers will then act as Adjutant of the Militia battalion.

A permanent Area Brigade-Major supervises the work of the Area Officers within a brigade area. When Infantry brigades are complete, the Area Brigade-Major will also be the Brigade-Major of the Infantry brigade.

Liability to Serve in Time of War

13. Under section 59 of the Defence Act all male inhabitants of Australia [1] between the ages of 18 and 60, who have resided therein for six months and are British subjects, shall, in time of war, be liable to serve in the Citizen Forces, and under section 60 (3) such persons may be called upon to enlist in sequence in five classes according to age, and whether married or single, etc.

Liability for Service Abroad

14. 'Members of the Defence Force who are members of the Military Forces shall not be required, unless they voluntarily agree to do so, to serve beyond the limits of the Commonwealth, and those of any Territory under the authority of the Commonwealth.'—Defence Act, Section 49.

Scheme of Training

15. Training under the Act is prescribed as follows :

Rank.	Age.	Service.	Training.
Junior Cadets . . .	12-14 years	2 years	Annually : 90 hours.
Senior Cadets . . .	14-18 ,,	4 ,,	Annually : 4 whole-day, 12 half-day, and 24 night drills (quarter days).[2]
Citizen Forces (Militia)	18-26 ,,	8 ,,	Annually : In first 7 years, drills equivalent to 16 whole days, of which at least 8 must be in camp.[3]

Conditions of Enrolment in Citizen Forces

16. Contingent on the necessities of the service, the wishes of individuals are considered in allotment to arms. Only specially selected

[1] Subject to certain exemptions.

[2] Variations are permissible, provided the total remains the same.

[3] Artillery and Engineers (as well as those allotted to the Naval Forces) must train for twenty-five days annually, of which seventeen days must be in camp. In the eighth year Militia are required only to attend a registration or muster parade.

men are accepted for service with Artillery, Engineers, Army Service Corps, and Army Medical Corps. No cases have occurred where there has been an insufficiency of candidates for service with these special corps.

Service in the Light Horse is voluntary. The recruit provides his own horse.

In other arms voluntary enlistment ceased on 30th June 1912, but all those serving on that date were permitted to continue their service until the expiry of their period of enlistment, non-commissioned officers being given the privilege of re-enlisting for further periods.

The rates of pay for the Citizen Forces are given in Appendix D.

War Organisation (1919-20)

17. By present arrangements the peace organisation of the Australian Army is to be developed to provide in 1919-20 a war organisation for a field army, for garrison troops, and for district columns, amounting to—

8 Light Horse Brigades.
6 Divisions.[1]
2 Mixed Forces (in 5th and 6th Districts).
1 Infantry Brigade.

Units still to be Formed

18. The units which have yet to be formed in order to complete the above war organisation are as follows :— (See Appendix E for detail.)

6 Light Horse Regiments.
4 Divisional Squadrons.
25 Batteries Field Artillery (18-pr.).[2]
5 Batteries Field Artillery (Howitzer).
34 Ammunition Columns.
6½ Field Companies.
2 Signal Troops.
2 Divisional Signal Companies.
2 Wireless Companies.
33 Infantry Battalions.
16 Companies A.S.C.
2 Light Horse Field Ambulances.
9 Field Ambulances.

[1] Present proposals provide for only two Field Artillery brigades of four-gun batteries, and one four-gun howitzer battery and ammunition column per division.
[2] Includes three permanent batteries for Light Horse brigades.

APPENDIX

Numbers Required, 1919-20

19. In round numbers the war requirements in 1919-20 will be :—

4500 officers.
130,500 other ranks.

135,000 Total.

Numbers Available, 1919-20

20. To meet requirements there will be available—

Permanent [1]—

380 officers ;
2800 other ranks ;

Militia [2]—

4000 officers ;
86,000 trained soldiers ;
12,500 trained soldiers in their 25th-26th year ;
17,000 recruits in their first year of service ;

a total of 4380 officers and 118,300 other ranks. The war deficit will, therefore, be 120 officers and 12,200 other ranks, of whom nearly 7000 are to be specially enlisted as drivers and for other duties in the Army Service Corps and Army Medical Corps.

The deficiency in officers can be made good from the Unattached List and Reserve of Officers List. The net deficiency in other ranks (about 22,000 if recruits are excluded) must be met by the allotment of members of Rifle Clubs and by the enlistment of men who have previously served.

Reserve Service Voluntary

21. From 1920-21 onwards a quota of approximately 12,500 trained men will annually complete their service with the colours, but the Defence Act only provides for their *voluntary* enrolment in the Reserve Forces (Section 42) on completion of their period of compulsory service.

Horses and Mechanical Transport

22. Approximately 24,000 riding and 25,000 draught and pack horses will be required to provide for war establishment in the year

[1] This establishment includes Headquarters and District staffs, many of whom may not be available for the field army or for garrisons. Also includes *personnel* of six permanent batteries of Field Artillery, as well as the permanent Garrison Artillery and Engineers for defended ports.

[2] In estimating the numbers available in 1919-20, an annual wastage of 5 per cent. has been allowed for mortality, medical unfitness, and other casualties.

1919-20. Some 560 riding horses and 1120 draught horses are available in peace with permanent units and in remount depots.

In Australia there are about 2,250,000 horses, and of these 20 per cent. (or 450,000) may be regarded as suitable for military purposes. Section 67 of the Defence Act provides that any horses can be impressed by officers authorised by the regulations.

A scheme for the registration of horses is at present being formulated.

Arms, Ammunition, Clothing, Stores, etc.

23. It is the definite policy of the Commonwealth Government to equip fully the forces as they are gradually and annually augmented, until they attain their full strength in 1920. Thus in a given year, there are available for use the various articles in possession of the troops and those held ready for issue to the new quota of troops on the 1st July annually, plus such additional articles as for various reasons are held in stock.

Since the inception of universal training, the Department has expended nearly £1,000,000 on the provision of new equipment for troops (not including armament, ammunition, equipment for fixed defence, etc.).

Instruction of the Militia

24. The Active Militia is instructed by the following professional staff :—

	Establishment 1913-14.		Strength on 28-2-1914.	
	Officers.	Other Ranks.	Officers.	Other Ranks.
Field Artillery	5	24	3	22
Garrison Artillery	..	11	..	11
Engineers	..	19	..	15
Light Horse, Infantry, Senior Cadets	79 [1]	560	79 [1]	478
Army Service Corps	5 [2]	12	2	11
Army Medical Corps	..	15	..	15
Total	89	641	84	552

[1] Also perform duties as Brigade Majors of Light Horse and Infantry brigades and brigade areas or as permanent Adjutants of Light Horse regiments and Infantry battalions.

[2] Also performs duties as Assistant Directors of Transport and Supply.

Militia officers and non-commissioned officers are instructed at schools and classes of instruction for the various arms, held under the direction of the General Staff from time to time in each District, at convenient centres. Those attending are granted subsistence and, in addition, quarters or tentage.

Colleges, Technical Schools, etc.

25. From 1916 onwards the Royal Military College at Duntroon will produce some thirty graduates annually who will be commissioned in the Permanent Forces.

Musketry is taught at the Randwick Musketry School, and musketry classes are regularly conducted in each District. A School of Gunnery is established at Sydney for the instruction of officers and non-commissioned officers of the Permanent and Militia Garrison Artillery. Signalling instruction is provided by means of periodical schools held in each District. Field Artillery schools for Militia officers and non-commissioned officers are conducted in connection with the practice camps of the permanent batteries.

United Service Institutions exist, or shortly will exist, at the capital of each State. They are subsidised by the Defence Department. Lectures are given and war games are held at these institutions during the winter months.

Numbers Trained

26. The following figures show the strength of the Permanent and Militia Forces during the past ten years :—

Year.	Strength of Permanent Forces on 31st December.	Strength of Active Citizen Forces on 31st December.
1904	1096	18,524
1905	1098	19,595
1906	1116	20,245
1907	1119	20,170
1908	1201	21,936
1909	1262	22,141
1910	1455	21,877
1911	1727	21,960
1912	1998	33,955 [1]
1913	2468	45,915 [2]

[1] Includes 16,211 liable for service under universal training obligation.
[2] Includes 33,601 liable for service under universal training obligation.

Senior Cadets

27. The present Senior Cadet organisation came into force on 1st July 1911.

There are at present 92 Senior Cadet battalions, comprising 922 companies with a membership of 2285 officers (of whom 1066 are liable for training) and 86,899 Senior Cadets. Courses for training Senior Cadets officers and non-commissioned officers are held periodically at various training centres and are well attended, 800 officers and 877 non-commissioned officers having undergone a course since 1st July 1911.

Senior Cadet officers are also permitted to attend the Militia Infantry schools and to present themselves for the Militia Infantry officer's examination, those who qualify being granted a Militia officer's commission on the Unattached List of the Military Forces. Up to date, 50 Senior Cadet officers have so qualified and have been granted commissions on the Unattached List.

The Senior Cadets are not required to attend camp.

The estimated expenditure on account of Senior Cadets for the year 1913-14 is £140,000.

Junior Cadets

28. The number of boys born in the years 1900 and 1901 who have been medically examined is 50,510, and of these 49,291 were declared fit to undergo training. Training is compulsory in all schools except those situated in districts declared exempt. The number of the schools carrying out the training on 31st December 1913 was 8044, with a total of 55,850 Junior Cadets in training.

One hundred and sixty-nine courses of instruction for teachers were held by the Defence Department between 1st October 1911 and 31st December 1913, and 4103 male and female school teachers qualified.

The estimated expenditure on Junior Cadet training for the current year is £26,814. Further details concerning the physical training of boys and girls are given in Appendix F.

Rifle Clubs

29. Rifle Clubs constitute the only reserve for the Militia Forces. Every person accepted as a member is attested in the Reserve Forces. Members do no military training, but there is a certain proportion of old soldiers, Regulars or Militia, amongst them, and I have noticed that, when being assembled for inspection or to be addressed, they show themselves capable of performing the more elementary military movements. Altogether, there are 1133 Rifle Clubs, with a membership of

47,500, organised in 64 Rifle Club Unions. The Unions of each State are formed into a District Rifle Association, and the Commonwealth Council of Rifle Associations acts as an advisory board to the Minister when required. Clubs are entitled to Government rifles on loan, and 230 rounds of ammunition (or 250 rounds of miniature ammunition) for each member annually.

Of the 28,540 members who are fit for active service, 19,700 are allotted on mobilisation to units. (See Appendix G.)

Grants not exceeding £150 are allowed towards the construction and maintenance of a rifle range for each club.

The total cost of Rifle Associations and Clubs for the year 1913-14 is estimated at £132,000.

[Chapters III.–VII. omitted here.]

VIII.—THE ARMY TO-DAY

Characteristics of the Militia

99. The best assets of the Australian land forces, at their present stage of development, are to be found in the natural soldierlike spirit; in the intelligence, and in the wiry, athletic frames of the bulk of the rank and file. Their limitations are those inherent in every Militia—aye, even the far-famed Militia of Switzerland.

Patriotism, keenness, study and careful instruction, strain and struggle upon the heels of practical experience and habits of discipline, but rarely quite catch them up. For these, in a Regular Army, are the product of years of continuous service, and until a Militia has been called out for service and has been some time in the field, it will always, for this reason, lack self-confidence when faced by professional soldiers.

It is well to emphasise these immutable principles at the start, for they bring all my remarks into proper perspective and should act as a steadier to those who affect to despise their potential enemies—an attitude only one degree less bad than the present-day English habit of despising, or affecting to despise, their own defenders.

Admitting that the Australian Army of to-day is necessarily short of practical experience and is never embodied long enough for discipline to become a second nature, what are the substitutes? Theory must do what it can to take the place of practice in the field, and where discipline cannot be absorbed as a habit it can at least be cordially acquiesced in as a right and reasonable rule of military conduct.

Training

100. In the preceding paragraph I have put into the shape of advice what is actually taking place in the majority, perhaps—certainly in a large number—of Australian Militia units. In such corps all ranks

have done their very best by close study of the books of regulation, to prepare themselves to take full advantage of their brief period of practice training in camp. Often, the outpost sentry is word perfect in reeling off the duties he has to perform; the section leader in a defensive position sees to it that his men are well under cover and have a good field of fire; the subalterns have clear and generally sound theories as to the functions of scouts, supports, and reserves; their seniors have educated themselves into an examination proof grip of the tactical principles governing the use of advanced and rear guards, flank attack, covering fire, etc., etc., etc. All this is admirable, and it is only when theory has to be translated on to the ground that the lack of the ounce of practice begins to betray the lightness of the ton of theory.

101. The sentry is so eager to see the enemy that he neglects to conceal himself, thus giving away the outpost positions; the commander of the picquet puts four times more sentry groups out than are necessary to do the work; the section leader forgets to get in touch with troops on his flanks and is ignorant of their whereabouts; the advanced guard commander passes down a valley without crowning the heights; the commander of a support makes his men lie down in the open 50 yards behind the fighting line, and encourages the comrades to whom he has brought assistance by shooting them through the head.

102. The foregoing transcript, taken from my diary, of some failings to make theory correspond with practice is not as serious as it might appear.

First, the bullet is the finest and cleverest instructor in the world, and would straighten out many of these little errors in a flash. Analysed, it will be found that they are failures in the power of realising the unreal. Failures, that is to say, of the imagination. The best cure for these is a leaden pill in a nickel envelope.

Secondly, Territorials and Militiamen all over the world do precisely the same sort of things, and he who believes that Regulars themselves are altogether exempt takes them at their own valuation.

But the bullet charges high fees for its lessons, and two black strangers cannot make one white Australian.

103. A great deal can be done to strengthen the practical side of training in Australia by levelling up the higher criticism brought to bear upon camp training. A non-commissioned officer is rarely capable of giving higher tactical instruction. He should confine himself mainly to teaching cadets and recruits. For the kind of work I am considering, an officer—a highly educated one at that—a man whose views have been widened by travel and by manœuvre working with the three arms combined, would be able to do a very great deal of good. The Duntroon graduate should, in due course, produce the very type, especially if he is encouraged to see something of the great

outside military world. Such a man once appointed should be left free to devote himself mainly to the higher instruction of the Militia officers and non-commissioned officers, who must themselves be the instructors of their men. The strong point of the Army is in its men —men at the same time intelligent and biddable. The weak point of the Army lies in the comparatively small number of its officers who are capable of giving good instruction. This will come in time—it is coming all the time—but there is the weakest spot of to-day.

104. Once the mass of the officers gain sufficient experience and self-confidence to enable them to speak as true commanders and guides to their men, the secret of creating some spirit of true discipline in a modern, democratic Army will have been solved. From the General Staff at Headquarters through district commandants and brigade-majors, through battalion commanders and permanent adjutants, through company officers down to the men in the ranks, the current of progressive thought will flow in a sustained and systematic stream.[1]

105. Turning to the syllabus along which the Army is being trained this year,[2] I think it is in all respects well adapted to its objects. As to the execution thereof, I have one comment, of universal application, to make. It is necessary that much of the training should be elementary, especially this year and next year. But officers engaged in instructing their men must bear in mind that elementary work means work simplified—not work twisted out of its true shape into something unpractical. Strip the problem down to its skeleton—leave, if it must be, only the backbone—but let that backbone at least retain its own vital marrow. Suppose the recruit is being given an object lesson in outpost work, and is shown a picquet, its support, its group of sentries, a patrol, a detached post, and an examining party. This would be too much for him to take in all at once, so the idea has to be simplified. Take away everything except the picquet and one sentry; point out where the main body is supposed to be reposing, and the dullest recruit will probably grasp the general principle underlying the service of security.

106. But in carrying out this simplification be careful to let that specimen picquet be placed where a picquet might be placed on service, and let the sentry be posted where a reasonable picquet commander might feel the need of a sentry. If, on the plea of the lesson being 'only elementary,' the picquet would be visible to the enemy whilst the sentry is placed down in a hole from whence he cannot see 100 yards, why then, instead of being elementary, the instruction has merely been detrimental. The recruit will remember having seen that sentry wasted upon a hollow long after he has forgotten all the wise explanations of his tutor. I have been driven to make these

[1] *Vide* my proposals in Section V. [not reproduced here].
[2] Memorandum of Training, 1913-14.

observations owing to the frequency with which it has seemed to me to be assumed that it did not matter how unreal an object lesson might be, provided it was to be served up to beginners.

Discipline

[1] [So numbered in original.]

127.[1] I freely confess that my recollections of South Africa, coupled with the assurances of numerous Australian friends, had caused me to feel sceptical regarding the quality of the discipline I should find regulating the ranks of the Army. But, if I came here prepared to ban, I can only say now—I was mistaken.

128. The Australian soldier is very amenable to discipline. That a contrary impression should be so prevalent is due to the following facts:

(1) There are not yet competent commanders enough to go round.

(2) Manifestations of any feeling, but more especially of feelings of respect, are discountenanced under the unwritten Australian code of conduct.

(3) The private soldier does not clearly understand that what an officer *is*, is one thing, and that what he *stands for* is another, and, militarily speaking, the significant thing.

129. So long as the commander knows his job and realises accurately his relation to the lads entrusted to him by their parent, the State, for instruction, there is no cause for misgivings as to Australian discipline. I believe, indeed, that with a little trouble the men could be brought a step further and made to understand that, even when they have good, practical reasons for believing that they are as clever and as competent as their officer, still, they are bound by patriotism, and by regard for the honour of the regiment, to salute him and obey him, with as much respect as if he was Marlborough and Wellington combined.

130. Materialistic misconception of the significance of a military salute is prevalent only because the ethics of military psychology have not hitherto attracted the attention of the Australian intellect. An officer giving a command is not expressing his own wishes—he is for the nonce acting as the mouthpiece of the State—conveying to other servants of the State temporarily entrusted to his charge, the supreme will of the people.

131. Conversely, a private soldier does not salute his officer because he likes him, or because he, the private soldier, is in any way an inferior being, but because he sees passing before him the personification of the Sovereign State, which, in this case, has decreed that it is to be recognised by a formal salutation. The personality of the officer has no more to do with the matter than the personality of a corpse has effect

on the crowd who respectfully doff their hats as the procession winds past them.

132. I trust then that officers and men will by degrees learn to be more punctilious on this point of the salute, which, small though it may seem, yet is liable to give rise to false impressions, not only amongst outsiders, but also in the heart of the Army. As to the essential, namely, the readiness of the Australian soldier to obey, and follow a leader who knows his business—on that score the military authorities may be quite reassured.

MUSKETRY

133. Every one is agreed upon the importance to an Army of a high standard of musketry. Men may be able to ride well, to march long distances, to manœuvre rapidly; all these accomplishments may only serve as a means of escaping from the enemy unless they are able to do credit to the wonderful modern magazine rifle they carry.

Consciousness of being a marksman is a great moral support in battle. The soldier who doubts whether he can hit the advancing foeman is twice as likely to run away as the soldier who knows he can break a bottle at a hundred yards three shots out of four.

In a Militia force, progressive training and economy of time are essential, and both these *desiderata* will be best served by giving the young idea a thoroughly sound grounding in musketry. From the moment a senior cadet first handles a rifle, the serious business of his musketry training should be steadily kept in view.

134. At present the musketry instruction of the Senior Cadets can hardly be said to hit the bull's-eye plumb centre. They are being taught to shoot with a weapon quite different from that which is in the hands of the Militia. Trigger-pressing, aiming, adjustment of sights, and the action of the rifle, all have to be re-learnt on transfer. The want of trained instructors shows up the more clearly at musketry than in any other branch of training. The Commandant of the School of Musketry reports that, in many instances, Senior Cadet musketry is worse than useless owing to the mistaken notion that it is more important to show a good percentage of cadets as having fired range practices than a smaller number effectively trained. Thus do faulty trigger-pressing and gun shyness tend to become chronic. More miniature ranges and more instructional stores are badly wanted for cadets, but here, as I have said earlier in my Report, impatience must wait upon money.

135. I am sorry to have to report that, judging by the results of the annual course of musketry for last year, the standard of musketry can only be classed as third-rate.[1] Especially is this the case in the Infantry,

[1] I do not use this word in any technical sense, but merely to denote my personal opinion as to the actual standard compared with what it might be.

where too large a percentage are shown as 'not exercised.' Also, many officers in charge of machine-gun sections are not qualified to handle these weapons, although, in the hands of untrained men, machine-guns are apt to be a two-edged weapon.

Nature has done her best for the Australian in this matter of shooting. She has fitted him out with a keen vision, long limbs, and just the right sort of shooter's nerve, tense, but controlled. Whence then these disappointing results ?

The chief causes appear to me to be—

(*a*) Lack of sufficient range accommodation, particularly in metropolitan areas.

(*b*) A tendency to rush men through their range practices before they have completed their preliminary training.

(*c*) The want of qualified instructors and instructional stores.

136. Subject to what I have already said as to funds, there are certainly few, if any, shortcomings of the Australian military machine upon which money would be better spent than these bearing on musketry. I summarise the remedies as briefly as I can—

(*a*) Supervision over musketry throughout the Commonwealth to be strengthened.

(*b*) The School of Musketry to be made capable of instructing, in time, the whole of the instructional staffs as well as all machine-gun officers.

(*c*) Citizen officers and non-commissioned officers to be encouraged to qualify themselves to train their men.

(*d*) Senior Cadet musketry to be systematised on progressive lines.

137. Speaking as ex-Commandant of Hythe Musketry School, I feel confident I am not suggesting extravagance when I submit that the staff of the excellent School of Musketry at Randwick needs some strengthening. The Commandant should be enabled to devote a part of his attention to supervising the musketry of the Army as a whole, and an officer should be appointed as chief instructor, who could take his place at the school whenever he might be absent on inspection work. For five years I had to inspect the whole of the musketry in India, and I am perfectly certain that any officer who conscientiously carries out work of this nature will have scant leisure to devote to the details of school work. Further, in each District there should be at least one officer who is capable of holding the local courses of musketry instruction for Militia officers and non-commissioned officers.

138. The importance of increasing full as well as miniature range accommodation is so obvious that I do not here press the point. Neither miniature ranges nor ammunition used on them would cost very much,

whereas the instruction imparted is of great value. Men thoroughly trained on a miniature range have surprisingly little to learn on the open ranges.

139. The system of cadet musketry should be revised. Until the last year of cadet service practice should be confined to shooting with the miniature rifle, and, as funds admit, it will be found of great advantage if, in all essentials, such as trigger-pressing, sights, etc., these miniature rifles are similar to the service weapon. In Great Britain, in Canada, and in the United States of America, cadets are normally instructed to shoot with the miniature of the service weapon they will use in later years. In the last year of Senior Cadet service, those who have passed the standards in grouping with the miniature rifle might be permitted to fire a recruits' course of musketry with the service weapon.

Light Horse

140. The Light Horse are the most typically Australian of any of the Commonwealth troops. Physically the men seem to have been built by nature to fulfil a cavalry commander's ideal; all ranks are exceedingly keen; they ride boldly and well, and are clever and quick at getting about the country. In fact, a large proportion of the recruits join with half the trade of a mounted soldier at their fingers' ends.

Although lamentation over the deterioration of the waler is a standing dish at all reunions of officers belonging to mounted corps, the horses are actually of a sound and suitable stamp. Some of them are on the light side, but, as a rule, they are not wanting in quality. With one exception, all Brigadiers and Commanding Officers I spoke to on the subject seemed well satisfied with the new saddles.

141. Cohesion, control, and horse-mastership are the qualities which the Light Horse inevitably lack. I say inevitably, because, with the short time available for training, it would be too much to expect of any men that they should develop high standards of steadiness or revolutionise their preconceived notions of the way to work a horse. But, admitting all this, there is still ample scope for improvement even under existing conditions, and, what is more, I am convinced that it will gradually come about. The reason for my conviction is that it was the lack of that very cohesion and of the art of sparing horses which was recognised by all of us as the weak spot of the Australian contingents in South Africa. But the Light Horse have made good progress since those days, and the improvement is steadily going on all the time.

142. With only moderate cohesion, a small body, such as a squadron or even a regiment, may march and manœuvre; without good cohesion,

any larger body of Light Horse will soon find itself in disarray and confusion. In the old days the Australian contingents used up their horses as if each man had only to go out on the veldt and round up, or select from some friendly corps, another. To-day a Light Horse regiment would make its mounts last twice the time; in the near future I believe they will really come to understand the priceless value of a good and fit charger in peace or war.

143. The remedies are in the hands of the officers, particularly the junior officers. The men must look more to the troop leaders, whether in movement or in the firing line, and as the young officers improve in knowledge, so they will gain power and grip over their men. This will give improved discipline, from which follows the closer cohesion that is required. Individually the men move quickly; it is rapidity of collected manœuvre of troops, squadrons, and regiments towards some common objective that must now be superimposed upon that good foundation. The same as regards stable management. Officers must make an earnest study of this subject, and must see to it that whether in camp or in the field their men are constantly thinking of their horses.

144. To give point to the foregoing remarks I may as well give an example. The most instructive of my inspections of Light Horse took place early one morning when my official visit was supposed to be over and when I was believed to be, and had meant to be, miles away from the training ground.

However, it was my fortune, so it happened, to motor past a Light Horse encampment on a fine summer's morning about half an hour after the force had started work upon a tactical scheme. First, I met the leading squadrons working along in very good style towards the enemy's position. Behind them were several squadrons making up lost distance, moving towards the front somewhat rapidly, without much order, covering the whole width of the road, and in depth taking up at least four or five times the proper distance. Next came a squadron which had evidently started late, moving on either side of the road at a gallop. Last of all, as I passed the camp itself, single horsemen were still issuing from the gates of the paddock, most of them at full gallop, in a desperate hurry to join their comrades at the front.

145. Here was lack of camp discipline and precision, and want of care of horse-flesh. Most of these men had not fallen in on parade, and their squadron had moved on without them. This was irregular, and although no reflection on the fighting value of the individuals, yet a reflection, certainly, on the war value of the unit. Much depends upon a good start and perfect steadiness in getting away from camp. The impression made in the camp follows the horseman into the field. As to the horses, all owners in this horse-loving land will understand that

only imperative necessity can justify a long day's work being commenced at a furious pace.

146. To improve troop and squadron control, field days, where a force as large as a whole brigade is in action, should be exceptional, and the work should be confined, for the present, mainly to squadron training. I have several times heard of the idea of combined camps for the three arms mooted by senior officers, but whilst these would afford valuable experiences for commanders and staffs, from the point of view of the units I would prefer for some years to come, and until there are trainees of long service in the ranks, if an occasional training could be given to one unit at a time. The whole of the instructional staff of the brigade can then be employed with each regiment in turn.

147. In reconnaissance more use should be made of patrols, and the best men should be sent out. Protective patrols generally worked intelligently and well, though on several occasions, not being boldly enough pushed out, they could not have given the main body sufficient warning of an attack to allow it to extricate itself in time from a low and difficult position. But as regards the individual savvy and quickness of all ranks I have nothing but praise.

148. Ground scouting gains an added importance in the country over which I have seen the Light Horse working; much time can be saved in movement, if early intimation is given of the gates and passways in the paddock fences.

On one or two occasions I found the officers weak in map-reading, and a compass would have been helpful.

149. In message writing, Field Service Regulations lay down places for the address, number, date, place sent from, etc.; this may seem a trivial matter, in reality it is important. While a reconnaissance is going on, the staff of a mounted brigade receives a large number of messages; if these are not written in proper form, valuable time is wasted in hunting out where the information comes from, and so on. Moreover, the writer is less likely to forget details when there is a place laid down for each one. A patrol that collects information and does not transmit it is useless.

150. Recruited as they are, a large proportion of the men of the Light Horse are able to shoe their own horses. Both in camp and on mobilisation men should have shoes in their shoe pockets ready fitted for their horses.

151. The Light Horse have no barrack squares, but possess instead the whole of their native land, a magnificent training ground, to work over; the officers should make all possible use of it to teach object lessons; in the stress of war, men will remember what they have seen better than what they have been told.

152. I have made certain criticisms on the Light Horse. I do not

wish to leave the subject without again expressing my high appreciation of their value to-day, and the confidence I feel as to their future. An invader would necessarily be very weak in the cavalry arm, and the Light Horse would have the time of their lives with his communications and with his scouting and foraging parties. When battle was joined they would also play their part, for I can assure the Commonwealth that they possess to-day a formidable arm in their Light Horse—the sort of men any Commander would like to have at his back in war.

Field Artillery

153. In the earlier days of the home Territorials, the most common and, on the platform, most effective form of attack upon the force, took the shape of sarcasms levelled at the Field Artillery units. How, it was asked by the indignant orator, could a highly technical arm, an arm that had always remained a mystery even to himself, be mastered by mere citizens? Well, the thing has been done, at least to the extent that the Field Artillery are now cited by the supporters and not by the depreciators of the Territorials.

154. So here in the Commonwealth, the facts being that, first, there is no mystery about artillery; secondly, that a special type of recruit—and a very excellent type—is always attracted by that arm of the service from which Napoleon arose to power.

The Field Artillery furnish a first-class example of the willing, eager spirit that pervades the Commonwealth to-day. Although a longer period of training is required than in the Infantry, there is not the smallest difficulty in getting trainees to apply to join. The authorities have, indeed, to pick and choose their men from the numbers pressing forward to undertake the more arduous duty. Having once elected for the Artillery, the trainees play the game handsomely and give their time generously, with both hands, to the State. Throughout the year they continue to put in voluntary attendances at training drills, amounting, in many cases, to quite a large number, and I am glad, indeed, to be able to report that all this keenness finds reflection in the work of the batteries in the field.

155. Some of the instruction now being given is of the highest order, and the technical training of the firing battery is in safe hands. I have seen a considerable amount of successful practice at simple targets, and, also, naturally, some which showed very clearly the need of longer training and greater experience.

The following hints may be of some service to the officers :—

Time spent in reconnaissance is seldom wasted; this principle and a ready imagination will carry a battery commander far on the road to victory. Want of imagination—want of power to borrow the enemy's point of view—is a downhill attribute. Example :—On one

occasion a battery trotted into action under cover raising, as it went, a high column of dust which must have given a hostile battery all the information it required; a little thought and the battery would have walked up and opened fire without any indication to the enemy of its position.

156. Here, *per contra*, is a favourable note from my diary:—'At . . . camp, the battery staff, even in highly-trained batteries apt to move anyhow, pressed forward smartly as a compact, cohesive body and kept well under cover till it was wanted.'

Some of the junior officers naturally show their lack of experience every now and then. Thus, an occasion rises to my mind when the battery leader, relying on the tracking powers of the second trumpeter, led the battery into the thickest part of a thick wood, instead of to the position selected by the battery commander.

157. The horses are generally suitable, and one or two of the batteries I saw were very well mounted indeed.

The driving in many cases was capital—it was even surprising. The Australian driver, though he may come from a town district, when he is brought under good instruction, develops a fine confidence and dash in a remarkably short time. Necessity is the mother of progress as well as of invention. Paddocks studded thick with stumps of big trees force the men to drive well or to take very bad spills.

Most of the batteries I have seen at continuous training possess good standards of camp discipline and stable management, points that will tell strongly in their favour in war.

158. I have spoken hitherto of the better-trained units that have been inspected. I have seen others attempting work beyond their present powers—batteries that should have been employed learning the very rudiments of their work. Two of these batteries are not yet ready for war. That is to say, they are not yet capable of moving smartly off the road to take up a position and open fire therefrom.

159. As the words 'ready for war' used in the preceding paragraph may give rise to some misapprehension, I must clearly explain that I do not by that phrase mean to imply that even the efficient batteries of the Commonwealth Field Artillery are yet, collectively, trained up to the level required of the artillery of an Army working in masses together in the field. They have not had time yet, or opportunity, to practise that higher control and power of combination outside the battery, without which there can be no real fire co-operation.

160. Then, again, there is the problem of handling that great mass of ammunition supply which lies behind the guns in action. Even within the batteries themselves this problem has hardly been attacked; I have only seen batteries working with their firing battery wagons, the first line wagons have not been in action. Whether higher training

of this sort can ever satisfactorily be carried through in the present period of training is questionable. If not, then it must simply be recognised that although the batteries may be ' ready for war ' as they stand, the Field Artillery as a whole will not be fit for handling in the mass during a pitched battle until they have been embodied and have worked together for a further period of at least several weeks.

Garrison Artillery

161. I have inspected the bulk of the Garrison Artillery, both Permanent and Militia, on their manning parades, and at work on the guns.

The Royal Australian Garrison Artillery are men of fine physique ; they are very steady on parade and smart at their gun drill. A few of them struck me as being rather on the old side for work requiring vigour and force. In time of stress efficiency might suffer in consequence. I refer to this matter later on (paragraph 184) under the head of Pensions.

162. The soldiers of the Militia Garrison Artillery are also a well set up, athletic lot of young fellows, very keen indeed, and quite up to the work required of them.

The only practice over a sea range that I saw was carried out by a Militia unit. The drill was smart, and the rate of fire and effect would have been creditable to any troops.

163. I noticed a small deficiency in equipment ; the lack of canvas shoes for work with the modern gun mountings ; without them the danger of slipping is considerable. They are now in use in the Imperial service.

Engineers

164. The Engineers of all ranks are conspicuous for the intelligent capacity with which they tackle their business.

There is cause here for gratification—none for surprise. The officers are architects or civil engineers ; the rank and file are specially selected from the trades cognate to the work they have to perform as soldiers.

Hence, even with the short period of military training available, the higher technical work of running searchlights, with their engines and dynamos, is carried on with perfect ease by the citizen soldiers of Australia. They have nothing to learn here, so far as I can see, from any regular instructor.

If only some arrangement could be made for ensuring that the searchlight sections of the Militia could be available during the short but dangerous precautionary period which may precede mobilisation, I see no reason for retaining electric light Engineers on a permanent

basis. The Garrison Artillery might act as caretakers of the search-lights and their engines.

165. When the submarines actually *en route* from England arrive, submarine mining, now in the hands of the Engineers, will, I presume, be either abolished, or handed over to the Navy, as has been done elsewhere. I assume also that 'works' will continue to be carried out by the Department for Home Affairs. Under a Militia system there cannot be room for two Works Departments in the same country.

In these circumstances, then, there would appear to be little or no scope for the employment of a permanent Engineer Corps upon any of the duties referred to in the two previous paragraphs.

166. Besides searchlight work, the Engineer Militia has to deal with pioneer work of all kinds in the field, as well as with communication service. Here specialised military knowledge is essential, and more technical instruction is wanted than is now available. Good value would be obtained if pioneer schools were established in central positions to which the officers and non-commissioned officers of Engineer units could be sent for instruction. Pioneer classes for other arms might also be usefully held from time to time at these schools. The advantage a permanent school possesses is that instruments, equipment, and models can be maintained there which the travelling instructor lacks. A couple of permanent instructors with half a dozen permanent assistants should suffice for the needs of each school.

Infantry

167. I have now seen the greater portion of the Australian Infantry —four brigades and several single battalions at manœuvre camps, the remainder on ceremonial parades.

I wish very much I could transplant 10,000 of these young soldiers to Salisbury Plain. They would do the croakers good and make them less frightened of other nations, who have no overseas children getting ready to lend them a hand.

168. Most of the officers are keen and resourceful. I was particularly struck by the clear and capable manner in which captains gave their story at my conferences, or when called upon to explain a situation in the field. On the other hand, a proportion of the senior officers, even of the commanding officers, do not possess the nerve or calm essential to any one occupying positions so responsible. I have not concerned myself with personal detail, not conceiving it my duty to report on individuals, and from this attitude I shall not depart. But I state my broad impression so that the responsible Australian authority may know where there is scope for his vigilance.

169. The majority of the non-commissioned officers and men are still very young, but they are full of intelligence and grit. On at least

two occasions I have seen brigades tested severely, once by heat and heavy marching, the other time by floods and mud. In each case the men made light of their trying experiences, treating them as an excellent joke.

170. In my general remarks at the commencement of this chapter I referred to the distinction between an elementary lesson and an unreal lesson. With the Infantry, whose training is not varied and enlivened either by the horse, as in the Cavalry and Artillery, or by technical work, as in the Engineers, Army Service Corps, or Medical Services, it is specially important to bear in mind another distinction, namely, that which exists between elementary work and dull work.

171. I will give an instance. On one occasion all companies were ordered out to practise advanced guards. I supervised several of the exercises. The captain explained the situation, apportioned the responsibility, and told off his officers and men to their respective tasks. Then the company moved off. From that moment there was little more to be learnt and therefore little more interest, provided only distances were maintained. The company marched on and on, preceded and flanked by scouts, first the vanguard, then the main guard—and nothing happened. There was no enemy; there was no *contretemps*. Why? Because it had been arranged that the work on that day was to be elementary.

172. Well, but I maintain that even in the elementary stages better value might be got of one of those afternoons in camp which are so priceless because so few. Suppose that instead of all companies doing advanced guards, one company formed outposts, and that an advanced guard company from a distance of two miles were marched in such a direction that it must strike that outpost? The scouts of the subaltern commanding the vanguard detect the outpost sentry, or do not detect him and are fired on by the outpost. They report to the vanguard commander, who has to push forward and occupy as good a fire position as he can and send back a written report to his captain commanding the main guard. The captain, in his turn, must determine what to do, and issue orders. Again, the outpost commander is warned by his sentry, and brings his picquet into fighting position, at the same time writing a report to the commander of the main force.

173. It may be said that the young officers have never practised writing such reports, and that the rank and file are not yet trained enough to take up a fire position. Some sort of a report the officers will perforce write, and as to the troops, in such small numbers they will get there somehow. Every one will make mistakes of course, but, then, I say, let them make mistakes. The more the better, from an instructor's point of view, for he, like the literary critic, lives upon the errors of others.

Not only would more be learnt by the scheme I have suggested than by practising for several hours the mechanism of a movement that can be learnt in ten minutes, but every one would be interested, and a power of stimulating interest is the hall-mark of a good teacher.

174. I trust this little example of mine will not be twisted into a theory that soldiers should begin to run before they can walk. Not at all. Only, under the particular conditions obtaining in the Australian Army, it is well that a long drill should, at the end, get into touch, even faultily, and for a few minutes, with the reality for which it is meant to be a preparation.

Army Service Corps

175. The Army Service Corps have always distinguished themselves on my parades by their excellent turn-out and bearing. I have made it my business to examine as closely as time would admit into their work in the camps, work upon which the well-being and content of the rest of the troops closely hinge. A suitable selection in trades makes it easy for them to fall into their various tasks.

But I consider that on certain occasions too much demand has been made on their strength, and a slight increase to their establishment of trainees appears to me advisable. Also, it would be well if the companies, with their transport, could be brought into camp the day before the rest of the troops. Some hire of transport would thus be saved, and the depots could be got into working order to meet the first rush.

When moving on roads, march discipline assumes great importance; a column of transport must either keep to the left half of the road or arrangements for clearing the road rapidly from the rear must be practised as a matter of drill.

Altogether, this is a highly satisfactory and efficient branch of the Commonwealth service.

Army Medical Corps

176. The system of attaching the field units of the Army Medical Corps to combatant units during the periods of continuous training is much to be commended as being excellent training for war.

In every camp inspected, I have visited the hospital tents; the beds were, fortunately, for the most part empty; the rare occupants that I found were receiving every care and attention.

The drivers of the ambulance wagons are efficient; all ranks take the keenest professional pride in their duties, and the turn-out and general appearance on ceremonial parades have struck me favourably.

AVIATION

177. The Flying School was visited at a fortunate moment, one of the new B.E. machines had been finished the night before, and was ready to take the air.

The situation of the school is ideal; it is well away from interference by the public; it has a sea front; there is nothing on the land side to break up the wind; and there is good landing ground everywhere for many miles. The new sheds and workshops are progressing well, and are conveniently placed, with plenty of room for eventual expansion. The two instructors are fine steady fliers, and, more important still, have great experience in teaching.

178. The equipment consists of a Bristol instructional machine, two B.E.'s, and two Deperdussin monoplanes. The Bristol machine, with 50 H.P. Gnome engine, is the type on which the majority of British pilots have taken their brevets, and is a good machine for the purpose. The B.E.'s are of the usual Government type, and were in part constructed by the Bristol Company. The rudder posts are not sufficiently rigid, and it is proposed to braze on two fins set at 90°, which will probably remedy the defect. The petrol gauge is not visible to the pilot when a passenger is carried; this should be remedied. The present tanks only hold enough petrol for about one and a half hours' flying, but this need not interfere with the utility of the machines for instructional purposes. The machine that was ready had been very well trued up; although the engine had not been tuned to its normal revolutions, the machine flew very steadily with a passenger in a somewhat bumpy condition of the air.

The two Deperdussin machines with 35 H.P. Anzani engines will be useful for ground work to accustom learners to the controls and to sitting behind their wings; it would be dangerous to allow them off the ground—at any rate, pupils should on no account be permitted to make a turn in the air with them.

179. For the present, it is proposed to teach in each year a limited number of officers of the Permanent and Militia Forces and a limited number of mechanics.

A beginning has been made with military aviation in Australia, and the Government have decided to continue. I venture, with much respect, to submit that in so deciding they have been well advised. True, the aeroplane is a new arm, and there are heavy calls being made on the Commonwealth purse to keep the older arms in the van of progress. But, although from this point of view it might seem prudent to hold back in the matter of flying, on the other hand Australia should just as much aim at being ultimate mistress of her own air as she is of her own land and sea. Therefore, the sooner she

makes a beginning at being self-contained in the matter of flying, the better.

Proceeding on this assumption, it is necessary for me to point out that, unless certain equipment is added, the money already spent, and the money about to be spent, in running expenses of the school will, to a great extent, be wasted. With only one instructional machine, it is inevitable that the pupils will be retained in expensive idleness at frequent and, often, for long intervals. Nor do I think it altogether safe to send pupils straight from the 50 H.P. instructional machine to the fast B.E. Also, it may very likely come to be considered necessary in the near future that seaplanes should be provided as an adjunct to the Navy. But flying is not learnt on seaplanes but on aeroplanes.

180. I therefore recommend the provision of two additional machines for instruction, say Bristol biplanes, with 80 H.P. engines; these would provide intermediate instruction in preparation for the fast work. They could, I believe, be obtained at a first cost of under £2000. Then, again, the governing factor with regard to the B.E. machines will be the Renault engines, and unless a spare engine is provided both machines will often be out of action at the same time. In the alternative, two Maurice Farmans might be substituted for the 80 H.P. Bristols, at a rather larger cost; this would give two more Renault engines, which would be interchangeable with the engines of the B.E. machines.

The two sheds and repair shop now building, with the aeroplane tent already in use, should give sufficient accommodation for the extra machines recommended.

THE ROYAL MILITARY COLLEGE

181. I inspected Duntroon on 30th and 31st March, bringing to bear upon my task recollections of West Point in the States, and of two visits to Kingston, Canada, not to speak of Sandhurst or of continental military colleges. Duntroon has been at work for three years, and the good that has already been accomplished reflects the highest credit on the Commandant and his staff.

The aim of the collegiate authorities has been to form character through a thorough system of discipline, and in this I firmly believe eminent success has been achieved. Indeed, a happier-looking, smarter, keener lot of boys it would be impossible to imagine.

182. The Commandant reported favourably on the work done in study; I myself was able to form a clear opinion on the field work. Battalion drill was excellently carried out under the orders of senior cadets; the boys handled their arms brilliantly. The senior cadets had been given a thorough grounding in practical Light Horse, Field

Artillery, and Engineer work, which will stand them in good stead in whatever branch they may serve.

The system of interior economy appeared to function smoothly, and the boys' rooms were a model of neatness and good order. I approve entirely of the arrangements for the pay and equipment, which are a direct incentive to a modest, unostentatious style of living.

183. The framing of a complete curriculum for the four years' course is rendered a little difficult by lack of explicit and authoritative rulings as to how the young officers are to be employed on leaving the college. If my proposals for the organisation of a business department are adopted, the number of cadets passing through Duntroon may have to be curtailed. In any event, fewer officers will be required than was anticipated (see Appendix H), and this fact must, to some extent, affect the output from the college.

184. I earnestly hope that Lord Kitchener's proposal to attach young officers for a time to units of the Imperial Forces will be carried through. Keeping in view the problems that face Australia in the eastern seas, I would suggest that India offers unique opportunities for these young officers to imbibe the spirit and principles of the British troops with whom they may some day stand shoulder to shoulder, and, generally, to study the characteristics of Asiatics.

Pensions for the Permanent Force

185. Pensions are things which lie out on a sort of Tom Tidler's ground midway between military organisation and State policy. It is optional to me, therefore, to pass on and look the other way, or to run on to the debatable territory and perhaps get caught. One good excuse and three fair reasons impel me to adventure upon the latter course of action :—

(1) Lord Kitchener referred to pensions in his report (para. 44).
(2) The shadow of the indigent veteran has dogged my footsteps throughout my tour.
(3) The first cadets from Duntroon are graduating and it may discourage them, on the outset of their career, if they see old officers who have done distinguished service reduced to taking junior clerkships in order to save their families from destitution.
(4) Wherever regulations are pitiless there is a tendency for the divine emotion of pity to reassert itself in some irregular and, therefore, harmful way. An old officer or non-commissioned officer comes to the end of his tether. It is patent to all the Army that his useful sphere of service has already been exceeded, but no one wants to see him, on that account, struggling with

starvation. What happens? The tender heart of authority is touched. The time-expired veteran is extended. Thereby work suffers, and hope deferred makes sick the hearts of dozens of anxious juniors.

The Canadian Government has recently instituted a contributory pension scheme for its officers, which is, I was given to understand, working admirably.

The Government Factories

186. Every superintendent went out of his way to show me as much as possible during my visits to the factories under the control of the Department of Defence. But, in default of a staff of experts, I am not competent to submit any detailed analysis, and I merely comment on a few points that came within my notice.

The good conditions under which the employés work is a credit to the Commonwealth Government, who here set a fine standard, not only before private employers, but also to other older and wealthier governments.

187. Though no expert, I have carefully inspected on previous occasions the Birmingham Small Arms, Enfield, and the Ross Rifle Factory at Quebec. Lithgow is equipped with thoroughly modern machinery, such as magnetic chucks and, what seemed to me, a particularly effective rifling machine. I noticed that the oil employed in the furnaces allows of nice adjustments in temperature.

188. The sooner Australia stands on its own legs in the production of munitions of war the better. The experiments now being made at the Small Arms Factory at Lithgow in the direction of replacing continental walnut by Queensland maple in the manufacture of stocks, are so much to the good. The cost per rifle must also be viewed from this standpoint of a self-contained Australia. Even if this cost remains permanently higher than the normal price at home, a rifle stands on a different platform from dry goods or machinery. Only, the State must see to it that advantage is not taken of a department being a close borough to make the price too high.

189. I think myself it might be well if an independent expert from the home factories were invited to come over every few years to visit the Lithgow works. Whilst I was at Quebec a talented expert had come out from England to examine. He locked the stable door; but already, alas, a very expensive horse had found its way down the long lane to which there is no turning.

190. Taking into account the conditions of labour, the cost of locally-produced acetone, and the fact that the machinery has only recently been installed, I consider that the price at which cordite is produced at Maribyrnong compares favourably with home prices.

Whenever the proposed manufacture of gun cordite is commenced, the cleaning of the cotton will have to be carried out on a higher and more expensive scale.

Lead linings to the boiling vats are being tried at Waltham Abbey with good results, and I would recommend that a similar experiment should be tried in Australia.

191. Army clothing is a favourite topic of complaint all the world over. During my inspections I have heard a few growls about the uniforms supplied to the Citizen Forces, but certainly it is smart and serviceable. Most of the representations made to me concerned the cadets, and were to the effect that lighter material should be issued for summer wear, as the boys found the present heavy shirts, breeches, and putties very trying in the hot weather. I merely echo these remarks for what the authorities may consider them to be worth.

192. The Harness Factory obtains that independent government examination of its products which I have recommended for the other establishments.

The Commonwealth pattern girth, which I saw in the making, I consider a capital type of article.

IX.—CONCLUSION

193. Of all the misrepresentations bandied to and fro on the subject of the Territorial Forces of the Old Country, the most gross and palpable has always seemed to me to be embodied in the statement that these citizen soldiers would not be ready to fight until six months after a declaration of war. If Englishmen and Scotchmen had really fallen so far away behind the standards of former generations, then, obviously, no amount of expenditure in money or service would suffice to prolong the existence of so wretched a race of beings. Actually, the Territorial Forces of the United Kingdom are not only ready, but burning, to fight the moment an enemy will oblige them by landing on British shores. But however monstrous an aspersion may be, if it lives on, it will usually be found that it can lay claim to being some sort of distant poor relation to the truth, the truth in this case being that they would fight less effectively to-morrow than after six months' embodiment.

194. So also with Australia's Army of to-day, and it is my object in these last lines to state how far they would be ready did the occasion rise now—at once—to hold their own against disciplined troops from regions washed by the Pacific.

The whole of the Regulars, and three-fourths of the actual serving Militia, are sufficiently trained to take part in a modern battle—supposing the occasion to arise the day after to-morrow. With two weeks' warning, the remaining fourth of the Militia, plus some 20,000 of the

flower of the Rifle Clubs, would be available as reinforcements. Were the Australian Forces then defeated, the defence of the country would resolve itself into a guerilla problem, where at once it passes beyond the reckonings of recognised military service.

195. I have said that three-fourths of the actual serving Militia may be relied upon to fight against any force of invaders in the open field, and, certainly, to kill a good number of them. By this I mean to say that a large proportion of the Australian Forces have not only the willing spirit but also the technical instruction and discipline to enable one man to handle them during a concentration as well as in action. But now the further question arises, How would they fare upon the battle-field? My own opinion is that, giving all due weight to the moral factor (*i.e.*, that the men would be defending a country well worth defending and would be very angry); giving, I say, due weight to this factor, and to the advantage they would possess in knowing how to work over their own peculiar paddocks and bush, they would need to be in a majority of at least two to one to fight a pitched battle with picked Regular troops from overseas on equal terms. Comparative lack of discipline and cohesion showing up strongly where large forces were involved—these are my reasons for allowing so large a margin of superiority to the invading forces.

196. Every one will form his own opinion upon my estimate. At best it is but a paper estimate and open to a hundred qualifications and suppositions. Still it is an attempt to convey an opinion, and the only difference between my opinion and the opinion of those who may hereafter traverse it is that I am paid to give my views, and also that not many Europeans have been privileged to inspect as I have the native troops of India, the United States' Regulars, the Japanese Army, the French, German, and Russian detachments in Asia, and the reformed Chinese troops.

197. Finally, no one can have studied this Report without understanding that each year, between now and 1919-20, the units of the Australian Army should improve in efficiency at the rate of something certainly not less than 10 per cent. per annum.

IAN HAMILTON, *General*,
Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces.

APPENDICES

APPENDIX A

STATEMENT SHOWING AMOUNTS EXPENDED ON DEFENCE FOR EACH OF THE LAST TEN YEARS

Year.	Naval.			Military.			Total Defence Expenditure.
	Cost of Maintenance.	Other Expenditure.[1]	Total.	Cost of Maintenance.	Other Expenditure.[2]	Total.	
	£	£	£	£	£	£	£
1904-5	47,991	151,551	199,542	510,512	223,007	733,519	933,061
1905-6	46,180	205,688	251,868	520,370	197,765	718,135	970,003
1906-7	51,725	204,151	255,876	558,734	220,505	779,239	1,035,115
1907-8	56,449	454,897	511,346	602,094	221,065	823,159	1,334,505
1908-9	60,653	207,452	268,105	654,014	128,361	782,375	1,050,480
1909-10	64,468	265,643	330,111	897,264	308,417	1,205,681	1,535,792
1910-11	103,753	1,371,250	1,475,003	1,045,226	488,476	1,533,702	3,008,705
1911-12	264,295	1,385,095	1,649,390	1,446,872	983,777	2,430,649	4,080,039
1912-13	633,305	1,027,273	1,660,578	1,608,115	1,062,805	2,670,920	4,331,498
1913-14 (Estimated)	902,453	1,528,965	2,431,418	1,910,262	1,405,173	3,315,435	5,746,853[3]

[1] Includes expenditure on Naval Works, Buildings, Sites, Rents, and Repairs; Arms, Equipment, etc., Construction of Fleet; Payment under Naval Agreement Act.

[2] Includes expenditure on Buildings, Sites, etc., Rent, Repairs, etc., Rifle Ranges, Military Stores; Interest on transferred properties; Miscellaneous.

[3] Estimated that a saving of £500,000 will be effected on this sum.

APPENDIX B

MILITARY FORCES OF THE COMMONWEALTH

DUTIES ASSIGNED TO EACH MEMBER OF THE MILITARY BOARD

The Chief of the General Staff is charged with all preparation for War, as follows :—	The Adjutant-General is charged with the enrolment, organisation, and mobilisation of the troops, as follows :—	The Quartermaster-General is charged with the equipment and maintenance of the troops, as follows :—	The Chief of Ordnance is charged with the questions relating to armaments, fixed defences, and engineer services, as follows :—	The Finance Member will be charged with Military Finance, as follows :—
Organisation for War, training and instruction other than that allotted to the Adjutant-General, education and examination for first appointment and promotion of officers, field operations and promulgation of operation orders, schemes for manœuvres, including concentration, allocation of funds for manœuvres and training, plans of concentration for War, preparation and maintenance of Defence schemes, military libraries, intelligence, drill books and manuals dealing with training and military instruction and war organisation, censorship.	Registration, exemptions, medical inspection, organisation, peace establishments, recruiting and recruit training, musketry, discipline, medical service and sanitation, distribution of units, editing and issuing orders other than operation orders and military books of regulations, editing and issuing mobilisation orders, administration of and questions relating to Administrative and Instructional Staff, military clerks, *personnel*, education and examination of soldiers, appointments, promotion, retirement, posting, exchange and transfer of officers, mobilisation of *personnel*, military prisons and police and detention barracks, military and martial law, duties in aid of the civil power, casualties, discharges, desertion, and fraudulent enlistment, medals, ceremonial, rifle clubs and reserves, cadets, chaplains, postal services.	Regulations for universal training, dress, transport and remounts, veterinary services, movements by land and sea, conveyance of stores, railways, appropriation, occupation and equipment of barracks, supply of food, forage, clothing, arms and ammunition, stores and equipment, mobilisation arrangements connected with the above services, administration of corps dealing with the above services.	Arrangements for the construction and maintenance of fortifications, barracks, store buildings, and ranges, patterns, provision, inspection, and maintenance of armaments and vehicles, patents and inventions, administration of the staff and permanent force connected with the above, technical instruction of artillery and engineers, including schools, promulgation of changes in war material.	Consideration and compilation of Parliamentary Estimates, review of proposals for new expenditure, or the redistribution of the sums allotted to the different sub-heads of Defence votes, financial advice, Treasury requirements, claims, compensation—death or injury.

APPENDIX C

Military District.	Number of Brigade Areas.	Number of Battalion Areas.	Number of Training Areas.
1st	3	12	31
2nd	8	32	72
3rd	7	29	65
4th	2	9	23
5th	1	6	15
6th	1	4	11
Total	22	92 [1]	217

[1] Proposed to form only twenty-eight battalions before 1920.

APPENDIX D

Rates of Pay for Citizen Forces

Rank.	Artillery and Engineers—25 days per annum.						Other Arms—16 days per annum.					
	Rate per whole day.			Amount per annum.			Rate per whole day.			Amount per annum.		
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Colonel or Brigadier	2	5	0	56	5	0	2	5	0	36	0	0
Lieutenant-Colonel	1	17	6	46	17	6	1	17	6	30	0	0
Major	1	10	0	37	10	0	1	10	0	24	0	0
Captain	1	2	6	28	2	6	1	2	6	18	0	0
Lieutenant, 2nd Lieutenant	0	15	0	18	15	0	0	15	0	12	0	0
Regimental Sergeant-Major	0	12	0	15	0	0	0	12	0	9	12	0
Company Sergeant-Major	0	11	0	13	15	0	0	11	0	8	16	0
Sergeant	0	10	0	12	10	0	0	10	0	8	0	0
Corporal	0	9	0	11	5	0	0	9	0	7	4	0
Private	0	4	0	5	0	0	0	4	0	3	4	0
Recruits	0	3	0	3	15	0	0	3	0	2	8	0

Half day parades shall be paid for at one-half and night drills at one-quarter of the above rates.

Horse Allowance

Officers and Soldiers of Light Horse Units shall be granted Horse Allowance at the rate of 5s. per diem for each mounted parade attended provided that the total amount paid to an Officer or Soldier in any one year shall not exceed £4.

Payment of Horse Allowance to be made at times of payment of Militia Pay, *i.e.* :—

(*a*) In Camp of Continuous Training, or on return from Camp, at discretion of Commandant.

(*b*) In the month of June of each financial year.

APPENDIX E

Table showing the Units yet to be formed to complete Divisions, Light Horse Brigades, and other Field Formations by 1919-1920, but excluding Administration Units for Lines of Communication :—

Units, etc., required to complete.	Military District.						
	1st.	2nd.	3rd.	4th.	5th.	6th.	Total.
Divisional Headquarters	..	..	..	..	..	..	6
Light Horse—							
Light Horse Brigade Headquarters	..	1	1	..	..	..	2
Light Horse Regiments	..	3	3	..	..	..	6
Divisional Squadrons	..	1	1	2	..	..	4
Field Artillery—							
Divisional Artillery Headquarters	..	..	..	..	..	..	6
Field Artillery Brigade Headquarters	1	2	3	1	1	1	9
Field Batteries							
18-pr.[1]	3	8	10	2	1	1	25
Howitzer	1	1	2	1	..	..	5
Ammunition Columns—							
Light Horse Brigade	1	3	3	1	..	..	8
Field Artillery Brigade	2	4	5	1	1	1	14
Field Artillery (Howitzer) Battery	1	2	2	1	..	..	6
Divisional	..	..	..	..	..	..	6
Engineers—							
Divisional Engineers Headquarters	..	..	..	..	..	..	6
Field Companies	Two Half Coys.	2	2	½	½	½	6½
Signal Troops	..	1	1	..	..	..	2

[1] Includes three permanent batteries.

APPENDIX E—*continued.*

Units, etc., required to complete.	Military District.						
	1st.	2nd.	3rd.	4th.	5th.	6th.	Total.
Divisional Signal Companies	..	1	1	..	..	..	2
Wireless Companies	..	1	1	..	..	..	2
Infantry—							
Infantry Brigade Headquarters	2	4	3	1	..	..	10
Battalions	5	12	11	4	1	..	33
Army Service Corps—							
Companies (Light Horse Brigades)	..	1	1	..	..	..	2
Headquarter Companies	1	2	2	1	..	..	6
Companies	1	4	3	..	..	..	8
Army Medical Corps—							
Light Horse Field Ambulances	..	1	1	..	..	..	2
Field Ambulances	1	4	3	1	..	..	9

APPENDIX F

Physical Training of Boys and Girls

All boys of the ages of twelve and thirteen years, who are medically fit, are liable to undergo Junior Cadet Training, which embraces Physical Training (to be carried out on each school day for not less than fifteen minutes), Elementary Marching Drill, and the attainment of a certain standard of efficiency in not less than one of the following subjects :—

(*a*) Miniature Rifle Shooting ;
(*b*) Swimming ;
(*c*) Running in organised games ;
(*d*) First Aid.

The training of Junior Cadets is carried out by the School Teachers, but boys not in attendance at schools are trained by the Military Staff. The latter are very few, as most of the States now provide for compulsory attendance at school up to the age of fourteen. The training is inspected annually, and an allowance of 2s. 6d. per effective Junior Cadet is made to Head Teachers of Schools to defray cost of providing equipment, etc.

Fifteen instructors have been appointed by the Defence Department for the instruction of teachers. These instructors conduct courses

of instruction for teachers, and issue certificates as 'Instructors of Junior Cadet Training' to those who qualify. In addition, they visit the schools periodically for instructional purposes. The expenses of teachers attending schools of instruction are defrayed by the Defence Department.

Although the Defence Department is only responsible for the instruction of those teachers who train Junior Cadets, the Education Departments of the several States, being desirous of extending the scheme of Physical Training to their school girls, unanimously asked for a course of instruction to be arranged for their women teachers. A special course of instruction was held accordingly during three weeks in 1913, at which twenty-two women teachers from the several States attended. In addition to Physical Training, attention was given to Anatomy and First Aid, and special medical lecturers were employed in connection with these subjects. Certificates of competency were awarded to twenty of the teachers in attendance. Several of these teachers have since been employed by the State Departments as 'Specialists' solely for the instruction of women teachers and school girls in Physical Training.

APPENDIX G

Approved Allotment of Members of Rifle Clubs on Mobilisation, 1913-1914

Military District. (1)	Number of Rifle Clubs. (2)	Total Strength of Rifle Clubs. (3)	Sixty per cent. of strength of Clubs estimated fit for active service. (4)	Total Number allotted to Light Horse. (5)	Total number allotted to Infantry. (6)	Total allotted to A.S.C. and A.M.C. (7)	Allotted to Cable Guards. (8)	Total allotment to Units and Cable Guards. (9)	Percentage of Column 4 allotted to Units. (10)	Balance of Column 4 available for future allotments to Units. (11)
1st .	216	9,098	5,459	610	3,105	142	67	3,924	71·8	1535
2nd .	303	14,099	8,460	760	3,748	Nil	Nil	4,508	53·2	3952
3rd .	325	15,321	9,193	922	5,280	1274	Nil	7,476	81·3	1717
4th .	119	4,906	2,944	381	1,191	Nil	Nil	1,572	53·4	1372
5th .	124	2,371	1,422	166	997	Nil	25	1,188	83·5	234
6th .	46	1,770	1,062	128	771	79	25	1,003	94·4	59
Total	1133	47,565	28,540	2967	15,092	1495	117	19,671	68·9	8869

APPENDIX H

ADMINISTRATIVE AND INSTRUCTIONAL STAFF FOR MILITIA UNITS AND TERRITORIAL AREAS

Military Unit or Area.	Proposed by Lord Kitchener.		Present Establishment.		Ultimate strength on present lines.		Ultimate strength under proposals in Section IV.	
	Officers.	Other ranks.	Officers.	Other ranks.	Officers.	Other ranks.	Officers.	Other ranks.
Light Horse Brigades	..	Lord Kitchener's proposals gave a total of 400, but did not show allocation of duties.	6	6	8	8	8	8
Infantry Brigades and Brigade Areas . .	22		24	35	24	44	24	24
Light Horse Regiments	..		13	69	28	90	28	90 (*a*)
Field Artillery . .	..		5	24	14	50	14	50 (*b*)
Garrison Artillery .	..		..	11	..	11.	..	11
Engineers . . .	..		..	19	..	21	..	21 (*c*)
Infantry Battalions .	..		20	178	88	352	88	88
Army Service Corps	..		..	12	..	22	..	22
Army Medical Corps	..		..	15	..	22	..	22
Battalion Areas . .	..		..	..	..	..	88 (*d*)	..
Training Areas . .	215		218 (Temp.)	266	127 (Permt.)	300	..	500 (*e*)
Spare, for Special Courses attached to other Armies or Sick	12		12 (*f*)	—	12	12	12	12
Total . .	249	400	80 (Permt.) 218 (Temp.) Total, 298	635	301 (Permt.)	932	262	848
Estimated Expenditure at Current Rates.	No estimate framed by Lord Kitchener. Expenditure at current rates would amount to £160,000.		£188,000		£283,000		£253,400*	

Estimated—Officer's average £320. N.C.O.'s average £200.

* Includes an allowance of £50 per annum for clerical assistance in each Area Office.—(*a*) 26 regiments at 3 each and 12 divisional squadrons at 1 each; (*b*) 14 Field Artillery brigades at 3 each and 8 batteries at 1 each; (*c*) 14 field companies at 1 each and 7 for 8 signal troops and 7 divisional signal companies; (*d*) For a long time to come these will be temporary appointments; (*e*) Averages 8 for country battalion areas and 4 for city battalion areas; (*f*) Includes 3 attached to other armies.

Allocation to Areas

	Country.	City.
1st District	7	5
2nd „	8	24
3rd „	7	22
4th „	6	3
5th „	3	3
6th „	2	2
	$33 \times 8 = 264$.	$59 \times 4 = 236$. Total, 500.

REPORT BY THE INSPECTOR-GENERAL OF THE OVERSEA FORCES ON THE MILITARY FORCES OF NEW ZEALAND

Presented to both Houses of the General Assembly by command of His Excellency

The INSPECTOR-GENERAL OF THE OVERSEAS FORCES to the Honourable the MINISTER OF DEFENCE, NEW ZEALAND.

Wellington, New Zealand, 4th June 1914.

SIR,—I have the honour to submit herewith my Report on the Military Forces of New Zealand; and, although it is not customary in official correspondence to ask for indulgence, the present exceptional circumstances warrant me, I think, in doing so. The whole of the report has been, of necessity, written up and cast into its present form during the past six days. As you are aware, I personally had not a spare moment during my actual inspections, and I would give a great deal to be able to put in another week's work in restating my views in terms which might be considered more conventional. Unfortunately, once I start in the New Zealand Company's liner *Ruahine* there is no possibility of my posting a letter until I reach London. Such a delay would, I understand, be inconvenient, and therefore I submit my attempt with all the imperfections of haste only too legibly imprinted upon it.

In the course of my tour I have inspected every unit of the Territorial Force, and I have seen members of every company of Cadets in the Dominion. According to parade-states the Territorials inspected by me, together with the Permanent troops, numbered 18,807, and I have seen 17,868 Cadets on parade, a total of 36,675, or 70 per cent. of the Defence Forces. I have also visited the works and fortifications at the principal harbours, and at three of the four defended ports I have been present during practice with the heavy guns.

I regret that time has not admitted of my advising you on the subjects of the coast defences and coast-defence schemes. This confidential report will be written, *D.V.*, during the voyage, and will be posted to you from London.

To those people by whose hospitality I and my staff have benefited, and to many others who have helped to make my visit one of the most enjoyable episodes of my life, I owe my most grateful thanks. I carry away with me wonderful memories of this beautiful country and of the overflowing kindness of its inhabitants.

My thanks are also due to the General Officer Commanding the Forces, to the Headquarters Staff, and to the District Commanders, who have done so much to make my path smooth during my progress through the Islands.

Lastly, I have to thank you, Sir, and the Government you represent for much personal kindness received and for the admirable arrangements under which my inspection has been carried out. That what I have been able to do in consequence during the past five weeks, and that the recommendations I have ventured to put forward in my report, may prove of some lasting value to the military forces of New Zealand is the earnest hope of Your obedient Servant,

IAN HAMILTON, *General,*
Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces.

I.—MILITARY INSTITUTIONS OF NEW ZEALAND

HEADQUARTERS ORGANISATION

1. The Minister of Defence is responsible to Parliament both for the Navy and the Army of New Zealand.

The General Officer Commanding the New Zealand Forces is the responsible adviser of the Minister, and, under him, controls the Military Forces. He is assisted by the following heads of departments :—

The Chief of the General Staff ;
The Adjutant-General to the Forces ;
The Quartermaster-General to the Forces ;
The Director of Ordnance ;
The Director of Accounts.

The distribution of duties amongst the Staff at Headquarters is shown in Appendix I.

TERRITORIAL ORGANISATION

2. The Dominion of New Zealand is divided into four military districts, each under a Permanent District Commander assisted by a Staff, as shown in Appendix II.

There are two districts in each Island, their boundaries corresponding generally with those of the four land districts—viz.,

Auckland,
Wellington,
Canterbury, and
Otago.

Each district is divided into four or five 'area groups' or 'areas,' each commanded by a Permanent officer.[1] An area as a rule furnishes a complete Infantry regiment (of one battalion), as well as other units, or portions of units, and Cadets.

An area is divided into two or, as a rule, more sub-areas, each in charge of a Permanent non-commissioned officer.

Unit Organisation

3. The organisation and establishments of units are, speaking generally, the same in peace as in war. They are composed of Territorial officers and men. There are no units composed wholly of Permanent men. A slight mixture of the Permanent element is permitted in Territorial units as follows:—

(*a*) Each battalion of Infantry and regiment of Mounted Rifles has a Permanent adjutant, sergeant-major, and quartermaster-sergeant.

(*b*) Each Field Artillery brigade has an adjutant, a battery sergeant-major, a battery quartermaster-sergeant, a farrier-sergeant, and a saddler-quartermaster-sergeant. In addition, each battery has a Permanent cadre of two non-commissioned officers and eight men (gunners and drivers) and twelve horses. This *personnel* belongs to the Royal New Zealand Artillery.

(*c*) Each fort has a small cadre of Permanent Garrison Artillery. These cadres supply the assistant instructors, specialists, district gunners, etc., necessary when the forts are manned for service practice or instruction. These also belong to the Royal New Zealand Artillery.

Liability to serve in Time of War

4. Under Section 27 (1), Defence Act, 1909, all male inhabitants of

[1] Organisation has now reached a stage when a group of areas formed under the Kitchener scheme has become in itself an administrative area. I recommend, therefore, the 'area group' being termed the 'area' in future, any subdivisions of it being 'sub-areas.' I have used these expressions throughout my report.

New Zealand between the ages of seventeen and fifty-five, not exempted, are liable to serve in the Militia. Under Section 28 (1), Defence Act, 1909, the whole or any part of the Militia may be called out in time of war by Proclamation, and, when so called out, becomes a part of the Defence Forces. In so far as all males between the ages of seventeen and fifty-five can be called upon to serve in the Militia, all military bodies in New Zealand whose members are between the above-mentioned ages (*e.g.* Territorial Force, Reserve, General Training Section, and Rifle Clubs) would be included in the term 'Militia.'

Separate provision exists under Section 71 (1) of the Defence Amendment Act, 1912, for calling out the Territorial Force or any part thereof for active service without having recourse to Section 28 (1) of the Defence Act, 1909, above referred to.

Liability for Service Abroad

5. Under Section 26 (1), Defence Act, 1901, members of the Territorial Force may volunteer for special service outside New Zealand.

Conditions of Service

6. Liability for service is as follows :—

Senior Cadets—fourteen (or date of leaving school) to seventeen inclusive : four years in all.

Territorial Force—eighteen to twenty-four inclusive : seven years in all.

Territorial Force Reserve—twenty-five to twenty-nine inclusive : five years in all.

In posting men to units the wishes of individuals are considered as far as possible.

Rates of pay are shown in Appendix III. All ranks in the Territorial Force draw pay for nine days only in each year.

Men passed fit for service but not required for the Territorial Force are posted to a General Training Section. They are liable to be transferred to the Territorial Force up to thirty years of age.

SCHEME OF TRAINING

7. Training under the Act is prescribed as follows :—

Designation.	Age.	Service.	Prescribed Training each Year.
Senior Cadets	From 14 to 18	4 years	(*a*) Fifty drills of one hour's duration, or thirty-four drills of one and a half hours' duration. (*b*) Six half-day parades of three hours' duration. (*c*) Course of musketry.
Territorial Force	From 18 to 25	7 years	(*a*) Thirty drills of one and a half hours' duration, twenty of which are to be outdoor parades. (*b*) Twelve half-day parades of not less than three hours' duration, or six whole-day parades of not less than six hours' duration. (*c*) Seven days training in camp (exclusive of days of arrival and departure). (*d*) Prescribed course of musketry (*a*) and (*b*).
General Training Section	From 18 to 25	7 years	(*a*) Eighteen drills of one and a half hours' duration. (*b*) Prescribed course of musketry.
Reserve (including men of General Training Section after 25)	From 25 to 30	5 years	Two half-day parades or their equivalent.

The period of the annual camp for rural units is eleven days (exclusive of the days of arrival and departure) in lieu of the equivalent of the four extra days—*i.e.* twenty drills.

Physical training forms an important item in the syllabus of training, especially in the case of Senior Cadets. Boys under the age of fourteen receive physical training at school under arrangements made by the Education Department.

APPENDIX

War Organisation

8. The military forces of New Zealand are organised for war into a field army and its reserves, coast defence troops, and lines-of-communication troops. The field army is organised into two Mounted Rifle brigades (one in each Island) and two divisions (one in each Island).

The composition and detail of the above are given in Appendix IV. Certain Headquarters units and divisional ammunition columns will have to be formed on mobilisation. Otherwise, all units required for the war organisation are already raised.

Numbers Required

9. In round numbers the requirements of the War organisation are :—

	Officers.	Other Ranks
Field Army	1144	29,551
Coast Defence troops	147	4,168
Lines of communication, district staffs, etc. (about)	200	3,000
	1491	36,719

Numbers Available

10. In 1915 the Territorial Force will have reached 30,000, the Peace establishment fixed by Parliament. After 1915 the Reserve will commence to fill.

When the existing scheme is in full working order it is estimated that the total numbers available will be as follows:—

Territorial Force (including about 4000 recruits) .	30,000
Territorial Force Reserve	20,000
General Training Section under twenty-five . .	21,000
General Training Section Reserve	14,000
	85,000
Railway battalions and Post and Telegraph Corps .	4,000
	89,000

In the establishment provision has been made in addition for 112 officers, 211 instructors (warrant and non-commissioned officers), 303 non-commissioned officers and men of the Royal New Zealand Artillery (a total of 626), and 81 civilians, to be maintained on a permanent footing as part of the Defence Forces. (See Appendix V.)

Horses

11. Approximately 8369 riding-horses, 9239 draught, and 1029 pack animals will be required on mobilisation. There are some 400,000 horses in New Zealand, of which about 40,000 are fit for riding purposes and 10,000 for draught and gun work. A list of suitable vehicles with horses is kept in each district. They may be taken under requisition.

Mechanical Transport

12. Motor-cars and motor-lorries exist in the Dominion as follows: 4066 motor-cars of various sorts, 136 motor-lorries, and 397 steam traction-engines.

A Motor Reserve Corps is organised as a part of the Territorial Force. It numbers 74, each officer providing a car when required.

Armament

13. The Field Artillery is completely equipped with modern 18-pr. field guns and 4·5 in. howitzers. The latest type of gun has been ordered for the mountain battery.

The Infantry is armed with the Lee-Enfield rifle. Sufficient rifles and carbines exist to arm the Territorial Forces and its reserves. With few exceptions the Cadets are armed with the same rifle as the Citizen Forces.

Mounted Rifle regiments and Infantry battalions are equipped with machine guns and pack transport for the same.

Ammunition

14. The reserve of gun ammunition is complete for coast-defence guns in accordance with the recommendations of the Oversea Defence Committee. For field guns the reserve will shortly be complete.

There is a sufficient war reserve of small-arm ammunition for the field army. Small-arm ammunition is manufactured by the Colonial Ammunition Company, which has its works near Auckland. The factory is capable of doubling its present output in an emergency.

Clothing and Equipment

15. The Territorial Force is clothed throughout in khaki serge of service pattern, manufactured in the Dominion. Each Territorial soldier receives, on joining, one complete suit, a greatcoat, a hat, and a cap; no boots are issued. A reserve of clothing to meet the yearly quota of recruits is kept in store. The clothing contractors are pre-

pared to increase their output tenfold in emergency. The Territorial Infantry are equipped with the web field service equipment; Mounted units use the bandolier leather equipment. Each individual in the Mounted Rifles supplies his own saddlery; there is no uniformity in pattern.

The Cadets' uniform consists of blouse and shorts of khaki serge with khaki hat and puttee stockings. They have a waist-belt and pouch.

INSTRUCTION

16. The number of Permanent officers and non-commissioned officers who are available for instructional duties is shown generally in Appendix V.

A Headquarters Staff exercise is held annually for the benefit of senior officers, and a District Staff ride is held in each district annually. Musketry instruction is imparted by four expert instructors in musketry, one in each district.

Officers' clubs are instituted in all the principal and many of the minor training centres. These exist mainly for instructional purposes. Lectures are given and war games held.

MISCELLANEOUS MILITARY INSTITUTIONS

17. (*a*) Rifle Clubs, being part of the New Zealand Military Forces, are governed by the Military Regulations. They are 204 in number.

Membership of a club is limited to fifteen as a minimum and one hundred as a maximum, consisting of (i.) Ordinary members, (ii.) honorary members, (iii.) General Training Section attached.

Ordinary members must not be more than fifty-five years of age, and are liable to serve as a secondary reserve in the Territorial Force. They must carry out the musketry course laid down. The General Training Section can do the training prescribed (para. 7) with the nearest Rifle Club.

Rifles and spare parts are obtained from the Defence Department on very favourable terms.

Each active member of a club is entitled to 150 rounds of ammunition, and 200 rounds more are obtainable at reduced rates.

Members are carried free of cost on Government railways to and from rifle practice, and to approved rifle meetings up to 100 miles distance.

The cost of existing Rifle Clubs is approximately £20,000 per annum.

(*b*) On the 31st March 1914 there were 25,659 Senior Cadets, organised into 348 companies under Senior Cadet officers. The

organisation, administration, and training of all Senior Cadet companies is supervised by the Area Commander in whose area the company is situated.

Excluding any expenses connected with their instruction, the cost of the Senior Cadets is approximately £21,000 per annum.

(*c*) A National Reserve is in course of formation. Its membership is voluntary, and includes all who are no longer liable for service in time of peace and who have served in a naval, military, quasi-military, or police capacity, or who belong to any organisation—*e.g.* the St. John Ambulance Association—which could render useful service in time of war. No uniform is worn.

(*d*) In time of war the Public Health Department undertakes to receive the sick and wounded in the general hospitals. An Army Nursing Service is in process of formation, the Matron-in-Chief being the Assistant Inspector-General of the Public Health Department. It will consist of qualified nurses willing to undertake the nursing of the sick in time of war in hospitals and under control of the Medical Officers of the New Zealand Medical Corps.

(*e*) The Dominion Rifle Association exists for the encouragement of rifle shooting in the Dominion. It receives an annual grant from the Government.

Numbers Trained

18. The following figures show the strength of the military forces during the past ten years. Prior to 1911 there was no compulsory training.

Year.	Strength of Permanent Forces (including N.Z. Staff Corps, R.N.Z.A., and Permanent Staff).	Strength of Volunteer or Territorial Force.
1905	395	13,492
1906	386	13,306
1907	379	12,704
1908	361	12,474
1909	325	14,058
1910	314	14,249
1911	427	Transition period (no record).
1912	500	22,614
1913	557	23,804
1914	578	25,902

NOTE.—The establishment is shown in paragraph 10 and Appendix V. as 626: the actual strength appears, therefore, to be 48 less than establishment. The apparent shortage is made up as follows:—

Imperial officers on temporary loan (not included in above table)	18
Imperial non-commissioned officers on temporary loan (not included in above table)	18
Under establishment: Officers	5
,, Permanent Staff	5
,, R.N.Z.A.	2
Total	48

Cadets numbering 26 (not included in the above table) are undergoing training at Duntroon, and eight of these will be available in 1916 for service in the Dominion.

19. The amount expended by the New Zealand Government on naval and military defence for each of the last ten financial years is as follows:—

Year.	Naval.			Total Naval Expenditure.	Military.			Total Defence Expenditure.
	Contribution to the Admiralty	Battle-cruiser. Contribution paid out of Loan.	Battle-cruiser. Interest and Sinking Fund paid out of Consolidated Fund.		Paid out of Consolidated Fund.	Paid out of Public Works Fund.	Total Military Expenditure.	
	£	£	£	£	£	£	£	£
1904-5	40,000	...	...	40,000	188,254	49,103	237,357	277,357
1905-6	40,000	...	...	40,000	159,459	36,869	196,328	236,228
1906-7	40,000	...	...	40,000	152,765	16,415	169,180	209,180
1907-8	40,000	...	...	40,000	176,426	21,153	197,579	237,579
1908-9	40,000	...	...	40,000	195,685	18,063	213,748	253,748
1909-10	100,000	...	...	100,000	190,346	10,349	200,695	300,695
1910-11	100,000	489,289	8,904	598,193	205,269	8,936	214,205	812,398
1911-12	100,000	605,711	91,687	797,398	401,870	11,581	413,451	1,210,849
1912-13	100,000	525,000	103,102	728,102	505,267	24,129	529,396	1,257,498
1913-14	50,000*	69,035	126,995	246,030	488,569	30,725	519,294	765,324

* The balance of the £100,000 due for the year 1913-14 was, at the request of the Admiralty, not paid until after the 31st March 1914.

N.B.—The total cost, up to the early part of June 1914, of the battle-cruiser was £1,698,035; the annual payments of interest and sinking fund will cease in approximately sixteen years' time.

II.—MAIN FEATURES OF THE EXISTING SCHEME

The Influence of Peace

20. All military institutions should be built so as to be as peace-proof as possible: if they are to stand the strain of war it is essential that they should offer no foothold to the steady sapping and mining of politics. Under modern conditions the aspirant to public service can only get there by being in the majority, and that majority are attracted by things which catch the eye, but are repelled by any technicality. A mass of inadequately trained men may impress an electorate very favourably; it is difficult, nay, almost hopeless, to enthuse them by the purchase of rifle ranges. Forts reassure the city during perilous times, but once the danger has passed it is discovered that big guns break window-panes. Then in due course the practice is discontinued, and the guns, though they may appear unchanged, have lost the best part of their value—namely, the skill and self-confidence of the men who stand behind them. Let peace only endure and these same sort of sentiments extend at last to the *personnel*. A cautious administrator appeals to the representatives of the people more than a leader of character and boldness. So at last we reach the final stage when great commands are given to 'good peace Generals.' Military institutions have then become a name, an illusion. Actually they will have ceased to exist.

Study of War-conditions Essential

21. Such are the lessons of experience, and they teach us that the foundations of the military institutions of a country should be so well and truly laid upon the rock of reality that the upper stories of the building shall offer the maximum resistance to the disintegrating forces, which are certain, as time goes on, to try persistently to undermine them. The moment war-conditions are lost sight of, the mind of the nation will begin to suffer from dangerous illusions. Especially is this the case where the form taken by defence is that of a national Militia. Here there is no room for peace commanders, peace soldiers, or peace systems. The time devoted to training is so limited and students of war are so few that all classes, civilians are well as militiamen, are bound to quit the rails of efficiency the moment the system practised in peace ceases to be a war system pure and simple.

Responsibility of the Soldier

22. Hence it comes that a weighty burden of responsibility must ever rest upon the shoulders of the military chief or chiefs charged with

the direction of the affairs of a citizen army. The position demands some of the intuitions of statesmanship, as well as a competent grasp of the true meanings of war. There must be quickness to comprehend the limitations imposed by political and social factors; temper and self-restraint to enable parleys to be conducted with the faddist and the miser. For lack of such quickness and such temper brave soldiers pitchforked suddenly into high places in the counsels of a democracy may in less than no time undo all the hard work of their predecessors. Theoretically the blunt soldier asks for perfection and accepts nothing less. Actually he gets just as much as he can, by his own pertinacity and enthusiasm, coax from the pockets of his employers.

Nature of Test Applied

23. Passing from principles to particulars, I conceive it to be my primary duty to the Government of New Zealand to report on the success or otherwise attained by the military authorities of the Dominion in producing in peace a machine which has in all respects its exact analogue in war. Therefore I shall proceed to apply the war test to everything connected with the Citizen Forces—their organisation, their administration, the Territorial arrangements, the daily routine of office-work, as well as the supremely important question of training and instruction. My comparatively brief sojourn in New Zealand has at least had this advantage—it has involved the simultaneous embodiment of every military unit in the country, and has enabled me to inspect large bodies of Cadets drawn together from wide areas at the very identical time when the whole of the Citizen Forces were actually under arms in camp. The possibility of making the same permanent instructional Staff march across the inspectional stage with the Cadets one day and with the troops the next was absolutely precluded. Accordingly the military machine in New Zealand has been subjected to a severer trial than that of any portion of the Empire ever inspected by me. The elements themselves seem to have leagued themselves with me in adding some of the genuine discomforts of war to my mimic campaigns. The town-bred lads especially must have often thought wistfully of their happy little homes when the tempest howled around their frail shelters of canvas; when the icy rain penetrated everything and every one; when the mud waxed deeper and ever more adhesive. Actual mobilisation would, in fact, have made no greater demands either on the energies of the military authorities or on the pluck and good temper of the rank and file.

Result of the Test

24. I may as well admit straight away that the machine has stood the racket. One or two little jars there have been—of so much every

one who reads the papers is aware. The land forces of New Zealand are not perfect, or anywhere near perfect. In some respects development may be backward. But at least I am able to report, broadly, that the progress made during the past three years, in giving shape to a real national Army in New Zealand, has been singularly rapid. Further, in my opinion, the general lines on which the organisation and training of the Citizen Force and of the Cadets have been laid down are sound. Here and there I shall, later on, propose readjustments, but the changes suggested are such as can readily be effected without radically altering any existing institutions. Unquestionably there is a good prospect of a practical war machine, and one admirably suited to the needs of home defence, being ultimately produced. That this is so is due every whit as much to the patriotism of the people as to the wisdom of the military authorities.

THE CADETS

25. Of the Cadet system it is hard to speak in terms which may not appear exaggerated. For the moment I am concerned only with the moral and physical effect of Cadet training on the boyhood of the nation. Its military aspect, as a substitute for recruit training, I deal with again later in my report.

I have spared no pains to ascertain the views of those best entitled to form a judgment on this most vital subject. I have discussed it at length with politicians of both parties in the State; with employers of labour; with schoolmasters; with the clergy of every denomination; and last, but not least, with dozens of Cadets themselves, and, whenever and wherever I could catch them, with their mothers. I have not heard one single adverse opinion from the mouth of a live New Zealander, though, from the numbers of disapproving letters I have received, there must be a minority which makes up for its want of dimension by a radium-like activity. No; amongst all the people I have met there seemed to be a consensus of opinion that the system is wholly beneficial not to the boys alone, but also in its wider national aspect. If the working men and women of Scotland could have participated in my Cadet inspection through Otago Province (verily a smaller Scotland); if the fathers and mothers of the poorer children of London, Birmingham, Manchester, and Liverpool could only have been present at my Cadet parades in Canterbury Province and in the North Island—could they have done this and have shared with me the joy of seeing so many keen happy faces, so many bodies in the pink of physical condition—I know they would not permit their rulers to deny to their own sons one day longer the same privileges that the boys of Australia, New Zealand, and South Africa are now enjoying.

Economic Aspect of the Scheme

26. A striking feature of the military system in New Zealand lies in its economical working. This I attribute in a large measure to a strict observance of the Militia principle throughout the constitution of the Force. Not a single professional officer or non-commissioned officer appears to be employed whose services, with due regard to efficiency, could possibly be dispensed with. The Permanent nuclei, which form part of the Garrison and Field Artillery units, are cheap and excellent substitutes for the Permanent units employed elsewhere as a means of imparting artillery instruction. New Zealand owes much to those who had both the prescience to inaugurate an experiment of this nature, and the boldness to carry it through to a logical conclusion.

Detachment of Instructors from Units

27. The same prescience is observable in the domain of military instruction. The detachment of the Permanent instructor from the Mounted Rifles and Infantry unit, and his attachment to the Territorial area, does not come to me altogether as a novelty. This feature formed part of Lord Kitchener's original proposal. The New Zealand Army, however, is remarkable for the thoroughness with which this separation of the instructor from the unit has been effected, and any one who remembers the old Volunteer system and the limpet-like devotion with which the unit then hung on to the skirts of its Permanent Staff must realise that this achievement has not been attained without considerable firmness on the part of the higher authorities.

Result of such Detachment

28. As a consequence, the bulk of the Permanent instructors are available for the training of the Cadets, as well as of the Citizen Force, and I have good reason to suppose that the interests of the Cadet in this connection are adequately safeguarded. Had not some such arrangement obtained, the large and very creditable Cadet parades I witnessed during the first fortnight of my visit would have been impossible. These parades were organised by Area Commanders and Permanent instructors, and, as I have already stated, they took place at a time when the whole Citizen Force was embodied. In any other Citizen Force I have inspected the bulk of the instructors would at such a moment have been out with the Territorial Force. The economy of this system, from a purely financial standpoint, is self-evident. With its effect on the units of the fighting arms I deal later on in my report.

Departmental Corps

29. I must conclude my preliminary review of the military institutions of New Zealand by a special reference to the Railway battalions and the Post and Telegraph Corps. These bodies form a brilliant object-lesson in the keenness of the nation to help in solving the problem of defence. With comparatively little assistance from the military authorities, save in the matter of uniform, arms, and equipments, two great State Departments have set to work in real practical fashion to organise themselves for war. As a result, with a minimum of cost to the State, two bodies of highly skilled experts have been added to the establishment—assets of the utmost military value. A splendid example indeed. May every portion of the Empire recognise its full significance.

[Sections III.–V. are omitted here.]

VI.—THE ARMY TO-DAY

Character of Inspection

92. The Department of Defence so arranged matters that I was able to see every single unit of the New Zealand Forces, whether of the Territorial Force or of the Cadets, during the course of my inspection. Generally the authorities in the various districts were able to show me practical field-work, based on reasonable and simplest suppositions. But company officers not infrequently overlooked the absolute necessity, under modern conditions, of taking the rank and file into their confidence by explaining to them exactly the lie of the land—the why and the wherefore —whom they were attacking or what they were defending.

Orders were as a rule clearly and concisely drafted. There was too much tendency to tie the Mounted Rifles and Artillery to a preconceived situation which a real enemy would, in all human probability, have profoundly modified. Mounted troops especially should be given as free a hand as possible after being told the main object to be achieved.

I noticed that two-inch-to-a-mile maps were being used by the troops. It is very improbable that such a large-scale map would be available in war, and its use in peace is therefore not as a rule desirable.

Organisation

93. The military organisation is in the main soundly conceived and sensibly acted upon. I have shown elsewhere how considerable im-

provements could be made in this, the fundamental basis of any Army. But already the machine functions wonderfully well, as the large camp concentrations have clearly demonstrated—not to speak of the assemblages of Cadets to central inspections, often over a hundred miles away from the outlying headquarters of their companies. Only a healthy organisation could have moved and manipulated such crowds of half-trained boys without a succession of mishaps and troubles.

Discipline

94. Discipline—the main force of armies—is closely allied to organisation. Such a sense of cohesion and of being under wise management, as a good organisation can give, amounts in itself to a sort of discipline. Up to this point the Forces of New Zealand are disciplined. Further, there is a common wish running through all ranks—a wish to do well. Where every one wishes to do the same thing there is no strain on discipline. In this negative sense also the Forces of New Zealand are disciplined. But the real test of discipline comes when the men are ordered to do something hard and disagreeable—something which appears to them unnecessary or mistaken. To put it plainly, a deep moral chasm intervenes between a ten-mile march on a fine day and on a full stomach, and a twenty-five-mile march on a dark rainy night on an empty stomach.

Factors Affecting Discipline

95. I have not enough to go upon to enable me to speak with great assurance as to this matter, but I am much inclined to think that here the Forces of New Zealand are weak. Indeed, I hardly see how it could well be otherwise. The Captains very frequently do not even know the names of their men—let alone their occupations and those of their parents—their habits, or the strong and weak points of their characters. Nor have the rank and file any real knowledge, in many cases, of their officers, half hidden, as these too often are, behind the sergeant-major's much more prominent figure. The officers are keen to teach, the men are anxious to learn, but not until they do teach one another and learn from one another—not until the regimental Captains themselves take in hand the instruction of their own men, without any intermediary whatsoever, will the true discipline—the main force of armies—make itself thoroughly at home in the ranks of the Army of New Zealand.

Recent Experiences

96. Nothing that I have written, or shall write, in this report is, I am convinced, so important as what has been said in the previous

paragraph. And before I leave the subject let me here point out that the willingness and cheeriness of the men—smiling and civil though standing in glutinous mud over their ankles with an iced shower-bath pouring down their backs—that this very constitutional cheeriness tends to obscure the fact that Achilles is vulnerable at the heel. All these great assemblages of troops, in trying weather, and very trying also in some of their other conditions, took place with only *one* regrettable incident. Were I merely globe-trotting—were I by chance an intelligent foreigner instead of an old soldier—I should say, What an excellent discipline! But, being what I am, I *know* that what held the troops together was a finer quality than discipline, but one, alas, under the wear-and-tear of the hardships of a long campaign, more evanescent. It was patriotism.

What is Wanted

97. Let us but get a thorough habit of discipline on the top of the glowing New Zealand patriotism, and no one in this world could wish for more. What is needed is that officers, especially company officers, should understand clearly that they are, for the time being, fathers and mothers to the lads entrusted to them for a brief period by the State. They must know each man—not the name only, but nature of the man. They should be able to guess what he is thinking about without waiting for him to speak. And, always, they must remember they issue no command from any petty personal motive, but ever and only as the responsible, trusted agents of the sovereign State.

At present all this may seem too hard. Under the conditions of training I have suggested elsewhere it will be much easier, and, should these suggestions find acceptance, I have no fear as to the form or thoroughness of the discipline which will characterise the New Zealand Forces.

Training

98. I will deal with this more fully under the headings of the three arms. All I will say here is that the troops can 'get there,' and once in face of the enemy can combine to strike a heavy simultaneous blow against his position. In attack there was less piecemeal frittering away of forces than I have sometimes seen at big manœuvres in England or on the Continent. Almost always there was an intelligent attempt to hold the enemy in one part of the field and to hit him a blow in the vitals with the main force in another. The defence was usually weak in that the positions selected and the dispositions made were wanting in depth. A force strung out in one long line must collapse at once against a flank attack even from a small force of mobile mounted men.

Intercommunication

99. This service was on the whole good. The signallers were keen, quick, and usually well posted. Not so much reliance was placed on telephones and telegraphs as on the Continent of Europe, and this is so much to the good.

Scouts

100. Not enough trouble was taken to select the men best adapted by character, education, and physique for this most responsible work. The scouts should be to an army what its antennæ are to an ant—to see and not to be seen; to determine for themselves whether to fire or remain concealed; to send back useful messages to the commander: all these duties demand the best that the company can produce, and are not to be fulfilled by individuals selected haphazard from the ranks.

Spiritual Counsellors

101. As experienced fishers of men the clergy of all denominations have been quick to realise the unrivalled opportunities for soul-catching afforded by a camp. There the devil, deprived of his favourite weapon of drink and flirtation, is comparatively at a discount. So it happened that one night, intending to go to a boxing-match, I fell into the midst of a prayer-meeting. The boys were praying with a great deal of fervour, and yet, I dare say, at home many of them rarely enter a church. Certainly the clergy in camp are a security to parents that military training is a school of morality as well as of defence. As for the reverend gentlemen themselves, I hope I may be permitted to report that, secularly speaking, they set a good example to every one in treating everything that turned up with good humour and *bonhomie*.

Mounted Rifles

102. New Zealand is fortunate in being able to muster at a very moderate expense such a fine body of horsemen as the Mounted Rifles. The higher commands are in capable hands, the instructors are able, and all ranks are animated with a keenness and initiative that deserve high praise. The result is reflected in the field-work in which I have inspected them. The squadrons move at a good pace, and come into action quickly; and they possess in a wonderful degree (considering the want of practice) that cohesion without which it is impossible to handle any considerable force of horsemen.

103. The horses are up to weight, show some quality, and look to be in good condition; some of the units are quite remarkably well

mounted, and their mounts are a level lot, when the conditions under which they are called up are taken into account. The activity of the horses and the nerve of their riders were brought forcibly home to me by two little incidents in my inspection. On one occasion the scouts of a brigade were sent out to a flank to reconnoitre; they popped over a five-strand barbed-wire fence as if it had been a two-foot drain. Another time a troop about to advance had to be specially ordered to go through a gate instead of jumping the wire fence in front of them.

Some of the men have the regulation colonial-pattern saddle, an excellent one for the purpose, but a large proportion of the saddles used are not suitable for military work, and would prove unserviceable in war. Ultimately the provision of regulation saddlery will have to be faced.

104. I have seen the whole of the Mounted Rifles in field-work, in nearly every case in combined operations with the other arms. One of these operations required considerable restraint in launching an attack—a forbearance that is not common with mounted troops: the result was a flank attack delivered at the exact psychological moment when it was wanted.

There is sometimes a tendency to begin dismounted action too far from the enemy; Mounted Rifles are not at all suited for a long advance under fire on foot, which usually cannot succeed unless it is supported in depth. Every use should be made of cover and mobility to get within close ranges before dismounting for action. These remarks are only meant to have a general application. Cases might arise when it would be of great importance to make the enemy believe they were being attacked by Infantry. Under such circumstances the horses must, no doubt, be left a long way in rear.

105. Coming into action the led horses were generally well and quickly handled, and there was a commendable absence of talking and noise. Sometimes these led horses were injudiciously placed. Cover from view, behind a belt of trees for example, may be better than nothing, but cover from fire behind a fold of the ground is what should be taken whenever it is available—which is almost always.

In moving from cover to cover over a narrow strip of ground that is watched by the enemy's Artillery it is generally best to gallop suddenly across in formed bodies instead of dribbling the men across in a steady stream of twos and threes. Artillery, even if it has carefully registered the ground, takes an appreciable time to bring effective fire on to any given point.

Finally, I can only say I have served in war already with New Zealand Mounted Rifles, and I should esteem myself lucky indeed if ever I had the good fortune to encounter Continental Cavalry in reasonably broken ground with them at my right hand.

Field Artillery

106. The system under which the permanent cadre of men and horses is always distributed among the batteries is excellent. It is an example of the best way in which an army organised on Militia lines should utilise its stiffening of Regulars.

The barracks constructed for the batteries are well suited for the purpose, and they are conveniently situated, so that the home training in gun drill, laying, equitation, driving, etc., can be carried out efficiently and economically, and the best use can be made of the permanent cadre.

The horses that have been bought are of a good type. Most commanders keep them in one subsection while the battery is in camp, and this I consider a better plan than to distribute them among the hired horses throughout the battery. Perhaps in the first days of camp it may be necessary to steady raw teams with a trained horse or two; after that a subsection horsed entirely with the well-trained permanent horses will steady the whole battery, and set up a high standard to the drivers of the other subsections. The hired horses were lacking in stamina for a long spell of heavy work.

107. For the present, at any rate, it will be best to train each ammunition column in close connection with one of the batteries: the men of the ammunition column become in war the first relief to make up the casualties in the batteries, and the training done with the battery in peace will be of use to them. In addition, the battery has the advantage of using the ammunition-column vehicles as first-line wagons.

In one battery that I inspected, the Staff sergeants and Nos. 1 were nearly all Volunteers of long standing, and the advantage to the efficiency of the battery was very apparent.

Many of the public schools have Artillery Cadets, who train in connection with the Territorial batteries. If these Cadets go on into the Territorial Artillery as recruits, the batteries will have the best of material on which to work.

108. In the combined operations that I witnessed, the Artillery was generally well handled; the batteries were boldly dispersed to give cross-fire, and they had definite *rôles* allotted to them. In the opening stages of an action care should be taken not to push the Artillery into positions of undue exposure. The deployment of the Infantry will often secure a safe zone of manœuvre for batteries, and allow them to get into action in good time and without having special escorts told off for them.

When taking up a position intended to be under cover, the battery commander must take care that the guns are really out of sight of all probable observing stations in the enemy's hands.

In a recent war it was found that telephones were very difficult to hear in the noise of battle, and it is always worth taking trouble and running danger to get a direct control of fire.

In some cases I found that sufficient attention was not paid to care of the harness; the equipment is of the best manufacture, but it cannot be expected to last unless preservatives are intelligently used. Care of harness is as important as any other item of a driver's training.

109. An Artillery recruit requires no more, and perhaps less, training than an Infantryman before he is efficient to take his place in a well-trained battery; a great part of his work is mechanical, and he is not required to think for himself so much as his brother of the Infantry. When the training of the units—the battery and company of Infantry—are considered, things are very much otherwise, and I think it certain that the Territorial batteries will be unable to maintain an efficiency equivalent to that of the Infantry unless they have a longer period in camp. The present nine days does not really give enough time in which to learn manœuvre and to carry out gun practice. The Artillery is a popular arm, and I should say that there would be little difficulty in filling the ranks of the batteries even if fifteen days' camp were made compulsory. But I am in full sympathy with economy, and I do not wish this report to be used as a handle for incurring serious fresh expenditure at present. Could not a compromise be arrived at and an extra three days be given to the Artillery? I have the less diffidence in making such a suggestion, because in New Zealand the Artillery should be *better* trained *relatively* than the Infantry. The reason is that, in the general organisation of the Army, the proportion of guns to Infantry and Cavalry is smaller than that recognised as right in other armies.

Garrison Artillery

110. As with the Field Artillery, the permanent cadre of the Garrison Artillery is used in such a manner that the Territorial Force gets the best value both from the point of view of efficiency and of economy. Enough Permanent men are employed to keep the material in the forts in running order and to provide instructors.

The work of the garrison gunners is often heavy and requires men of good physique. The men of the New Zealand Garrison Artillery whom I inspected were a powerful lot of young fellows of the right stamp.

I saw some practice from the forts; it was fairly good, but should improve with more training. It would be an improvement if the run of the target could be made to approximate more closely to the probable run of an enemy's ship. In most cases the guns would be confronted with a ship running in towards them, the range changing rapidly; the

practice target as a rule is run as a ship moving across the front, and changing range very slowly, if at all.

I approve entirely of the system under which the searchlights are run by a section of the Garrison Artillery.

ENGINEERS

111. The Engineers I saw in the field were men of high intelligence, and they were doing good work. A bridge that they had made over a rapid stream near one of the camps was very well constructed, and was —as is not always the case—thrown across the obstacle at a place where it was of real use. I consider that the field companies are best employed during training in carrying out this sort of work. They should not as a rule occupy themselves in siting or constructing trenches for the Infantry, who should be self-sufficing in such elementary works.

In another camp the bad weather gave the Engineers an opportunity to volunteer for some particularly hard, disagreeable duties, which they carried out in trying circumstances with great spirit and determination. Altogether this is an excellent branch of the New Zealand service.

INFANTRY

112. I saw the whole of the Infantry, including the coast defence troops, at field-work, in most cases in combination with the other arms. The higher leaders showed aptitude and training: evidently they had thought and pondered over the problems with which they were faced. The junior officers were keenness personified, but a proportion—perhaps one-half—had neither a thorough grip over their men nor a mastery of the situation, nor, again, a practised eye for country. These young officers proved, first, that the system had not yet enabled them to get into intimate touch with their subordinates; secondly, that, as might be expected, their ordinary business avocations had not granted them sufficient leisure for any 'out-of-school' study of soldiering.

Still, on the whole, I think there is good promise for the future even in cases where there is now much room for it. Enthusiasm is after all the greatest of assets, and the capacity shown by many of the seniors and a proportion of the juniors is good augury for the time when the presence of the Duntroon Cadets should make itself mightily felt. Several times when I set a commander a little problem requiring nerve and initiative, I found that the troops were deployed for action quickly and in a manner that would make for success. On other occasions, no doubt, more imagination would have led to better results, as, for instance, when troops advanced under a heavy fire up a level, open valley, when there were well-covered fire positions in the foothills on both sides. But it is easy to criticise at manœuvres, and, as I began by saying,

there is very good promise in the New Zealand corps of officers of Infantry.

113. Often private soldiers, when questioned, were able to give me a clear account of what was going on around them, showing some knowledge and much intelligence. Others had no idea of what was happening. This was, most probably, not their fault but that of their superiors. The deployment for attack was usually carried out quietly and with intelligence, and officers and non-commissioned officers taken to commanding ground to have the situation explained were kept under cover. In the early stages, where artillery fire only is to be feared, it is not necessary to begin alternate rushes; it is usually possible to get forward in more or less concentrated formation with the men well in hand. At extreme Infantry range it will probably be found that some of the ground will be exposed to rifle fire, other areas be dead to it. Clearly the men must dash across the open spaces at top speed, and must be halted and reformed under the first cover they attain. Here, too, alternate rushes are useless, and unnecessarily distract the men from their prime business of pushing forward as rapidly and with as little loss as possible. Coming closer still to the position and getting within effective rifle range, it is difficult to continue the advance until the enemy themselves are brought under rifle fire at that moment. Hence the progress by alternate rushes. But even here ground must in each case be the determining factor.

114. Commanders, on several of the manœuvres operations I have seen, had a tendency to advance by rushes of a fixed distance whatever were the conditions of ground and cover. In real war the captain of a company would give most anxious thought to his men and to the lie of the ground before he resolved upon the best method of working forward. 'Is that rise in front occupied by the enemy?' 'Will my men have a good chance of using their rifles if they can get there?' 'Will they be able to get cover?' These and similar questions will exercise him deeply. There will then be no question of making rushes of any fixed length of 30, 40, or 50 yards. And to do such things in peace time is bad training.

115. Scouts are not always judiciously handled in the attack. Half a dozen men move out at wide intervals and precede the battalion by two or three hundred yards. When they see the enemy they do not fall back, but, as a rule, continue to move on bravely under the fire of their own comrades as well as of the enemy. Sometimes they decline to fall back until the actual assault is imminent. Now, a scout is not much used in the attack once the enemy has been located. Nor does an average man ordered out from the ranks thereby become a scout. He should be the best soldier in the company, so that he may feel some confidence when he meets an enemy's scout 'on his own' that he is

the better man of the two. Again, when once the attack has got within rifle range of the enemy's position, individuals in advance of the company are very apt indeed to mask its fire. I suggest, then, that in the attack the use of scouts be restricted to use on the flanks of the advance, so soon as they have located the enemy. Occasionally, no doubt, even when heavy fighting has begun, a company commander may be able to work forward a scout to select the next best fire position. But all stereotyped handling of scouts, or sending them out in a formal extended line, is anathema to the principles of scouting, which insist that the man selected must be as independent as a New Zealander, as cunning as a fox, and as brave as a lion—that he must act ' on his own ' and bring back a scalp in the way of news of the enemy or of the ground, every time he goes out on the warpath.

116. Attempts, of which I saw several, to carry out the final fire fight from so great a range as 600 yards will probably end in failure. At that distance it is very difficult to obtain the fire mastery that makes a successful assault possible.

Infantry in defence were, on the whole, well placed, and some of the trenches that I saw were admirably concealed, but there was too much tendency to rely on the Engineers for siting and constructing fire-trenches. This work should be within the province of an Infantry commander. Where there is time to construct elaborate earthworks head-cover should be provided. Without head-cover the defender of a trench is not much better off than his attacker, who can make use of natural cover. With head-cover a man has a moral as well as a physical advantage.

Advanced positions aim at making the enemy deploy prematurely, and may succeed in breaking up the attack, but there is a considerable moral disadvantage in the eventual retreat of the advanced troops on to, or through, the men holding the main position: a point that is apt to be lost sight of on manœuvres.

117. The ceremonial work that I saw was generally well done. After South Africa there were some who considered the days of ceremonial over; since then there has been a reaction, and it is acknowledged that ceremonial has its uses. There is the shoulder-to-shoulder feeling that men miss nowadays in their extended work; there is also the advantage of giving the civil population a good show; and, thirdly, an inspecting General can form an impression from carefully watching ceremonial work—not of field training of course, but of spirit and discipline. That impression, I may say, was in my case a very happy one. The rank and file are of good physique and bear themselves well. I am confident they are steady fellows, who would stand a lot of hammering and hardly know they were being hammered.

118. After a comparatively short period of continuous training the

Infantry would, in my opinion, be ready for war as regards their tactical efficiency. But there is another attribute that is vitally necessary. Discipline—the modern discipline of respect—is a plant of slow growth; if this discipline is to stand the searching test of war, those in authority must have gained the respect of their men through a long period of peace training. For this reason I recommend that the best of the non-commissioned officers should be offered every inducement to serve on after their compulsory years of training are finished.

Army Service Corps

119. The large camps this year have made great demands on the Army Service Corps, whose task has not been made lighter by the bad weather. The very highest credit is due to the Army Service Corps officers of the districts and to their men. They have done first-class service, although, as a rule, undermanned to an extent that would fill a labour union with horror.

When the Army Service Corps units are up to their normal strength, a suitable system of calling the men up to camp in relays will enable the necessary duties to be carried out as efficiently and with much less strain on the *personnel*.

I am not sure that quite enough care is taken at present in selecting men of the most suitable trades for this branch. Much of the Army Service Corps' work is of a highly technical nature, and expert knowledge is essential. This matter will no doubt receive careful attention.

Medical Corps

120. The field ambulances are organised on the right lines, and every use is made of men whose civilian training fits them for the work. Here we have an admirable object-lesson of the value of expert civilians running an equivalent branch in the Army. For instance, I came across a number of medical students in the ranks working under an officer who was their lecturer in their college. Half the terrors of being wounded disappear under such excellent conditions.

Musketry

121. In the initial stages of the present scheme of training it was not possible properly to take in hand the musketry instruction of the troops till last year. Last year 15,852 men of the Territorial Force fired a musketry course. The proportion of Cadets who fired last year was comparatively small, owing to the fact that only twelve rifles were available for each company. This year a considerably larger proportion of the Territorial Force (the exact figures are not yet to hand) have

completed their annual course, and, rifles having been issued to every Cadet, the majority of the latter have also completed their course.

Great difficulty has been experienced in carrying out the training in the towns and country owing to the limited range of accommodation, and in the country owing to the difficulty of assembling the men. Nevertheless, successful rifle meetings have been held by the Dominion Rifle Association at district headquarters and in areas. I personally favour the latter, as they are easy of access to the majority of the men, and afford more encouragement for the moderate shot, than larger meetings.

122. In view of the fact that each district has an experienced, competent, and up-to-date musketry instructor (all four of them have lately been instructors at the School of Musketry at Hythe), I do not think it is necessary to establish a school of musketry in this country, and would recommend that, if it is desired to send anybody to a school of musketry, advantage should be taken of the offer of the Australian authorities to take them at the Australian School of Musketry at Randwick, in the same way that New Zealand Cadets are taken at the Royal Military College at Duntroon. I am glad to see that, generally speaking, the musketry instruction is conducted on up-to-date and service lines, and trust that by degrees these methods will become absolutely universal in all branches of the Army, including Rifle Clubs. The latter are essentially a serviceable body of men, and by degrees, if their methods of shooting can be brought to a condition of greater harmony with those of the serving Territorials, they will furnish schools where Reservists and men of the General Training Section can obtain invaluable instruction in musketry.

Aviation

123. Sooner or later the provision of a service of aviation in New Zealand will become necessary. Military aviation is still to-day in the experimental stage, and experiments on the scale that would be financially possible in this country would be unlikely to lead far. Furthermore, the air and landing conditions in the Dominion are not such as to tempt hostile aviators. For these reasons I would recommend a waiting policy for the present. But it may be well to send one or two officers to learn flying elsewhere, in order that expert knowledge may be at the disposal of the Defence Department to assist in its study of progress made in other countries.

Cadets

124. During my tour I saw every Senior Cadet unit in the Dominion, and, altogether, I actually inspected over 17,800 Cadets. The boys'

physique is, on the average, of a very high order, and I never wish to see a happier, more cheery-looking crowd.

Many of the boys came in from great distances, and I admire the organisation that could bring them together and house and feed them comfortably, sometimes, in the case of weather-bound vessels, for periods extending to a week. Some Cadets were lodged and catered for in drill-halls; others were put up by hospitable and patriotic inhabitants; and, in this admirable work especially, the ladies of the Victoria League rendered invaluable aid to the military authorities.

125. Town boys or public-school boys have great advantages in the matter of training over their companions in the country districts, who have often to cycle weary distances, after milking many cows, in order to attend their drills. Consequently, on parade the town boys are as a rule the steadier, and march past more brilliantly. Still, wherever there was a zealous instructor with a turn for handling boys, there the country companies also gave a capital showing.

As I have urged elsewhere, the training of the scattered units would be immensely improved, and be rendered at the same time less of a strain on employers, Cadets, and instructors, if some system could be devised by which the boys could be collected for a few days' company concentration every year instead of going long distances to attend drills at which very small numbers are present.

126. With adults a vast deal depends on the instructor, but a good curriculum will always enable keen men to work out their own salvation. With Cadets the curriculum counts for literally nothing compared to the instructor. A man with a vocation for that sort of job, especially if he has war-medals, an ultra-fierce aspect, and a loud and military word of command, will quickly produce discipline and steady drill. Every effort should be made to secure the best possible instructors, and to give themselves a good personal equipment of knowledge of drill, of warlike stories, and of the principles of discipline. For it should ever be borne in mind that a fund of knowledge and a suitable, impressive method of teaching will create a good discipline where mere punishment will every time signally fail. In many areas this discipline has already made good progress; but in some companies again boys have still almost everything to learn. On one occasion, after my inspection was over, I happened to pass a column of Cadets on their way home in the dusk. The ranks were broken and in disorder, and there was a good deal of horse-play, shouting, and noise: discipline had gone to the dogs. In front of the column marched three or four officers, apparently unconcerned with what was going on behind them. Now, this was bad work. All the good of the parade and inspection had been thrown away, and a positive unsoldierlike spirit was in process of being actively engendered. On the other hand, many of the companies I saw stood

perfectly steady on parade, and marched with a smartness and precision that would be quite impossible in the absence of real discipline.

127. On one or two occasions I saw Cadets at field-work. They attacked with great dash and enthusiasm, but without science or forethought. The subordinate leading of the squads and sections leaves most room for improvement.

The Cadets might, I think, be provided with a greatcoat or cape as soon as funds admit. Some of the units of the Officers' Training Corps in Great Britain wear inexpensive capes that might be copied here.

A notable feature of all the Cadet parades was the presentation of a handsome silver cup to every company, to be held by the best shooting Cadet for the year. These cups, the gift of the ladies of New Zealand, are a wholesome sign of the interest felt by the people in the future destinies of the Dominion.

128. On the moral side—the great side—of Cadet training I do not propose to touch. I have so often referred in speeches and addresses to the national advantage that must come from introducing the altruistic principle of comradeship as an antidote to the principle of throat-cutting engendered by competitive examinations, that I shall say no more on that subject here, except to express my own firm personal conviction that a finer or more patriotic piece of work was never put in hand than that which is now teaching the youth of this fortunate land to stand shoulder to shoulder in the ranks.

SUMMARY

129. To sum up, the Army of to-day puts its best into its work; it is well equipped; well armed; the human material is second to none in the world; and it suffers as a fighting machine only from want of field-work and want of an ingrained habit of discipline. The first of these can never, under the conditions of a Citizen Army, be quite made good, except by dint of war or by a period of embodiment made under stress of imminent peril; the second can and will be made good as well-trained recruits come on, especially when captains are made entirely responsible for the instruction of their own trained men.

IAN HAMILTON, *General,*
Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces.

APPENDICES

APPENDIX I

MILITARY FORCES OF THE DOMINION OF NEW ZEALAND: DISTRIBUTION OF DUTIES AT HEADQUARTERS

The General Officer Commanding	*The Chief of the General Staff and Director of Staff Duties and Military Training*	*The Adjutant-General*	*The Quartermaster-General*	*The Director of Ordnance*	*The Director of Accounts*
is responsible for the organisation, discipline, and efficiency of the Forces and for their inspection; advice on local military policy; plans for local defence; supervision of training; education of officers and selection of officers for study at Imperial Staff Colleges; appointments, promotions, resignations, and retirements of officers.	is responsible for Staff organisation; Staff tours; record of officers suitable for Staff employ; instruction and training for war; education and examination of officers; training manuals; arrangements for examination of candidates for British Army and Royal Australian Military College; manœuvres; estimates for and allocation of training and manœuvre grants; military libraries; leave and exemptions from training; intelligence; plans for local defence and strategical distribution of the Forces; mapping and reconnaissance; war establishments and war organisation; plans for mobilisation.	is responsible for peace organisation; discipline; martial, military, and international law; Courts-martial administrative arrangements in connection with training and education; ceremonial; *personnel* (excepting R.N.Z.A.); editing and issuing orders (other than operation orders); Army List and Regulations; leave of absence (except exemption from training); registration, enrolment and posting; appointments to and distribution of Permanent Staff; returns of strength and prosecutions; casualties (excepting R.N.Z.A.); mobilisation and other regulations dealing with above services; mobilisation of *personnel*; medals; chaplains; war claims and military pensions; Honorary Territorials, National Reserve; medical services.	is responsible for mobilisation stores; clothing equipment and general stores (excepting for Artillery and Engineers); Dress Regulations, quartering supplies, and transport; inspection and care of Maxim guns and small-arms; store buildings, drill-halls; mobilisation arrangements in connection with above services; administration of corps dealing with above services; veterinary services and remounts.	is responsible for armaments and all accessories; coast defences; Defence Department's vessels; reserve of arms and ammunition; technical equipment and vehicles of Artillery and Engineers units; guns; ordnance and field gun ammunition; permanent fortifications and works; Artillery and rifle ranges; control and distribution of Permanent Force; inspection of Artillery and Engineer duties.	is responsible for audit and examination of accounts; consideration and compilation of parliamentary estimates; payments; financial advice; contracts; control of accountants in districts; compiling and editing of 'Financial Instructions and Allowance Regulations,' in consultation with Q.M.G.

APPENDIX II

Composition of District Staff

Officer Commanding—

General Staff.

Attached to General Staff:—

Instructor in Mounted Duties.
Instructor in Infantry Duties.
Instructor in Musketry.
Intelligence Officer (unpaid Territorial officer).

Administrative Staff:—

Assistant Adjutant and Quartermaster-General.
Assistant Director of Supplies and Transport.
Principal Medical Officer (partially paid Territorial officer).
District Sanitary Officer (unpaid Territorial officer).
Principal Veterinary Officer (partially paid Territorial officer).
District Accountant.
District Storekeeper.

APPENDIX III

Rates of Pay in the Territorial Force

The following are the rates of pay *per diem* for officers, warrant officers, non-commissioned officers, and men:—

	£	s.	d.
Colonels	1	1	0
Lieut.-Colonels	0	15	0
Majors	0	12	0
Captains	0	10	0
Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants	0	8	0
Sergeant-Majors, staff sergeants, and colour-sergeants	0	5	6
Sergeant	0	5	0
Corporals	0	4	6
Other ranks	0	4	0

APPENDIX IV

War Organisation of the New Zealand Forces

(*a*) A Division consists of—

Headquarters;
1 Mounted Rifle brigade;
2 Infantry brigades;
and the following divisional troops:—
2 Field Artillery brigades (4 gun batteries);
Divisional ammunition column;
2 Field Companies Engineers;
Divisional signal services;
4 companies Army Service Corps;
2 Field Ambulances;
1 Mounted Field Ambulance.

(*b*) An independent Mounted Rifle Brigade consists of—

Headquarters;
3 Mounted Rifle regiments;
1 Mounted Signal troop;
1 company Army Service Corps;
1 Mounted Field Ambulance.

(*c*) Coast Defence troops consist of—

Detachment Permanent Force (the Regiment of Royal New Zealand Artillery);
2 divisions Garrison Artillery (each 3 companies) and 3 independent companies;
1 Infantry regiment and 7 companies;
1 Mountain battery.

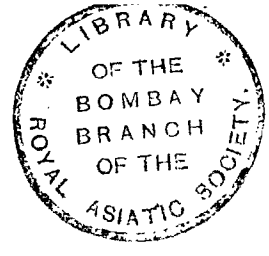
(*d*) Lines-of-communication troops consist of—

2 Railway battalions;
2 battalions Post and Telegraph Corps;
Army Service Corps and other services as required.

APPENDIX V

Distribution of Permanent Establishment

	Officers.	Warrant and Non-commissioned Officers.	Quarter-master Sergeants.	Other Ranks.	Civilians.
Army Headquarters	15	..	..	..	42
District Headquarters	12	..	..	..	39
Mounted Rifles	16	16	12	..	..
Royal New Zealand Artillery—					
Field Artillery	4	24	..	92	..
Garrison Artillery	8	49	2	136	..
Corps of New Zealand Engineers	1	..	..	..	..
Field Companies	..	4	..	..	..
Mounted signal troop and Divisional signal companies	..	4	..	..	..
Railway battalions	..	4	2	..	..
Infantry	21	21	17	..	..
New Zealand Army Service Corps	4	4	..	..	..
New Zealand Medical Corps	..	4	..	..	..
Musketry Instructors	4	..	..	..	..
Areas	18	49	18	..	..
Sub-areas	..	56	..	..	..
Not yet appointed.	9	..	..	..	..
Totals	112	235	51	228	81


LIBRARY
OF THE
BOMBAY
BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

INDEX

A.E 1, Australian submarine, loss of, 171-2.
Aboud, Mr., Syrian deputation to Lord Mayor of Sydney, 143.
Addison, the Hon. A. R., S. Australian Legislative Council, 112.
Adelaide, *see under* Australia.
Albany, *see under* Australia.
Albury, *see under* Australia.
Alexandra, H.M. Queen, 50.
Allen Line Steamship Co., assistance to Newfoundland Women's Patriotic Association, 79.
Allen, Hon. J., New Zealand Minister of Finance, Minister of Defence, etc., at opening of war: 173, 262.
Correspondence with War Office, 179.
Inspections of troops, 275-9.
Message to Expeditionary Force, 276.
Proclamations, 182, 183, 184, 185.
Statements and Speeches:
Acquisition of rifle ranges, 231, 232.
Adjournment of House, 253.
Canterbury camping ground, planting of, 249.
Capture of Samoa, 272-3.
Carrying out of Sir I. Hamilton's report, 250.
further Contingent and fostering of food supplies, 235.
Cost of camps, 249.
Defence scheme of New Zealand, 270-1.
Departure of General Godley, 236-7.
Drills, 249.
Expeditionary Force:
Age limit, question of increase, 240.
Convoying, 1914, 243.
Delay in departure of Expeditionary Force, 284-5.
Departure, 253, 270.
Equipment, 265.
Half castes in, 221.
Horses and remounts, 243.
Reinforcements, 239.
Allen, Hon. J., New Zealand Minister of Finance, Minister of Defence, etc. (*continued*):
Statements and Speeches (*continued*):
Financial statement, 6th Aug. 1914, 201-4.
Fortification of harbours, 236.
Military measures, 263-4.
Miniature rifle ranges, 240.
Offers from Legion of Frontiersmen and National Reserve, 240.
Payment of accounts by Defence Department, 249.
Protection of coal supplies, 200-1.
Protection of Westport, 243.
Provision for widows of deceased soldiers, 249-50.
Rations and supplies, 249.
Recruitment for Territorials, 239-40.
Replacement of British officers leaving for Europe, 237.
Rifle ranges, repairs, 240-1.
Rifle shooting, 248-9.
Sending away of guns, 235-6.
Sleeping accommodation on troopships, 244.
Summer clothing for Samoan Expeditionary Force, 251.
War tax, 275-6.
Anchises, S.S., gifts of food-stuffs from Queensland sent by, 91.
Anderson, Hon. John, Newfoundland, 42.
Anglo-Newfoundland Development Company of Grand Falls, assistance of Newfoundland Patriotic Fund, 66.
Arawa Tribe, offer of services, 256-7.
Archibald, Hon. W. D., Australian Minister for Home Affairs, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.
Asquith, Rt. Hon. H. H., M.P., Prime Minister, Great Britain: 255.
Rt. Hon. Mr. Massey on, 213.
Speech proposing vote of £100,000,000, read in New Zealand House of Representatives, 8th Aug. 1914, 212.
Rt. Hon. Sir J. G. Ward on, 212-13.

Atmore, Mr., New Zealand, on separation allowance for wives of sergeant-majors on active service, 248.
Auckland, *see under* New Zealand.
Aupouri Tribe, conference with other tribes at Auckland, 262.
Austin, the Hon. A. A., Victorian Legislative Council, 110.
Austin, Major J. G., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Australia :
Adelaide :
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
District Commandant, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 411.
Examination service established, 153.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 371.
Albany :
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendation by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384, 411.
Supersession by Fremantle as fortified port, 292-7.
Albury, speech by Mr. Holman at, 145-6.
Army :
Arms, ammunition, clothing, stores, etc., report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 428, 449-50.
Army Medical Corps, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 445.
Army Service Corps, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 445.
Artillery reorganisation, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 310-11.
Aviation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 446-7.
Chief of the General Staff, return of travelling on duty by, beyond the State of Victoria from 1st July 1909 to 1st Feb. 1910, 331.
Citizen Forces :
Annual cost, estimate by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 352-5.
Calling out of, proclamations, 95, 96.
Maintenance of ordinary training, 169-70.
Australia (*continued*) :
Army (*continued*) :
Citizen Forces (*continued*) :
Recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 335.
Citizen non-commissioned officers, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 347.
Colleges, schools, etc., report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 429.
Discipline, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 434-5.
District Staffs, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 350.
Division of country into areas, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 338-41.
Engineers, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 442-3.
Enrolment :
Recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 337-8.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 425-6.
Establishment and organisation of units, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 347-8.
Expeditionary Force, *see that title below.*
Field Artillery, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 440-2.
Garrison Artillery :
Re-allotment, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 311.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 442.
Government factories, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 449-50.
Headquarters organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 423-4.
Headquarters Staff, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 350-1.
Horses, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 427-8.
Infantry, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 443-5.
Inspector-General's Department, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 351.
Instruction :
Memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 314-15.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 428-31.

Australia (*continued*):
Army (*continued*):
Intelligence Branch, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 318-22.
Liability to service, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 425.
Light Horse, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 437-40.
Manœuvres, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 315.
Memorandum by Mr. Millen on retiring, 18th Sept. 1914, 168-71.
Military Board, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 424, 453.
Military districts and areas, 454.
Military libraries, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 318-19.
Military magazine, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 319.
Militia, characteristics of, Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton on, 1914, 431.
Mobilisation, recommendation by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 350.
Musketry, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 435-7.
National Militia, character of, Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton on, 1914, 420-3.
Numbers required in event of war, estimate by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 335.
Numbers trained, 1904-13, 429.
Officers:
Acceptance of local educational examination by War Office, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 318.
Attachment to the Commonwealth Staff, London, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 322.
Citizen:
Appointment from the ranks, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 345.
Examination, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 313-14.
Instruction, recommendation by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, and estimate, 345-6, 354.
Recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 344-5.
Examinations syllabi, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 318.

Australia (*continued*):
Army (*continued*):
Officers (*continued*):
Exchange with British, Indian, and Canadian Services, 1910, 312, 324-6.
General Staff, training, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 311-12.
Half-yearly examination of Militia and Volunteer officers for confirmation of first appointment and for promotion, results, Feb. 1910, 327.
of Permanent Forces:
Examination results, from 1st July 1909 to 7th July 1910, 326.
Examinations, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 312-13.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 443-4.
Organisation:
Changes, 1910, 310.
Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 297-301.
Tables of, new edition, 1910, 310.
Pay, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 346, 352.
Pensions and retiring allowances advocated, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 323-4.
Pensions, recommendations by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 448-9.
Position on outbreak of war, and response to appeal, 168-9.
Rates of pay, and horse allowance, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 454-5.
Regimental exercises, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 317.
Registration and exemptions, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 338.
Report on inspection of, by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 417-59.
Reserve, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 427.
South African War records, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 323.
Staff Corps, recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 341-2, 356-7.

Australia (*continued*):
Army (*continued*):
Staff tours, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 317.
Survey work, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 320-2.
Territorial organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 424-5.
Training:
Cost, estimate by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 353.
Criticism by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 333.
Memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 311-19.
Organisation of areas, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 315.
Recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 336-7, 349-50.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 425, 431-4, 458-9.
Training camps, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 315-17.
Training Manuals, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 317.
Units yet to be formed to complete certain field formations by 1919-20, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 455-6.
War organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 426.
Attitude of:
Hon. J. Cook on, 102-3, 130-2.
Rt. Hon. A. Fisher on, 103.
Hon. F. Flowers on, 117-18.
Hon. J. Garland on, 118.
Hon. W. M. Hughes on, 105-6.
Sir W. Irvine on, 105.
Hon. E. D. Millen on, 104-5, 123.
The Rt. Hon. Sir R. C. Munro-Ferguson on, 122-3.
Sir A. Peacock on, 106-7, 128.
Mr. Wade on, 116-17.
Rt. Hon. Sir J. G. Ward on, 195.
Austro-Hungarian Mobilisation Order, 27th July, 102.
Austro-Hungarian subjects to report themselves, 97.
Banking and financial position, Sir G. Strickland on, 103.
Beerburrum, Queensland, acquisition of training area at, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 315.

Australia (*continued*):
Brisbane:
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Examination service established, 153.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 370, 400, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 383, 411.
Patriotic Committee, gifts of frozen meat, etc., 88, 92; thanks for, 88-9, 92-3.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Cable and wireless communications, establishment of censorship, 95.
Capture of New Britain, 166, 167.
Commercial and industrial effect of outbreak of war, the Hon. A. W. Styles on, 4th Aug. 1914, 112.
Commonwealth Ministry, conference between representatives of, and of Federal Opposition and State Governments, 143-5.
Cone Bay:
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 372, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendation by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384, 411.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Defence:
Amounts expended on, 1904-14 (naval and military), 452.
Council of, 309.
Imperial Defence Committee's report upon a general scheme of defence, 1906, 287-304.
Local measures, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 291-7.
Local naval defence, report by Imperial Defence Committee, 1906, 302-4.
Memorandum by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 332-57.
Precautionary measures, Hon. E. D. Millen on, 152-3.

Australia (*continued*):
Defence (*continued*):
Preparation and revision of schemes, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 309-10.
Problem of, Gen Sir Ian Hamilton on, 1914, 418-19.
Defence Act, 1903-12: 94, 95.
Powers taken under, for requisitioning war material, 165-6.
Defence Forces, message to British Forces, and reply by Army Council, 165.
Duntroon Royal Military College, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 417, 429, 447-8.
Enemy merchant ships, 'days of grace' for, 96.
Existence of danger of war, proclamation, 94.
Expeditionary Force:
Commissions, statement by Hon. E. D. Millen, 166.
Composition, 83-4, 84-5, 85, 157-8.
Composition, enlistment conditions, etc., announcement by Hon. E. D. Millen, 155-7.
Dependants, provision for, 161-2.
Disablement pensions, 162.
Formation, 15th Aug., 97-8.
General Officer Commanding, powers of, Order in Council, 99.
Government insurance of, suggestion by Mr. McLeod, 140; approval by Mr. Mackey, 140-1.
Horses, appeal by Hon. E. D. Millen to horse owners, 12th Aug. 1914, 159.
Lord Kitchener's message to B.E.F. to be distributed to, 162-3.
Hon. E. D. Millen on, 3rd Aug. 1914, 153.
Offer, 3rd Aug. 1914, 83; reply, 83; acceptance 6th Aug., and thanks 3rd Sept., 84, 86.
Offer of, S. Australian approval, 114, 115.
Progress, 164.
Provision of organisation and equipment in advance desirable, 170-1.
State quotas, 158-9.
20,000 men to be offered in event of war, 153.
additional Volunteers:
Call for, 30th Aug., 160-1.
Statement by Hon. E. D. Millen, 162.

Australia (*continued*):
Export of arms, explosives, and military and naval stores, prohibition, 96.
Federal Labour Party:
Rt. Hon. A. Fisher on attitude of, 105.
Manifesto of leader and secretary, 146-7.
Federal Opposition, conference between representatives of, and of Commonwealth Ministry and State Governments, 143-5.
Financial position, Hon. J. Cook on, 14th Aug., and on arrangements made, 144-5.
Fleet, *see* Navy *below*.
Food supplies, arrangements made for safeguarding, 145.
Fortified ports, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Fremantle:
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Harbour establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 383, 411.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 372, 398, 401, 403, 405.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
French citizens, mobilisation notice to, 142-3.
General Staff:
Appointments to, 308-9.
Office accommodation, 308.
German desire for colony in, Mr. B. R. Wise on, 149-50.
German ships, detention of, 154.
German subjects:
Mobilisation notice to, 107.
to Report themselves, proclamation, 97.
Gifts to Great Britain:
Butter, 89; thanks for, 89-90.
Food-stuffs from Queensland, 86-7, 90, 91; thanks for, 87, 91, 92.
Frozen meat, etc., from Queensland, 88, 92; thanks for, 88-9, 92-3.
Port wine, 86; thanks for, 87-8.
Suggestion by Mr. McLeod, 140; approval by Mr. Mackey and Mr. Bowser, 140-42.

Australia (*continued*):
Harbour establishments, *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380-5.
Imperial horse-breeding stations and remount depots, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 322-3.
Imperial Reservists in, pay and pension to be brought up to those of Australian Force, 161.
Importation of the Hindustan *Ghadr*, proclamation, 100.
Industry:
Effect of war, Mr. Wade on, 120.
Importance of carrying on:
Mr. Cook on, 131.
Hon. J. Eagle on, 129.
Sir A. Peacock on, 137-8.
Lithgow, small arms factory, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 449.
Liverpool, N.S.W., acquisition of training area at, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 315.
Loan from Imperial Government, 71-3.
Mares, prohibition of export, proclamation, 100.
Maribyrnong cordite factory, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 449-50.
Meat, export prohibited, 99.
Melbourne:
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
District Commandant, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 411.
Examination service established, 153.
Facilities offered, 127.
Naval base, recommendations by Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 371.
Physical training exhibition by boys and girls, praise by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 417.
Mercantile traffic, establishment of examination service, 95-6, 153.
Message from Lord Kitchener, 154-5.
Military College:
Cost, estimate by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 353-4.
Memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 318.
Recommendations by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 343-4.
Ministry at outbreak of war, 82.
Ministry formed, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.

Australia (*continued*):
Mixed naval and military force to be organised, Hon. E. D. Millen on, 154.
Mobilisation:
Statement by Hon. E. D. Millen, 2nd Aug., 152-3.
Success of arrangements, 154, 164.
Naval bases and sub-bases, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 365, 396-405.
Naval Board:
Recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 365, 392-6.
Statement *re* loss of *A.E 1*, 171-2.
Naval policy, justification, 163-4.
Navy:
Additions to units to be effected by 1918, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 385.
Communications and Intelligence systems, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 365, 386, 405.
Completed fleet, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 367-72.
Control and administration, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 391-6.
Depot vessel for destroyers, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 385-6.
Development, 1918-33, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 387-90.
Financial estimate by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 412-16.
Functions, Admiral Sir R. Henderson on, 1911, 363.
Functions in time of war, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 289-91.
Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 302-4.
Initial stage, 1911-18, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 372-87.
Movements of, Hon. E. D. Millen on, 159-60, 167-8.
Officers from Great Britain, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 374-5.
Personnel, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 365, 373-85.

Australia (*continued*):
Navy (*continued*):
Placing of, under control of British Admiralty, 83, 85, 96-7, 114, 115, 153, 163.
Ratings from Great Britain, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 375-6.
Recommendations by Admiral Sir Reginald Henderson, 1911, 358-416.
Relations to Royal Navy, Imperial Defence Committee report, 1906, 303-4.
Reserves, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 366, 386-7, 409-11.
Stores, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 366.
Strength, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 363-5.
Training, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 365, 377.
New South Wales:
Expeditionary Force, 158-9.
Legislative Asembly:
Opposition, Mr. Wade on attitude of, 108.
Speeches in, 107-9, 117-21.
Motor Traders' Association, resolutions of loyalty passed and resources placed at disposal of Government, 127.
State bakery, 127.
Syrian residents, resolutions of, 143.
Vote towards relief of distress in Belgium, 146.
Newcastle:
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Examination service established, 153.
Mayor of, letter from Governor-General, Aug. 1914, 122-3.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 370.
Normanby Sound (Torres Strait), *see* Thursday Island.
Petersham Town Hall, speech of Hon. W. M. Hughes at, 25th Aug. 1914, 147.
Physical training of boys and girls, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 456-7.

Australia (*continued*):
Port Darwin:
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 372, 399-400, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendation by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384, 411.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Port Lincoln:
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 401-2, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384, 411.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406, 407.
Port Moresby, wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Port Stephens:
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 370, 401, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 383, 411.
Wireless station, recommendations by Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Port Western:
Naval barracks, etc., *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 383.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 372, 400-1, 403, 405.
Naval depot, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 370.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406, 407.
Ports, submarine mine-fields, report of Imperial Defence Committee, 1906, *re* discontinuance, 296-7.
Preparation for war:
Hon. J. Cook on, 149.

Australia (*continued*):
Preparation for war (*continued*):
Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 287-8.
Press censorship established, 1914, 100.
Profiteering, Mr. Wade on, 120-1.
Queensland:
Expeditionary Force, quota, 159.
Gifts:
Food-stuffs, 86-7, 90, 91; thanks for, 87, 91, 92.
Frozen meat and food-stuffs, 88, 92; thanks for, 88-9, 92-3.
Volunteers' meeting, Brisbane, speech of Mayor (C. M. Jenkinson), 126.
Raids on, and defensive measures, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 290-4.
Railway system, criticism by Lord Kitchener, Feb. 1910, 333.
Randwick Musketry School, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 429, 436.
Rifle clubs:
Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 300-1.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 430-1, 457.
Section of Imperial General Staff, duties and work of, 305-8.
South Australia:
Expeditionary Force, quota, 159.
House of Assembly, speeches in, 4th Aug. 1914, 114-16.
Legislative Council, speeches in, 111-14; reply by H. E. the Governor, to address from, 121.
State Governments:
Conference between representatives of, and of Commonwealth Ministry and Federal Opposition, 143-5.
Co-operation with Commonwealth Government, 127, 128.
Sugar, export prohibited, 99.
Sydney:
Chamber of Commerce, speeches of the Governor and Premier of N.S.W. at, 103-4.
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Examination service established, 153.
Facilities offered, 127.
French Consul-General, notification by, 142-3.
Mayor of, deputation of Syrian residents to, 143.

Australia (*continued*):
Sydney (*continued*):
Naval barracks and Cadets' Training College, etc., *personnel* recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 381, 411.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 370, 397-8, 400, 403.
Naval depot, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 370.
School of Gunnery, 429.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Tammin, Western Australia, acquisition of training area at, memorandum by Maj.-Gen. J. C. Hoad, 1910, 315.
Thursday Island (Normanby Sound, Torres Strait):
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Examination service established, 153.
Measures for defence, 153.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 370, 399, 400, 403.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 383, 411.
Troops for, 169.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Townsville:
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 370, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendation by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Trade, effect of war on, Hon. W. L. Baillieu on, 133-4.
Unemployment:
Conference between representatives of Commonwealth Ministry, Federal Opposition, and State Governments, 144.
Hon. J. Earle on, 129.
Mr. Scanlan on, 125.

Australia (*continued*):
Victoria:
Expeditionary Force, quota, 159.
Government, use of police stables and drill hall offered for military purposes, 127.
Legislative Assembly, speeches in, 111, 133-6.
Legislative Council, speeches in, 110, 133-6.
Premier, *see* Peacock, Sir Alexander.
Supply of war news through telegraph and post-offices, suggestion by Mr. Mackey, 141.
Visual signal stations on shore, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 407-8.
War news:
Arrangements for transmission, 220.
Mr. Mackey on, 141.
Mr. Bowser on, 141-2.
Western Australia:
Expeditionary Force, quota, 159.
Message to British Forces, and reply by Army Council, 165.
Wheat and flour, export prohibited, 99.
Wireless stations, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 405-7.
Wireless telegraphy, Orders in Council *re* taking possession of by Military, 100-1.
Australia, Australian Dreadnought: 148, 149, 164.
Call to Sydney, 152.
Austria-Hungary:
Consul at New Plymouth, summoning of Croatian reservists by, 256.
Mobilisation Order in Australia, 27th July, 102.
Outbreak of war with, 219.
Subjects in Australia, to report themselves, proclamation, 97.
Subjects in New Zealand, rights of, proclamation, 185.
Ayre:
Charles P.:
Conference with Prime Minister, Newfoundland, 42.
Member of Finance Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 67.
Mrs. C. P., at Newfoundland Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 54.
Ayre (*continued*):
E., on Reserve Force Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 73.
Baillie, Hon. Col., New Zealand: 253.
Seconding resolution on Lord Roberts's birthday, 254-5.
Baillieu, the Hon. W. L., speeches in Victorian Legislative Council, 110, 133-5.
Baird, D., Member of Finance Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 67.
Barr, George M. (Newfoundland), message from Liverpool *re* lobster export trade, 33.
Baxter, John, drill instructor, Newfoundland Regiment, 74.
Bayano, H.M.S., loss of Newfoundlanders on, 64.
Beauty Point, *see under* Tasmania.
Beerburrum, *see under* Australia.
Belgium:
Australian vote towards relief of distress in, 146.
German invasion:
Hon. J. Cook on, 148.
J. M. Kent on, 16.
Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 20.
Mr. Holman on, 146.
Bell, Hon. F. H. D., K.C., New Zealand Minister of Internal Affairs, etc., at opening of war: 173.
Message from the King, and reply, etc., read, 196-7.
Resolution *re* Expeditionary Force, 197.
Resolution on Lord Roberts's birthday, 253-4.
Statement *re* departure of Expeditionary Force, 220-1.
Belle Isle, *see under* Newfoundland.
Bennett, Hon. J. R., Colonial Secretary, Newfoundland and Labrador: 1, 9, 17.
Letter *re* payment of expenses of Volunteer Regiment, 46-7.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
at Patriotic Association meeting, 45.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
von Bethmann Hollweg, Dr., German Imperial Chancellor: 52.
on Violation of Belgian neutrality, 20.

Bice, the Hon. J. G., Chief Secretary, South Australia :
Announcement of outbreak of war, 121-2.
Speech in Legislative Council, 4th Aug., 113-14.
Bishop, Hon. R. K., Leader of the Legislative Council, Newfoundland and Labrador, 1, 42.
Blandford, Hon. S. D., Minister of Agriculture and Mines, Newfoundland and Labrador, 1.
Bowring, Hon. Edgar (Newfoundland) : 26, 42, 45.
Appeal for subscriptions to Patriotic Fund, 48.
on Assistance of Great Britain, 12-13.
Chairman, Finance Committee of Patriotic Committee, 46, 47, 58, 64, 67.
Free transportation offered for volunteers, 46.
Bowring Bros., Messrs., Newfoundland :
Assistance to Newfoundland Patriotic Fund, 66.
Assistance to Women's Patriotic Association, 79.
Message from Lloyd's, 36.
Bowser, Mr., Speech in Victorian Legislative Assembly, 141-2.
Braithwaite, Colonel, at head of New Zealand Artillery, 232, 237.
Bridges, Brig.-Gen. W. T., C.M.G. :
Appointment to organise and command A.I.F., 97-8.
Message to Sir John French, 162.
Service abroad, 1906-7, 1909-10, 324.
Brisbane, *see under* Australia.
Brisbane Newspaper Co., Ltd., gift of food-stuffs for Great Britain collected by, 87, 90, 91 ; thanks for, 87, 91, 72.
Britannia, New Zealand aeroplane, gift of, to Great Britain, 179.
British Empire, J. M. Kent on unity of, 15-16.
Brockman, Capt. E. A. D., 11th A.I. Regt., in India, 1908-9, 326.
Browning, John, Newfoundland :
Conference with Prime Minister, 42.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
at Patriotic Association meeting, 45.
Bruche, Maj. J. H. (A. and I. Staff), service in England, 1910, 324.
Buchanan, Sir W. C., New Zealand :
on Quality of horses of Expeditionary Force, 242.
on Supply of war news, 192.
Buddo, Hon. Mr., New Zealand :
on Age limit for Expeditionary Force, 247.
on Quality of horses of Expeditionary Force, and provision of remounts, 247.
on Rangiora Rifle Range, 231, 234.
Buick, Mr., New Zealand, on quality of horses of Expeditionary Force, 243.
Burke :
Dr. Vincent P., Newfoundland :
Hon. Sec. Patriotic Committee, Finance Committee and Patriotic Fund, 45, 57, 65.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
Secretary, Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Mrs. V. P., at Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 54.
Burns, Lieut., New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.

Calypso, H.M.S. : 61.
R.N.R. men, 6, 33-4, 61.
Canada :
Attitude of, Rt. Hon. Sir J. G. Ward on, 195.
Bank notes, as legal tender, 42.
French extraction, citizens of, the Hon. W. S. Manifold on loyalty of, 136.
Gift of flour to Great Britain, 140.
Loan from Imperial Government, 71-3.
Moratorium, power taken to declare, if necessary, 42.
Offer of assistance, Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 175, 190.
Officers, exchange with Australia, 325.
Opposition, attitude of, 43.
Patriotic Fund, 65.
Canterbury, *see under* New Zealand.
Cape Race, *see under* Newfoundland.
Cape Ray, *see under* Newfoundland.
Carter, Mr., in charge of Cape Ray wireless station, 6.
Carty, Major, speech at meeting for promotion of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 40.

Cashin, Hon. M. P., Minister of Finance and Customs, Newfoundland and Labrador: 1, 78.
2nd Chairman Finance Committee of Patriotic Committee, 58, 64.
Introduction of bill for raising $250,000 for Volunteer Force, 27.
Meeting with bank managers, 42.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Vice-chairman of Finance Committee, Patriotic Association, 67.
Cervera, Admiral (1898), 293.
Chaytor, Colonel, New Zealand, 254.
Chesney, Captain, New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Christian, Maj. S. E., R.A.A., service in England, 1907-8, 324.
Churchill, Capt. G. R. D., I.A., service in Australia, 1907-8, 325.
Clairmonte, Lieut. E., R.C.A., service in Canada, 1906, 325.
Clan MacNaughton, H.M.S., loss of Newfoundlanders on, 64.
Clemons, Senator the Hon. J. S., Honorary Member of Australian Ministry at outbreak of war, 82.
Clift:
J. A., K.C., Newfoundland: 17, 58.
Member of Patriotic Committee Nomination Committee, 44, 57.
President of Society of United Fishermen, 62.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Mrs., at Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 54.
Coaker, Mr., New Zealand:
on Financial policy of the Government, 30.
on Volunteer movement meetings, 27.
Coates, Gordon, M.P., New Zealand: 217.
on Breeding of remounts, 241-2.
Question *re* Maori Contingent, 250.
Collins:
R. Muirhead, High Commissioner for Australia, correspondence with the Colonial Office, 89-90.
Colonel, New Zealand, 255.
Colvin, Mr., New Zealand:
on Protection of coal supplies, 200.
on Protection of Westport and Greymouth, 242, 243-4.
Colvin, Mr., New Zealand (*continued*):
on Quality of horses of Expeditionary Force, 42.
Cone Bay, *see under* Australia.
Conroy, C. O'Neil, K.C., on Reserve Force, Newfoundland Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Cook, Hon. J., Australian Prime Minister and Minister for Home Affairs at outbreak of war: 82, 106, 124, 126-7, 147.
Speeches and statements:
30th July 1914, 102-3.
6th Aug. 1914, 127.
10th Aug. 1914, 129-32.
1st Sept. 1914, 148-9.
Australian vessels to be placed under British Admiralty in event of war, 153.
Call for additional volunteers, 160-1.
Conference between representatives of Commonwealth Ministry, Federal Opposition, and State Governments, 143-5.
Expeditionary Force to be offered in event of war, 153.
Corbett, Capt. R. G., H.M.S. *Niobe*, at St. John's, Newfoundland, 6.
Court, John, Deputy Mayor, Auckland, speech, 261-2.
Coxen, Maj. W. A., R.A.A., service in England, 1907-10, 324.
Creswell, Capt., C.M.G.:
Director of the Commonwealth Naval Forces (1911), 361.
Proposals *re* Australian local naval defence, 302.
Croatian Reservists, New Plymouth, resolution condemning action of Austrian Consul in summoning, 256.
Crosbie, Hon. J. C., Member of Ministry Newfoundland and Labrador: 1.
Free transportation offered for volunteers, 46.
Cruickshank, Capt. M. H., Derwent Regt., in India, 1909-10, 326.
Cullen and Wallace, Messrs., Fairfield Vineyard, Rutherglen, Victoria, gift of port wine, 86; thanks for, 87-8.

Dangar, Maj. H. W., R.A.A., service in England, 1903-5, 325.
Davey, George, 79.

Davidson :
Sir Walter Edward, K.C.M.G., Governor and Commander-in-Chief, Newfoundland and Labrador: 1, 8, 9, 49.
Appeal for subscriptions to Patriotic Fund, 48.
Chairman of Patriotic Committee, 57.
Correspondence with Secretary of State for the Colonies, 2-7.
at Newfoundland Patriotic Committee meetings, 44, 46.
Report, 31st March 1915, as Chairman of the Patriotic Association, 56-81.
Report to, from Sub-Committee of Patriotic Association, 44.
Speech at meeting for formation of Patriotic Association, 37-8.
Speech at Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 52-3.
Lady, speech at Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 49-52.
Davies :
General, New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Lieut., New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Dickson, Mr., New Zealand, question *re* replacement of British officers returning to Europe, 231.
Dillon, P. J., Agent-General for Queensland, letter to Colonial Office, 92.
Dogger Bank, action off, 214.
Dominions :
Assistance from : 52.
Mr. McLeod on, 139.
Patriotism of :
J. M. Kent on, 17.
Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 21.
Dominions Royal Commission, to conclude inquiry in Canadian Maritime Provinces and suspend sittings, 2.
Duntroon, *see under* Australia.

Earle, Hon. John, Premier of Tasmania, statement, 6th Aug., 129.
Egypt, Maori Contingent for, 178, 250-1.
Ellis, W. J., Newfoundland :
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
Member of Nomination Committee of Patriotic Committee, 44, 57.
on Pensions Sub-Committee, of Patriotic Association, 70.
Elmslie, Mr., Leader of the Opposition, Victorian Legislative Assembly : 110.
Co-operation of, 128.
Motion for adjournment seconded, 111.
Emerson, Hon. C. H., K.C. :
Member of Ministry, Newfoundland and Labrador, 1.
Visit to camp at Pleasantville, 54.
Empire Defence Fund, New Zealand subscriptions to, 275-6.
Encounter, H.M.S., called to Sydney, 31st July 1914, 152.
Epsom, *see under* New Zealand.
Escott, Mr., New Zealand, question *re* provision of clothing for Samoan Expeditionary Force, 251.

Ferguson, Rt. Hon. Sir R. C. Munro-, G.C.M.G., Governor-General of Australia : 82.
Correspondence with Secretary of State for the Colonies, 83-93.
Letter to the Mayor of Newcastle, 122-3.
Proclamations, etc., 94, 95, 96, 97, 99, 100.
Fisher :
Rt. Hon. A., P.C. : 107, 132, 211.
Australian Prime Minister and Treasurer, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.
Manifesto as Leader of Federal Parliamentary Labour Party, 146-7.
Speeches and statements :
31st July 1914, at Colac, 103.
10th Aug. 1914, 132.
Attitude of Labour Party, 105.
Capture of New Britain, 13th Sept. 1914, 166.
Loss of *A.E 1*, 172.
Hon. F. M. B., New Zealand Minister of Customs, Minister of Marine, etc., at opening of war, 173.
Flowers, the Hon. F., speech in moving adjournment of N.S.W. Legislative Council, 117-18.
Foott, Maj. C. H., R.A.E., service in England, 1907-9, 325.
Forbes, Mr., New Zealand, on breeding of remounts, 241.
Forrest, Rt. Hon. Sir John, P.C., G.C.M.G., Treasurer, Commonwealth of Australia, at outbreak of war, 82.
Forsyth, Lieut.-Col. J. K. :
Appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Service in India, 1909, 325.

Foster, Capt. W. J., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
France :
Citizens in Australia, mobilisation notice to, 142-3.
Deserters in Newfoundland, notice of general amnesty to, 36.
Naval reservists in Newfoundland, voluntary service, letter from P. Suzor, 35.
Position of, Mr. Holman on, 150-1.
Reservists in Newfoundland, notice to, 34.
Franklin, Major : 54.
at Newfoundland Patriotic Association meeting, 45.
Fraser, Hon. W., New Zealand Minister of Public Works, etc., at opening of war, 173, 226.
Fremantle, *see under* Australia.
French, Field-Marshal Lord : 230, 255.
Messages from General Bridges, commanding A.I.E.F., 162.
Freyesleben, Austro-Hungarian Consul-General, Sydney, 102.
Furness Withy Steamship Co., assistance to Women's Patriotic Association, 79.

Galway, Sir Henry L., Governor of South Australia : 122.
Reply to Address from Legislative Council, 121.
Gardiner :
Senator the Hon. A., Vice-President of the Australian Executive Council, 82.
Major, New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Garland, Hon. J., speech in N.S.W. Legislative Council, Aug. 1914, 118.
George V., H.M. King :
Message to Dominions and reply from New Zealand, 196-7, 238, 258-9.
Message of loyalty from New Zealand, and reply, 174, 193-4.
Message of loyalty from Tasmania, 126.
Message to Newfoundland, thanks for, 7.
Germany :
Attitude of, J. M. Kent on, 16.
Desire for Colony in Australia, Mr. B. R. Wise on, 149-50.
Mr. Holman on, 151.
Imperial Chancellor, *see* von Bethmann Hollweg, Dr.
Germany (*continued*) :
Invasion of Belgium :
Hon. J. Cook on, 148.
J. M. Kent on, 16.
Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 20.
Prussian bureaucracy, W. H. Kelly on, 132-3.
Responsibility of, for war, Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 20.
Ships, detention at Australian ports, 154.
Subjects in Australia :
Mobilisation notice to, 107.
to Report themselves, proclamation, 97.
Subjects in New Zealand, rights of, proclamation, 185.
Ghadr or *Hindustan Ghadr*, prohibition of importation into Australia, 100.
Gibbon, Lieut.-Col. : 237.
at Head of New Zealand Artillery, 232.
Gibbs, Hon. M. P., K.C., Member of Ministry, Newfoundland and Labrador, 1.
Gisborne, *see under* New Zealand.
Glasfurd, Major D. J., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Glover, Mr., New Zealand, 233.
Glynn, Hon. P. M., K.C., Australian Minister for External Affairs at outbreak of war, 82.
Godley, General Sir A. J. : 255.
Departure from New Zealand :
Hon. J. Allen on, 236-7.
Mr. Russell on, 232.
Mr. McCallum on, 247-8.
Speeches and Statements :
at Auckland, 269-70.
re possible Call for volunteers, 263.
Constitution, etc., of Expeditionary Force, 265-7.
Defence of New Zealand in event of German raid, 264.
Gifts for Expeditionary Force, 265.
Horses for Expeditionary Force, 264-5.
Officering of Expeditionary Force, 267.
at Palmerston Camp, 271-2.
Volunteers for Expeditionary Force, 264.
Visit to troopships at Wellington, 274.
Mr. Witty on, 246.
Goodridge, Hon. A. F., Newfoundland, 42.

Goschen, Sir E., interview with German Chancellor, 20.
Gosling, W. G.:
Conference with Prime Minister, Newfoundland, 42.
at Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 53.
Graham, Sir Hugh, *Montreal Star*, message from Sir E. P. Morris, 4th Aug. 1914, 34-5.
Great Britain:
Admiralty:
Acceptance of force of Newfoundland Naval Reservists, 4, 61.
Financial agreement *re* Newfoundland Naval Reserve, 64.
Transfer of Australian Navy to control of, 83, 85, 96-7, 163, 183.
Army, Hospitals, gifts of port wine from Australia, 86; thanks for, 87-8.
Attitude of, Rt. Hon. Sir J. G. Ward on, 195, 260.
Attitude of Nationalists and Ulstermen, the Hon. W. S. Manifold on, 135.
B.E.F.:
Lord Kitchener's message to, to be distributed to Australian and New Zealand units, 162-3, 278, 279.
Messages from Australia, and replies by Army Council, 165.
Gifts to, *see under* Australia, New Zealand, *and* Newfoundland.
Government:
Advances to Dominions Overseas to cover military and naval expenditure, 59, 71-3; thanks for, 61.
Arrangements made for financing Anglo-North American commerce, 42.
Insurance of shipping, 137.
Mr. Holman on resistance of, 150.
Lloyd's, warning to shipping, 36.
Navy:
Message from Australia, 165.
Relations of Australian Navy to, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 303-4.
Work of, Sir A. Peacock on, 137-8.
New Zealand officers in, placed at disposal of Government, 267.
Officers, exchange with Australia, 312, 324-6.
Pitwood, export from Newfoundland under licence, 26-7.
Press Bureau, establishment, 3.
Great Britain (*continued*):
Prohibition of export of food supplies, 3; withdrawn, as regards fish, 5.
Reservists in Australia, pay and pension to be brought up to those of Australian Force, 161.
Secretary of State for the Colonies, *see* Harcourt, the Rt. Hon. Lewis, M.P.
Treasury, Minute, 17th Nov. 1914, relating to advances to self-governing Dominions, 71-3.
War Office, correspondence with New Zealand Minister of Defence, 179.
Grey, Rt. Hon. Sir Edward: 16, 20.
Sir G. Strickland on, 103.
Greymouth, *see under* New Zealand.
Grieve, W. B., member of Finance Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 67.
Griffiths:
Capt. O. R., R.A.A., service in Canada, 1907-8, 325.
Hon. Capt. T., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Groom, Hon. L. E., Australian Minister of Trade and Customs at outbreak of war, 82.

Haag, Maj. E. C., 18th Hussars, service in Australia, 1906-7, 325.
Haldane, Viscount, 255.
Hall-Thompson, Capt., R.N., to command *Philomel*, and to be naval adviser to New Zealand Government, July 1914, 201.
Halsey, Capt., H.M.S. *New Zealand*, message *re* capture at Samoa, 273.
Hamilton, General Sir Ian, G.C.B., D.S.O., General Officer Commander-in-Chief Mediterranean and Inspector-General of the Oversea Forces: 170, 202, 248, 250, 253.
Report on inspection of military forces of Australia, 1914, 417-59.
Report on military forces of New Zealand, 1914, 460-91.
Hanan, Mr., New Zealand:
on Fortification of Otago and Southland and removal of big guns from country, 234.
Larger number of training camps proposed, 234-5.
on Production and export of foodstuffs, 234.

Harcourt:
the Rt. Hon. Lewis, M.P., Secretary of State for the Colonies: 60, 63, 258.
Correspondence with the Governor-General of Newfoundland, 2-7.
Correspondence with Governor-General of Australia, 83-93.
Correspondence with Governor of New Zealand, 174-80.
Mrs., 51.
Harris:
Hon. John, Newfoundland: 42.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
Mr., New Zealand, on laxity of Defence Department in payment of accounts for hire of halls, etc., 247.
Harrison, Lieut. F. F., R.A.A., service in India, 1910, 325.
Harvey:
A. J., on Reserve Force Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 73.
Hon. John, Newfoundland: 26, 42.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
at Patriotic Association meeting, 45.
on Pensions Sub-Committee Patriotic Association, 70.
Hawes, Mr., Newfoundland, 42.
Hayter, Capt. (Hon. Maj.) F. J., assistant to Director of Defence Organisation (1910), Australia, 308.
Heard, Col., 231, 232.
Heligoland, Battle near, 13.
Henderson, Admiral Sir Reginald, K.C.B., recommendations *re* Naval Forces of the Commonwealth, March 1911, 358-416.
Herdman, Hon. A. L., New Zealand Attorney-General, Minister of Justice, etc., at opening of war, 173.
Heritage, Maj. F. B., A. and I. staff, service in England, 1907-8, 325.
Herries, Hon. W. H., New Zealand Minister of Railways and Native Minister at opening of war, 173.
Hickman, A. E., 42.
Higgins, W. J., on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Hill, Capt. C. H., R. C. Regt., service in Australia, 1910, 325.
Hindson, Mrs., and family, gift of butter, 89; thanks for, 89-90.
Hoad, Maj.-Gen. J. C., C.M.I., Chief of the Australian General Staff and the Commonwealth Section, Imperial General Staff: 332.
Attaché in Russo-Japanese War, 325.
Memorandum, July 1910, 305-31.
Service abroad, 1908-9, 325.
Hobart, *see under* Tasmania.
Hobbs, Col. J. J. T., V.D., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Holland, alleged declaration of war against Germany, information received in New Zealand, 8th Aug. 1914, 208.
Holloway, E. W. Vere, Lieutenant Q.M., notice to Legion of Frontiersmen, 35.
Holman, Mr., Premier N.S.W.: 211.
Cablegram from Mayor of Noumea, 151.
Speeches and Statements:
Aug. 1914, 106, 118-19, 145-6.
14th Sept., 150-1.
Legislative Assembly, 107-9.
at Sydney Chamber of Commerce, 104.
Horwood, Lady, at Newfoundland Women's Patriotic Association meeting, 53.
Horwood Lumber Co., 79.
Hughes, Hon. W. M.:
Australian Attorney-General, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.
Speech at Petersham Town Hall, 25th Aug. 1914, 147.
Statement, 2nd Aug. 1914, 105-6.
Huick, Mr., New Zealand, 225.
Hunter, Mr., New Zealand, on horses for Expeditionary Force and offer of twenty, 207.
Hurst, Capt. J. H., R.A.A., service in England, 1908-10, 325.
Hutchings:
C. H., K.C., on Reserve Force Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 73.
Major, Methodist Guards, Newfoundland, 39.

Imperial Defence, Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 22-3.
Imperial Defence Committee, report upon a general scheme of defence for Australia, 1906, 287-304.
India:
Loyalty of, Mr. McLeod on, 139.
Officers, exchange with Australia, 312, 324-6.
Premier on attitude of, and Hon. W. S. Manifold on, 135-6.

International Telegraph Convention, and International Radio-Telegraph Convention, 8.
Ireland :
Attitude of :
Hon. W. S. Manifold on, 135.
Mr. McLeod on, 139.
Rt. Hon. Sir J. G. Ward on, 195.
Irvine, Hon. W. H., K.C., Attorney-General, Australia, at outbreak of war : 82.
Speech, 1st Aug., 105.
Irving, Lieut.-Col. G. G. H., A. and I. Staff, service abroad, 1905-6, 325.
Islington :
Lady, offer of London house as hospital for New Zealand soldiers, 218-19.
Lord, Sir J. G. Ward on, 218-19.

Jenkinson, Alderman C. M., Mayor of Brisbane, speech at Queensland Volunteers' meeting, 126.
Jensen, Hon. J. A., Honorary Member of Australian Ministry, 82.
Job, Hon. W. C., Newfoundland, and spread of information to out-harbours, 62.
Job Bros., Messrs., Newfoundland, assistance to Women's Patriotic Association, 79.
Johnstone, J. W. N., on Reserve Force Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 73.
Jones, Hon. Mr., New Zealand, 221.
Just, H. W., Colonial Office, 89.

Kaipara, sinking of, referred to, 275.
Kelly, Hon. W. H., Acting Minister for Home Affairs, Australia :
Speech, 10th Aug. 1914, 132-3.
Honorary member of Ministry at outbreak of war, 82.
Kent, J. M., Newfoundland :
Appeal for subscriptions to Patriotic Fund, 48.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
at Patriotic Committee meeting, 46, 57.
on Pensions Sub-Committee of Patriotic Association, 70.
on Pulpwood export to Great Britain under licence, 26-7.
Speech in debate on the Address, 14-18.
on the War budget, 29.
Kiliani, Herr, German Consul-General, Sydney, mobilisation notice, 107.
Kirby, Maj. M. T., D.S.O., A.F.A., in India, 1908-10, 326.
Kirkpatrick, Col. G. M., 323.
Kitchener of Khartoum, Viscount, Field-Marshal, G.C.B., O.M., G.C.S.I., G.C.M.G., G.C.I.E., etc. : 161, 255, 307, 309, 315, 362, 448.
Australian Army scheme, 168.
Knowledge of New Zealand, Sir J. G. Ward on, 217.
Memorandum on the defence of Australia, Feb. 1910, 332-57.
Message to Australia, 9th Aug. 1914, 154-5.
Message to B.E.F. :
Distribution to Australian units, 162-3.
Distribution to New Zealand troops, 276, 279.
Message to New Zealand, 215-16, 275.
Message to New Zealand Expeditionary Force, 279.
Recommendations *re* New Zealand Army, 357.
Visit to Australia, 1909-10 : 323.
Alphabetical index to documents, etc., from the Commonwealth section Imperial General Staff, for, 328-30.
Tour, places and times, 331.
Sir J. G. Ward on, 216-17.
Knowling, Hon. Geo., Member of Finance Committee of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 67.

Lambert, Henry, Colonial Office, 88, 90, 91.
Lansdowne, Lord, 211.
Laurier, Sir Wilfrid, 13, 43.
Law, Rt. Hon. A. Bonar, M.P., 211.
Legge, Lieut.-Col. J. G., temporary Director of Defence Organisation, Australia (1910), 308-9.
Leitch, Alderman, Mayor of Redfern, 143.
Leyraud, Mayor of Noumea, cablegram to Premier of New South Wales, 151.
Lithgow, *see under* Australia.
Liverpool, *see under* Australia.
Liverpool :
The Earl of, K.C.M.G., Governor of New Zealand : 258.
Announcement of war, 258.
Correspondence with Secretary of State for the Colonies, 174-80.
Proclamations, 182, 183, 184, 185.
Reply to King's message, 238.

Liverpool (*continued*):
The Earl of, K.C.M.G., Governor of New Zealand (*continued*):
re Secrecy as to movements of Expeditionary Force, etc., 228.
Speech to advance guard of Expeditionary Force, 268.
Speech at official farewell to Wellington Expeditionary Force, 282-3.
Lady, fund for comforts for troops and gifts of cholera belts in response to Queen's appeal, 180.
Lloyd, Mr., Newfoundland, speech in debate on Loan Bill, 28.
Long-Innes, Lieut. P. S., service in Canada, 1906, 325.
Lorimer, Mr., Newfoundland, request *re* pitwood for Great Britain, 26.
Lucas, Hon. E., speech in S. Australian Legislative Council, 112-13.
Luke, Mr., visit to troopships at Wellington, 274.
Luscombe, Maj. A. P., A. and I. Staff, service abroad, 1906-7, 325.
Lyttelton, *see under* New Zealand.

Macartney, Lieut. H. D. K., R.A.A., service in England, 1908-10, 325.
MacBrien, Lieut. J. J., R. C. Dragoons, service in Australia, 325.
McCall, Senator the Hon. J. H., vice-President of the Australian Executive Council, at outbreak of war, 82.
McCallum, Mr., New Zealand:
on Age limit of Expeditionary Force, 248.
on Gen. Godley, 247-8.
on Provision for widows and families of deceased officers, 248.
on Training camps, 248.
McCay, Col., the Hon. J. W., V.D.:
Appointment to command 2nd Inf. Brig., A.I.F., 98.
Brigadier, A.I.F., 157, 158.
Director of Intelligence, Australian General Staff (1910), 308, 320.
McCombs, Mr., New Zealand, question *re* censorship of news, 192.
MacDermott, Lieut.-Comdr. A., H.M.S. *Calypso*: 6, 33-4.
Tribute to Newfoundland R.N.R., 62-3.
MacDonald, Mr., New Zealand:
on Acquisition of Gisborne Rifle Range, 231.
MacDonald, Mr., New Zealand (*continued*):
on Age limit in Expeditionary Force, 244.
on Horse Breeding, 244-5.
McGowen, Mr., N.S.W. Legislative Assembly, 109.
McGrath, Hon. P. T., Newfoundland: 70, 78.
Hon. Sec. Finance Committee, Patriotic Committee, 65, 67.
at Patriotic Association meeting, 45.
on Pensions Sub-committee of Patriotic Association, 70.
MacKay:
Captain, at Newfoundland Patriotic Association meeting, 45.
J. J., on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Mackey, Mr., speech in Victorian Legislative Assembly, 140-1.
MacLaurin, Lieut.-Col. H. M., appointment to command 1st Inf. Brig., A.I.F., 98.
McLeod, Mr., speech in Victorian Legislative Assembly, 139-40.
Macpherson, Dr., speech at meeting for formation of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 40.
McPherson, A., member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
MacPherson, C., M.D., on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
McWatters, Capt. H. C., I.A., service in Australia, 1908-9, 325.
Mahon, Hon. Hugh., Australian Minister for External Affairs, 82.
Mailer, Capt. W., A. and I. Staff, service in England, 1908-10, 325.
Mainwaring, Maj. C. V., I.A., service in Australia, 1906-7, 325.
Manifold, Hon. W. S., speech in Victorian Legislative Council, 135-6.
Manser, Maj. W. E., R.E., service in Australia, 1910, 324.
Maoris:
Conference at Auckland, 262.
Contingent:
for Egypt, 178, 250-1.
Statement by Dr. M. Pomare, 285-6.
Offers of service, 178, 199, 204-5, 256-7.
Petition to Hon. J. Allen *re* military service, 262.
Question of active service abroad, 205.
Volunteers, debate in House of Representatives *re*, 228-30.
Maribyrnong, *see under* Australia.

Marsh, Capt. J. T., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Mary, H.M. Queen :
Cholera belts from New Zealand, 180.
Needlework Guild, 50.
Massey, Rt. Hon. W. F., P.C., New Zealand Prime Minister, etc., etc., at opening of war : 173, 233.
Message from the King read, 197.
Speeches and Statements :
31st July 1914, in House of Representatives, 174, 175, 190.
Action off the Dogger Bank, 214.
to Advance Guard of Expeditionary Force, 268.
at Agricultural Conference, Wellington, on situation in the Near East, 28th July, 256.
Appeal to horse-owners, 206.
Mr. Asquith's speech proposing vote of £100,000,000, 212, 213.
Association of leader of the Opposition with the Government, 211.
to Canterbury section of Expeditionary Force, 273-4.
Capture of Samoa, 31st Aug. 1914, 273.
Communication from Governor *re* secrecy as to movements of Expeditionary Force, etc., 228.
Departure of Gen. Godley, 232.
Expeditionary Force : 197-9, 204, 205-6.
Active service, 216.
Age limit, question of increase, 246.
Departure, 219, 221-2, 285.
Enfranchisement, 223, 226.
First Contingent from Dominions, 213-14.
Quality of horses and question of horse breeding, 245.
Secrecy as to movements, 252.
Lady Islington's offer of London house as hospital for New Zealand soldiers, 218.
Maori Contingent, 229, 250-1, 251.
Maoris' offers of services, 205.
Message from the King, 237.
Offers of cash and horses, 207.
Offers of horses and services, 214.
Offer of troops, message from Lord Kitchener, 215-16.
at Official farewell to Wellington Expeditionary Force, 283.
Massey, Rt. Hon. W. F., P.C., New Zealand Prime Minister, etc., etc. (*continued*) :
Speeches and Statements (*continued*) :
at Parliament House, to crowd, 5th Aug., 259.
Precautionary measures owing to war in Europe, 192-4.
Progress of the war, 238-9.
to Troops at Epsom, 1914, 280-2.
War with Austria, 219.
War news, 208-9, 215, 220.
at Wellington, 257.
Visit to troopships at Wellington and speech, 274-5.
Masterton, *see under* New Zealand.
Maxwell, Maj. F. A., V.C., D.S.O., I.A., service in Australia, 1909, 325.
Maycock, Warrant Officer W. C., appointment to A.I.F. as Lieutenant, 98.
Melbourne, *see under* Australia.
Melbourne, H.M.S., called to Sydney, 31st July 1914, 152.
Melville, Captain, New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Millen, Senator the Hon. E. D., Australian Minister of Defence on outbreak of war : 82, 94, 95, 98, 158.
Announcement *re* Expeditionary Force, 155-7.
Lord Kitchener's message to B.E.F. to be distributed to Australian units, 162-3.
Memorandum on retirement, 18th Sept. 1914, 168-71.
Speeches and Statements :
6th Aug. 1914, 123.
31st July, 104-5.
Additional troops, 162.
Australia, *Encounter*, and *Melbourne*, H.M. ships, ordered to Sydney, 152.
Defence precautionary measures, 152-153.
Detention of German ships, 154.
Disablement pensions, 162.
Examination service establishment, 153.
proposed Expeditionary Force, 153.
Horses for Expeditionary Force, 159.
Imperial Reservists' pay and pension, 161.
Mobilisation, success, 154.
Naval operations and movements, 159-60, 167-8.

Millen, Senator the Hon. E. D., Australian Minister of Defence, on outbreak of war (*continued*):
Speeches and Statements (*continued*):
Officers, commissions to, 166.
Organisation of mixed naval and military force, 154.
Provision for dependants, 161-2.
Requisitioning of war material, 165-6.
Summary of steps taken in connection with the war, 163-4.
Telegrams from and to Rear-Admiral Patey, 167.
Milley, Hon. Samuel, Newfoundland, speech in Debate on the Address, 13-14.
Montgomerie, Capt. A. G., Newfoundland:
Deputy Paymaster, 70.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
on Pensions Sub-committee of Patriotic Association, 70.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Moore, John, Drill instructor, Newfoundland Regiment, 74.
Morayshire, S.S., gift of food-stuffs from Queensland, sent by, 86, 87.
Morris:
Rt. Hon. Sir Edward P., P.C., K.C.M.G., K.C., LL.D. (Lord Morris), Prime Minister, Newfoundland and Labrador: 1, 17, 63.
Appeal for subscriptions to Patriotic Fund, 48.
on Financial policy of the Government, 29-30.
Interview with editor of *St. John's Daily News,* 41-3.
Message to Sir Hugh Graham, *Montreal Star,* 34-5.
at Newfoundland Patriotic Committee meeting, 46, 47, 57.
on Pulpwood export to Great Britain under licence, 26.
Speeches: 36-7.
Debate on the Address, 2nd Sept. 1914, 19-26.
Meeting for formation of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 40-1.
Visit to camp at Pleasantville, 54-5.
on Volunteer movement meetings, 28.
F. J., K.C., M.H.A., Newfoundland:
Member of Patriotic Committee Nomination Committee, 44, 57.
Morris (*continued*):
F. J., K.C., M.H.A., Newfoundland (*continued*):
on Recruiting, 28.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
and Spread of information to outharbours, 62.
J. W., Newfoundland, on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Lady, resolution for formation of Women's Patriotic Association, 53.
Munn, J. S., Newfoundland: 70, 78.
Interviews with Prime Minister, 41-2.
Treasurer, of Newfoundland Patriotic Fund, 48, 67.
Myers, Mr., New Zealand:
on Quality of horses of Expeditionary Force, 242.
on Recommendation of Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton *re* separation of training of troops and administrative and financial departments, 248.

New Britain:
Capture of, 166, 167.
Rabaul, British flag hoisted, 167.
Simpsonshafen, capture and occupation of, by Australian Force, 167.
New Caledonia:
French Reservists in Australia having served, or liable to serve in, notification to, 142-3.
Noumea, address from, to Premier of New South Wales, 151.
New Plymouth, *see under* New Zealand.
New South Wales, *see under* Australia.
New Zealand:
Army:
Annual training camps, satisfactory results, 202.
Armament and ammunition, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 466.
Army Service Corps, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 484.
Aviation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 485.
British officers returning to Europe, replacement, 231, 232, 237.
Cadets, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 472, 485-7.
Calling out of further parts of, for active service, 184-5.

New Zealand (*continued*):
Army (*continued*):
Camps, cost of, 249.
Clothing and equipment, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 466-7.
Conditions of service, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 463.
Discipline, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 475-6.
Distribution of permanent establishment, 491.
Drills, criticism by Mr. Witty, 246-7; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 249.
Engineers, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 481.
Expeditionary Force, *see that title below.*
Field Artillery, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 479-80.
Garrison Artillery: 183.
Called out, 193.
Protection of coal supplies, 200-1.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 480-1.
Headquarters organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 461, 488.
Horses, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 466.
Infantry, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 481-4.
Instruction, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 467.
Intercommunication, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 477.
Liability for service, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 462-3.
Main features of scheme, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 470-3.
Manœuvres, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 481-3.
Mechanical transport, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 466.
Medical Corps, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 484.
Mobilisation, Hon. J. Allen on, 263-4.
Mounted Rifles, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 477-8.
Musketry, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 484-5.
National Reserve, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 468.
Numbers trained, 1905-14, 468.
Nursing service, report by Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 468.
New Zealand (*continued*):
Army (*continued*):
Organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 474-5.
Rates of pay, 1914, 489.
Rations and supplies, arrangements and cost, 249.
Recommendations made by Lord Kitchener for remodelling and development on the same lines as Australian, 357.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 460-91.
Reserve, calling out of, proclamation, 184.
Scouts, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 477.
Senior cadets:
Hon. J. Allen on, 203.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 467-8.
Separation of training of troops and administrative and financial departments, Mr. Myers on, 248; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 250.
Spiritual counsellors, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 477.
Territorial organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 461-2, 489.
Training:
Extension of scope proposed by Mr. Russell, 232-3.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 464, 476.
Training camps, time of holding, Mr. McCallum on, 248.
Unit organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 462.
Universal training scheme, Hon. J. Allen on, 201-2.
War organisation, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 465, 490.
Widows and families of deceased soldiers, provision for, suggestion by Mr. McCallum, 248; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 249-50.
Attitude of, Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 194.
Auckland:
City Council meeting, 261-2.
Defences, 236.
Deputy Mayor, *see* Court, John.
Examination service, 192-3.

New Zealand (*continued*):
Auckland (*continued*):
Expeditionary Force, reviews at Epsom, and official farewell, 276-80.
Gen. Sir A. Godley at, 269-70.
Maori Conference, 1914, 262.
Mayor of, *see* Parr, C. J., C.M.G.
Transports, recall, 284.
Auckland Military District: 462.
Defence Department's laxity in payment of accounts for hire of halls, etc., Mr. Harrison, 247; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 249.
Expeditionary Force, reviews at Epsom, and official farewell, 1914, 276-7, 277-9, 279-82.
Quota towards Expeditionary Force, 267.
Austro-Hungarian subjects in, rights of, proclamation, 185.
Bank notes, as legal tender, 184, 203-4.
Canterbury:
Camping ground (Waimakariri River bed), planting of, 247, 249.
'Send-off' to section of Expeditionary Force, 6th Sept. 1914, and speech by Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey, 273-4.
Canterbury Military District: 462.
Quota towards Expeditionary Force, 267.
Censorship, establishment, 192.
Coal:
Export forbidden, 184.
Supplies, protection of, 200-1.
Defence:
Expenditure on, 203, 469.
Gen. Sir A. Godley on, 269.
Measures, statement by the Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey, 192-4.
Statement by Hon. J. Allen, 203, 270-1.
Statement by Gen. Sir A. Godley, 264.
Defence Amendment Act, 1912, 183.
Defence Department, in Committee, 8th Sept. 1914, 231-7.
Defence Fund, donations, 209.
Enemy merchant ships' 'days of grace,' 184.
Epsom, reviews of troops at, and official farewell, 1914, 276-9, 279-82.
Examination service, establishment, 192-3.
Expedition to the Pacific, 166.
Expedition to Samoa, 167.

New Zealand (*continued*):
Expeditionary Force:
probable Active service in Europe, 216.
Address by Gen. Sir A. Godley at Palmerston Camp, 271-2.
Age limits:
Gen. Sir A. Godley on, 266.
Increase question, 240, 246, 247, 248.
Hon. J. Allen on, 263-4, 270.
Applications from volunteers, statements by Gen. Sir A. Godley, 263, 264.
Call for volunteers, previous to mobilisation, 176, 177.
Composition, 177, 265-7, 269.
Convoying of, Mr. Wilford on, 241; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 243.
Date of sailing, Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 219.
Departure, 220-2, 252-3.
Delay:
Hon J. Allen on, 276, 284-5.
Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 285.
Statement re, 284.
Departure of advance guard, 268.
Enfranchisement, suggestions by Sir J. G. Ward in House of Representatives, 222-7.
Equipment, the Hon. J. Allen on, 265, 278.
Financial responsibility assumed by Government, 178, 218, 275.
as First Contingent from Dominions, 213-14.
Further Contingent, Hon. J. Allen on, 235.
Gifts required, Gen. Sir A. Godley on, 265.
Half-castes allowed to volunteer, 221.
Horses:
Appeals to horse-owners, 206.
Gen. Sir A. Godley on, 265-6.
Mr. Hunter on, 207.
Offers of, 207, 214.
Quality of, 241-2, 243, 245, 246, 247.
Remounts, suggestion, 247.
Imperial and New Zealand officers, statement by Gen. Sir A. Godley, 1914, 267.
Inspection at Tahuna Park, 275-6.
Lady Islington's offer of London house as hospital, 218-19.
Lord Kitchener's message to British troops distributed to, 278, 279.

New Zealand (*continued*):
Expeditionary Force (*continued*):
Measures for, Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 197-9.
Message from the Hon. J. Allen, 276.
Message from Lord Kitchener, 275, 279.
Message from Lord Roberts, 279.
Offer, reply of H.M. Government, 194.
to be Offered in event of war, 175, 190.
Preliminary arrangements made, 194.
Reinforcements, 239, 275.
Resolution of House of Representatives, 5th Aug., 197, 200.
Resolution of Legislative Council, 197.
Secrecy as to movements:
Communication from Governor *re*, 228.
Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey and Sir J. G. Ward on, 252.
'Send-off' at Canterbury, 273-4.
Sergeant-Majors on active service, separation allowances to wives, Mr. Atmore on, 248.
Sleeping accommodation on troopships, 244.
Supplies and rations, tenders for, 247, 249.
System, Gen. Sir A. Godley on, 6th Aug., 266-7.
Territorials, recruitment for, to fill places of volunteers for Expeditionary Force, 239-40.
Thanks of H.M. Government, 177.
Training, Hon. J. Allen on, 271.
Volunteers, call for, Gen. Sir A. Godley on, 263.
Wellington section, official farewell, 1914, 282-4.
X-ray apparatus for, from New Zealand people, 179.
Expeditionary Forces Voting Act, 1914, regulations under, 186-8.
Exports, prohibitions, 184.
Financial position, Hon. J. Allen on, 6th Aug., 203-4.
Food prices and supplies, Commission appointed to inquire into, 186.
Food-stuffs:
Mr. Hanan on importance of fostering production, 234; reply by the Hon. J. Allen, 235.
Warning against profiteering, Hon. J. Allen, 204.

New Zealand (*continued*):
German subjects in, rights of, proclamation 19th Aug. 1914, 185.
Gifts:
to Great Britain:
Britannia, aeroplane, 179.
Cholera belts, 180.
X-ray apparatus for New Zealand Expeditionary Force, 179.
Gisborne Rifle Range, proceedings for acquisition, 231, 232.
Government, members of, at opening of war, 173.
Governor of, *see* Liverpool, the Earl of, K.C.M.G.
Greymouth, protection of, Mr. Colvin on, 242.
Guns, sending away of, 234, 235-6.
Horse breeding:
Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 244-5.
Proposals by Mr. Forbes and Mr. Coates and Mr. Colvin, 241-2; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 243.
Proposal, 244-5.
House of Representatives, proceedings in:
31st July 1914, and declaration of loyalty, 174, 175, 190-1, 193-4.
Adjournment, 8th Aug., 214-15.
Adjournment, departure of the Expeditionary Force, 23rd Sept. 1914, 252-3.
Coal supplies, protection of, 6th Aug., 200-1.
Declaration of war with Austria, 13th Aug., 219.
Defence Department, in Committee, 8th Sept., 239-50.
Donations to War Fund, 8th Aug., 207.
Expeditionary Force:
31st July, 190-1.
5th Aug., 197-200.
7th Aug., 204-7.
10th Aug., 216.
11th Aug., 217-18.
13th Aug., 219.
14th Aug., 221-2.
26th Aug., 222-7.
28th Aug., 228.
17th Sept. 1914, 252.
Financial statement by Hon. J. Allen, 6th Aug., 201-4.
Lady Islington's offer of London house as hospital for New Zealand soldiers, 11th Aug., 218-19.

New Zealand (*continued*):
House of Representatives, proceedings in (*continued*):
Maori Contingent, 16th Sept., 250-1.
Maori volunteers, 1st Sept., 228-30.
Message from the King, 5th Aug., 197; 8th Sept., 238.
Offer of troops, message from Lord Kitchener, 10th Aug., 215-16.
Progress of the war, 8th Sept., 238-9.
Statements by Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey and Rt. Hon. Sir J. G. Ward, 4th Aug., 192-6.
Summer clothing for Samoan Expeditionary Force, 16th Sept., 251.
Transmission of war news, 13th Aug., 220.
the War, 8th Aug., 208-14.
War intelligence, Aug., 214-15.
War news, 4th Aug., 191-2.
Wireless stations, 8th Sept., 230-1.
King's message, reply to, 238.
Imperial officers in, return to England, 267.
Lord Kitchener's message, 215-16; Sir J. G. Ward on, 216-17.
Legion of Frontiersmen, offers from, 240.
Legislative Council, proceedings:
Expeditionary Force:
5th Aug., 196.
14th Aug., 220-1.
Message from the King, and reply, 5th Aug., 196-7.
Lord Roberts's birthday, 30th Sept., 253-5.
Loan from Imperial Government, 71-3.
Lyttelton:
Defences, 234, 236.
Examination service, 192-3.
Maoris, *see that title*.
Masterton, offer of horses and £4000 to buy, 214.
Message from H.M. the King, and reply, 196-7, 258-9.
Military measures, Hon. J. Allen on, 263-4.
Miniature rifle ranges:
Establishment, 240.
Proposal by Mr. Russell *re* wholesale establishment, 233.
National Reserve, offers from members of, 240.

New Zealand (*continued*):
Naval Defence Act, 1913: 182, 201.
Section 19, inquiry as to date of bringing into operation, 174.
Section 19 (2), issuing of proclamation under, 176.
Naval Forces, transfer to control of H.M. Government, proclamation of, 182-3.
Naval Reserve:
Calling out of, 192.
Mobilisation Act, 181.
Volunteers, calling of, into active service, proclamation, 181-2.
Volunteer Acts, 181.
New Plymouth, Croatian Reservists, resolution condemning action of Austrian Consul in summoning, 256.
Newspapers, arrangements *re* supply of war news to, 191.
Officers in Great Britain, placed at disposal of Home Government, 267.
Opposition:
Support of Government, 257-8.
Sir J. G. Ward on attitude of, 175, 190-1, 196.
Otago:
Defences, 234, 236.
Examination service, 192-3.
Otago Military District: 462.
Quota towards Expeditionary Force, 267.
Palmerston Camp, address to troops by Gen. Sir A. Godley, 271-2.
Physical training of boys, report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 464.
Post and telegraph offices, arrangements for supply of war news through, 191-2.
Publication of information concerning Military and Naval operations, prohibition, 188-9.
Rangiora Rifle Range: 231.
Need for measures to be taken *re* maintenance, Mr. Buddo on, 234.
to be Repaired, 240-1.
Rifle clubs: 203.
Drilling, 240.
Report by Gen. Sir Ian Hamilton, 1914, 467.
Rifle ranges:
Acquisition of, 231, 232.
Repair by Government, 240-1.
Rifle shooting prizes, proposal by Mr. Witty, 246; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 248-9.

New Zealand (*continued*):
Rotorua, Arawa Tribe at, offer of services, 256-7.
Samoan Expeditionary Force, summer clothing for, 251.
Speaker of the House, visit to troopships at Wellington, 274.
Tahuna Park, inspection of troops at, by Hon. J. Allen, 275-6.
Telegraph stations and messages, regulations issued, 184.
Trading with the enemy, proclamations, 184.
old Volunteer officers, tribute to, by Mr. Allen, 239-40.
Waikato district, 200.
Mounted men, offer of services, 214.
Wairao, Northern, Slavonians of, refusal to join Austrian colours, and loyalty to Government, 217-18.
War fund, donations to, 207.
War news:
Arrangements for transmission, 220.
Delay in obtaining, 208.
Non-communication to leader of the Opposition, Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey on, 208-9.
Sir J. G. Ward on, 210, 214-15, 215.
War tax, Hon. J. Allen on, 275-6.
Wellington:
Agricultural Conference, Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey at, 256.
Defences, 236.
Examination service, 192-3.
Patriotic demonstrations and speeches by Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey and Sir J. Ward, 257-8.
Troopships at, visit by Parliamentary party and speech by Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey, 274-5.
Wellington Military District: 462.
Expeditionary Force, official farewell, 1914, 282-4.
Quota towards Expeditionary Force, 267.
Westport, protection of, Mr. Colvin on, 242, 243-4; replies by Hon. J. Allen, 243, 244.
Wheat and flour, maximum price fixed, 186.
Women:
Gifts to troops, 279.
Provision of luxuries and necessaries for troops, 270.

New Zealand, H.M.S.:
Action after Heligoland, 273.
Cost of, 201.
Message *re* capture of Samoa, 273.
Newall, Colonel, New Zealand, 254.
Newcastle, *see under* Australia.
Newfoundland and Labrador:
Advance from H.M. Government, 59, 73; thanks for, 61.
the Alliance Française Belgian Fund, branch of Women's Patriotic Association, 80.
Announcement of declaration of war, 35.
Army:
Expeditionary Force, proposed Act, Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 24.
Government to meet total cost of contingent of 500 men, 5; thanks of H.M. Government, 5.
Offer of troops for service abroad, 2, 56; acceptance, 3, 56-7.
Recruiting:
Appeal, 9-10.
Progress, 13, 27.
Banks, payment in notes, power to be given if necessary, 42.
Belgian Refugee Branch of Women's Patriotic Association, 80.
Belle Isle tax, 29.
Cape Race wireless station, taken charge of by R.N.R., 6.
Cape Ray wireless station, taken charge of by R.N.R., 6.
Cod fish export:
Holding up of shipment at Liverpool, 3-4.
Importance of, 3-4.
to Neutral countries, to continue, 5.
Commercial position of country, Sir E. P. Morris on, 41-3.
Day of Universal Prayer and Supplication, proclamation, 10-11, 64.
First Newfoundland Regiment, notice to applicants for commissions, 49.
Fishery:
Government to assist trade, 42-3.
Sir E. P. Morris on, 30.
Food-stuffs:
Prevention of excessive prices, proposed bill, Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 24-5.
Profiteering in:
J. M. Kent on, 17-18.
Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 25.

Newfoundland and Labrador (*continued*):
French deserters, notice of general amnesty to, 36.
French Naval Reservists, voluntary service, letter from P. Suzor, French Consul, 35.
French reservists in, notice to, 34.
Gifts, thanks from Great Britain, 60.
Government:
Financial policy of:
Mr. Coaker on, 30.
J. M. Kent on, 29.
Sir E. P. Morris on, 29-30.
Governor and Commander-in-Chief, *see* Davidson, Sir Walter Edward, K.C.M.G.
House of Assembly:
Debates:
on the Address, 2nd Sept., 14-26.
4th Sept., 26-30.
Opposition, attitude:
J. M. Kent on, 5, 29.
Sir E. P. Morris on, 19, 21, 23, 29.
proposed War legislation, 24-6.
Legion of Frontiersmen, notice to, 35.
Legislative Council:
Debate on the Address, 12-14.
Prorogation, 30-2.
Royal assent to Bills, 30-1.
Speech from the Throne, 12.
Lobster export trade, message from Liverpool, 33.
Message from the King, thanks for, 7.
Methodist Guards, 39.
Ministry at the outbreak of war, 1.
Moratorium, to be declared if necessary, 24, 42.
Motor car and motor cycle owners, notice to, 49.
Naval Reserve:
Calling out of, Admiralty order, 33-4.
Continuance of recruiting, 63.
Death roll, 64.
Embarkation on H.M.S. *Niobe*, 6, 62.
Financial agreement with Admiralty, 64.
Good class of recruits, 62-3.
Leave of absence until services needed, 6, 61.
Men not immediately required to return home, 5, 61.
Mobilisation, 6.
Number to be raised to 1000, 2, 7.
Offer of men for service abroad, 2, 56; acceptance, 4, 57, 61.

Newfoundland and Labrador (*continued*):
Naval Reserve (*continued*):
Summons:
Response to, 61-2, 62.
Special committee formed to spread information to out-harbours, 62.
Neutral and enemy merchant ships, proclamation, 9.
Out-harbours, spread of information to, 62.
Patriotic Association:
Finance Committee report, 1915, 67-71.
Formation, 37-41.
Meetings and reports, 44-7, 57-8.
Objects, 65.
Report of Sir W. E. Davidson, Chairman, 56-81.
Reserve Force Committee, report to Legislature, 73-5.
Patriotic Fund:
Appeal for subscriptions and response, 48, 64.
Financial statement, 77.
Incorporation by Act of Legislature desired, 65.
Objects, 76-7.
Pensions Sub-committee, 70.
Trustees, report, 76-8.
Pleasantville Camp, Prime Minister's visit, 54-5.
Press, supply of news from Great Britain, 3.
Proclamations, 8-11.
Recruiting, loyalty of outports, 27, 28.
Reserve Force:
Enlistment, 73-4, 75.
Equipment, 74.
Instruction, 74.
Officers from England, 75.
Officers' Commission, 74-5.
Transport, 75.
St. John's:
Board of Trade, conference with Prime Minister, 42.
Church Lads' Brigade Armoury:
Patriotic Committee meetings, 44-7, 57.
Public meeting, 12th Aug., 36-41.
Shipping, war risk insurance, 4-5.
Society of United Fishermen, 62.
Tariff, proposed bill, Rt. Hon. Sir E. P. Morris on, 25-6.
Telegrams and radio-telegrams, proclamation, 8-9.

Newfoundland and Labrador (*continued*):
Telegraphic communication with Labrador Coast suspended, 6.
Timber export to Great Britain for pitwood under licence, 26-7.
Volunteer movement, meetings re
Mr. Coaker on, 27.
Sir E. P. Morris on, 28.
Volunteer Force Loan Bill, debate on, and passing of, 4th Sept. 1914, 27-8.
Volunteer regiments:
see also Patriotic Association.
Allotments, 78.
Camp at Pleasantville, Prime Minister's visit, 9th Sept. 1914, 54-5.
Continuance of recruiting, 63.
Cost of regiment for one year, 70.
Despatch to Secretary of State for the Colonies *re*, 47.
Expenditure incurred up to 19th March 1915, 59, 69.
Expenses:
to be Borne by Government, 46-7, 47, 68.
Division between Imperial and Newfoundland Governments, 58-9.
First Contingent, departure, 5th Oct. 1914, 59.
Free transportation on steamboats and railway, offers, 46.
Gifts to, 66.
Numbers raised, 59-60.
Recruiting progress, 53.
Scale of pay, 59, 71.
Training on Sundays, 53.
War Measures Act to be introduced, 25.
Women's Patriotic Association: 66.
Meeting, 49-54.
Report of, 78-81.
Work of, 80-1.
Newfoundland Produce Co., Ltd., assistance to Women's Patriotic Association, 79.
Newman, Dr. A. K., New Zealand, question *re* half-castes in Expeditionary Force, 14th Aug. 1914, 221.
Ngapuhi Tribe, conference with other tribes at Auckland, 18th Sept. 1914, 262.
Ngata, Hon. Mr., on Maori Volunteers, 204-5, 229-30, 251.
Ngatiwhatua Tribe, conference with other tribes at Auckland, 262.
Nicholson, Gen. Sir William, G.C.B., Memorandum, 7th Dec. 1908, *re* General Staff, 305-6.
Niobe, H.M.S., completion of complement with Newfoundland R.N.R. men, 4, 6, 61, 62.
Nine Island, suggestion by Dr. Rangihiora *re* information to, of outbreak of war, and reply by the Hon. Dr. Pomare, 211-12.
Normanby Sound, *see under* Australia.
Northcliffe, Lord, assistance to Newfoundland Patriotic Fund, 66.
Norway, intention to defend neutrality against German threats, information received in New Zealand, 208.
Noumea, *see under* New Caledonia.

O'Brien, Maj. J. C., A. and I. Staff, service in India, 1908-9, 325.
Ogden, Hon. J. E., Acting Premier of Tasmania, speech, 126-7.
Oldham, Capt. E. C., 10th A.I. Regt., in India, 1909-10, 326.
Orduna, S.S., Third Newfoundland Contingent conveyed on, 69.
Osborne, Maj. F. W., R.A.A., service in England, 1903-5, 325.
Otago, *see under* New Zealand.
Outerbridge:
H.A., Newfoundland, on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Sir Joseph, Newfoundland:
Chairman, Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 58, 73.
at Patriotic Association meeting, 45, 46.
Vice-chairman of Patriotic Committee, 57.

Pacific:
Australian expedition to, 169.
Operations in, 164, 167-8.
Pacific Cable, cutting of, 274-5.
Palmerston, *see under* New Zealand.
Papua, wireless telegraphs, Order in Council *re* taking possession of, 100-1.
Parnell, Col. J. W., R.A.E., service in England, 1904-5, 325.
Parr, C. J., C.M.G., Mayor of Auckland, speeches, 260-2, 279-80.
Paterson, Lieut.-Col., speech at meeting for formation of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 40.
Patey, Admiral Sir George: 171.
Telegrams to and from Mr. Millen, 167.

Patterson :
L., *M.D.*, Newfoundland, on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Lieut.-Col. W. G. :
Appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Service in England, 1906-7, 325.
Peacock, Sir Alexander, Premier of Victoria : 110.
Speeches and Statements :
3rd Aug. 1914, 106-7.
Adjournment of Legislative Assembly, 4th Aug., 121.
in Legislative Assembly, 11th Aug., 136-9.
Melbourne Town Hall, 6th Aug., 127-8.
Peake, Hon. A. H., Treasurer, S. Australia, speech in House of Assembly, 115-16.
Pearce :
Senator the Hon. G. F., Australian Minister of Defence, 17th Sept. 1914 : 82.
on Loss of *A.E 1*, 171, 172.
Maj. R. St. J., A.F.A., in India, 1909-10, 326.
Penguin, H.M.S. : 378, 380.
Personnel, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 383, 384.
Petersham, *see under* Australia.
Philomel, H.M.S. :
Transfer to control of H.M. Government, 182-3, 193.
Transfer to New Zealand Naval Forces, 15th July 1914, as training ship, 201.
Piccott, A. W. :
Minister of Marine and Fisheries, Newfoundland and Labrador, 1.
and Spread of information to outharbours, 62.
Pinnock, Maj. P. W. G., A. and I. Staff, service in Canada, 1910, 325.
Pleasantville Camp, *see under* Newfoundland.
Pomare, Hon. Dr., member of the New Zealand Executive Council representing the native race, etc., at opening of war : 173, 251.
Speeches and statements :
Information to outlying islands of outbreak of war, 212.
Maori Contingent, 285-6.
Port Albany, S.S., gift of food-stuffs from Queensland sent by, 90.
Port Darwin, *see under* Australia.
Port Lincoln, *see under* Australia.
Port Moresby, *see under* Australia.
Port Stephens, *see under* Australia.
Port Western, *see under* Australia.
Psyche, 241.
Queensland, *see under* Australia.
Rabaul, *see under* New Britain.
Randwick, *see under* Australia.
Rangihiroa, Dr., New Zealand, suggestion *re* information to Nine Island of outbreak of war, 211-12.
Rangiora, *see under* New Zealand.
Read, G. N., Son and Watson, London and St. John's, work for Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 67.
Reed, Mr., New Zealand, question *re* supply of war news, 191.
Reid :
Rt. Hon. Sir George Houston, P.C., K.C., G.C.M.G., High Commissioner for Australia in London, 82, 89, 141, 154.
Capt. G. H., A.S.C., service in Australia, 1908-10, 325.
W. D., Newfoundland :
two Colt automatic quick-firing guns presented to regiment, and services of instructors, 74.
Free transportation offered for volunteers, 46.
Member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Sergt.-Maj., suggestion by Mr. McCallum *re* provision for widow and children, 248.
Reid Co. :
Assistance to Newfoundland Patriotic Fund, 66.
Assistance to Women's Patriotic Association, 79.
Rendell, R. G., Newfoundland :
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 731
Speech at meeting for formation of Patriotic Association, 38-9.
Rennie, W. H., Newfoundland :
at Patriotic Association meeting, 46.
on Reserve Force Committee of Patriotic Association, 73.
Rhodes, Hon. R. H., New Zealand, P.M.G., etc., at opening of war : 173.
on Means of communication, 230-1.
on Supply of war news, 191-2.

Richardson, Major, New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Roberts, Field-Marshal Earl: 275.
Birthday, resolution and speeches in New Zealand Legislative Council, 253-5.
Message as Colonel-in-Chief of New Zealand Army, 279.
Robertson:
Capt. (temp. Major) J. E., assistant to Director of Military Training, Australia (1910), 308.
Capt. W. St. L., service abroad, 1907-8, 325.
Robin, Col.: 232, 237.
Visits to troopships at Wellington, 8th Sept. 1914, 274.
Robinson, T. B., Agent-General for Queensland, correspondence with Colonial Office, 86-7, 88, 90, 91.
Rothermere, Lord, assistance to Newfoundland Patriotic Fund, 66.
Rotorua, *see under* New Zealand.
Russel, Maj. F. H., A.F.A., in India, 1908-9, 326.
Russell:
Senator Hon. E. J., honorary member of Australian Ministry, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.
Mr., New Zealand:
on Departure of General Godley, 232.
on Extension of scope of training, 232-3.
Proposal *re* establishment of miniature rifle ranges, 233.
Suggestion *re* association of Leader of the Opposition with the Government, 210-11.
Ryan:
Col. C. S., V.D., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Hon. J. D., member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.

St. John Ambulance Association, appeal, 50, 51.
St. John's, *see under* Newfoundland,
Saliely, Mr., Syrian deputation to Lord Mayor of Sydney, 143.
Samoa:
Capture of:
Message from H.M.S. *New Zealand*, 273.
Statements by Hon. J. Allen and Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey, 272-3.
Samoa (*continued*):
Expeditionary Force, summer clothing for, 251.
New Zealand expedition to, 167.
Sandilands, Maj. H. G., R.F.A., service in Australia, 1907-8, 324.
Scaddan, Mr., Premier of Western Australia, speech, 123-5.
Sellheim, Col. V. C. M., C.B.:
Appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Service abroad, 1906-7, 325.
Shipping, Admiralty warning, 36.
Simpsonshafen, *see under* New Britain.
Sinclair-MacLagan, Lieut.-Colonel E. G., D.S.O., appointment to command 3rd Inf. Brig. A.I.F., 98.
Singer Co., sewing machines lent for working parties, 80.
Slavonians of Northern Wairoa, refusal to join Austrian colours, and loyalty to Government, 217-18.
Smith, Col. J. F. Hewell, V.D., in India, 1909-10, 326.
Smyth, Colonel (New Zealand), services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Smythe:
Captain (New Zealand), services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.
Mrs. M. F., Newfoundland, sewing machines lent for working parties, 80.
Sobraon training ship: 377, 380, 390.
Personnel requirements, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 381, 384.
South Africa:
Loan from Imperial Government, 71-3.
Loyalty of, Mr. McLeod on, 139.
South Australia, *see under* Australia.
Spence, Hon. W. G., Australian Postmaster-General, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.
Sprott, Bishop, visit to troopships at Wellington, 8th Sept. 1914, 274.
Squires, Hon. Richard A., K.C., Minister of Justice, Newfoundland and Labrador: 1.
Speech at meeting for formation of Patriotic Association, 39.
Stanley, Sir Arthur Lyulph, Deputy Governor-General, Australia, 100, 131.
Stephano, S.S., Third Newfoundland Contingent conveyed on, 69.
Storey, D., adjournment of N.S.W. Legislative Assembly proposed, 108.

Strickland, Sir Gerald, speech at Sydney Chamber of Commerce, 103-4.
Styles, Hon. A. W.: 121.
Speech in S. Australian Legislative Council, 111-12.
Sutherland, Donald, Newfoundland, 13.
Suzor, M., French Consul, St. John's: 34.
Letter *re* French Naval Reservists, 35.
at Meeting for formation of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 41.
Notice of general amnesty to French deserters, 36.
Sydney, *see under* Australia.
Syria, residents in N.S.W., resolutions of, 143.

Tabasco, S.S., 79.
Tahuna Park, *see under* New Zealand.
Tammin, *see under* Australia.
Tasmania:
Beauty Point (Tamar River):
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 402, 404.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendation by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384, 411.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Expeditionary Force, 158-9.
Government, attitude of, 126-7.
Hobart:
Defence of, Imperial Defence Committee's report, 1906, 292-7.
Examination service established, 153.
Naval base, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 369, 371, 402, 404, 405.
Naval establishment, *personnel* requirements, recommendation by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 380, 384-411.
Wireless station, recommendations by Admiral Sir R. Henderson, 1911, 406.
Message of loyalty to the King, 126.
Te Uriohau Tribe, conference with other tribes at Auckland, 262.
Terarowa Tribe, conference with other tribes at Auckland, 262.
Thomas, Hon. Lt.-Col. T. J., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Thomson, G. M.:
Question on New Zealand Expeditionary Force, 190.
Question *re* Maori volunteers, 228-9.
on Sleeping accommodation of troops on Ships, 244; reply by Hon. J. Allen, 244.
Thursday Island (Normanby Sound, Torres Strait), *see under* Australia.
Tilney, Maj. E. L., 1st A.I. Regt., in India, 1908-9, 326.
Timewell, H. A., Hon. Paymaster, Newfoundland, member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
Totich, John, telegram *re* attitude of Slavonians of Northern Wairoa, 217.
Townsville, *see under* Australia.
Treacy, Staff Paymaster A. M., C.N.S. (1911), 361.
Tudor, Hon. F. G., Australian Minister of Trade and Customs, 17th Sept. 1914, 82.
Turner, Lieut., New Zealand, services placed at disposal of British Government, 267.

Vaughan, Mr., speech in S. Australian House of Assembly, 114.
Victoria, *see under* Australia.
Victoria League, gifts from Colonies to be sent to Contingents through, 51.
Viknor, H.M.S., Loss of Newfoundlanders on, 64.

Wade, Mr., Leader of the Opposition, N.S.W. Legislative Assembly: 107, 108, 211.
on Attitude of the Opposition, 108.
Speeches, 116-17, 119-21.
Waikato, *see under* New Zealand.
Wairao, Northern, *see under* New Zealand.
Wakefield, Capt., speech at meeting for formation of Newfoundland Patriotic Association, 39-40.
Wallace, Lieut.-Col. R., Officer Commanding R.A.A. for the Commonwealth (1910), 310.
Wallington, E. W., Private Secretary to H.M. the Queen, 180.
Ward, Rt. Hon. Sir Joseph G., Leader of the Opposition, New Zealand:
Appeal to horse-owners, 206.
on Mr. Asquith's speech proposing vote of £100,000,000, 212-13.
Association with the Government, suggestion by Mr. Russell, 210-11; reply by the Rt. Hon. W. F. Massey, 211.

Ward, Rt. Hon. Sir Joseph G., Leader of the Opposition, New Zealand (*continued*):
at Canterbury, 6th Sept. 1914, 274.
Speeches and statements, etc.:
31st July, 175, 190-1.
4th Aug., 194-6.
7th Aug., 206-7.
8th Aug., 209-10.
Adjournment of House, 252, 253.
Expeditionary Force: 199-200.
Departure, 222-7.
Enfranchisement, 1914, 222-7.
Financial responsibility for, 218.
Secrecy as to movements, 252.
Lady Islington's offer of London house as hospital for New Zealand soldiers, 218-19.
Lord Kitchener and his message, 216-17.
Maori volunteers, 229.
Offers of cash and horses, 207.
at Official farewell to Wellington Expeditionary Force, 283-4.
at Parliament House, to crowd, 259-60.
Slavonians of Northern Wairoa, 217-18.
Support of Government, 257-8.
Visit to troopships at Wellington, 274.
at Wellington, 4th Aug., 258.
Watkins, David, Secretary, Federal Parliamentary Labour Party, manifesto, 146-7.
Wellington, *see under* New Zealand.
Western Australia, *see under* Australia.
Westport, *see under* New Zealand.
White, Major C. B. B., R.A.A., appointment to A.I.F., 98.
Attached to War Office (1910), 308.
Service in England, 1905-8, 325.
Wilford, Mr., New Zealand:
on Convoying of Expeditionary Force, 241.
Speech, 241.
Wilhelm II., Emperor of Germany: 52.
Mr. W. M. Hughes on, 147.
Wilkinson, Capt. H. A. F., W.A.I. Regt., in India, 1909, 326.
Wilson:
Maj. F., service in Australia, 1908, 325.
Maj. F. A., D.S.O., Director of Military Training, Australia (1910), 308, 311.
Winter, Hon. M. G., member of Finance Committee of Patriotic Association, 67.
Wise, B. R., K.C., statements, at Sydney, 149-50.
Witty, Mr., New Zealand:
on Age limit in Expeditionary Force, 246.
on Gen. Godley, 246.
on Quality of horses of Expeditionary Force, 246.
Question *re* erection of wireless stations, 230-1.
Rifle shooting prizes, proposal, 246.
on Supply of rations and forage, 247.
Territorials' drills, 246-7.
on Tree planting for sheltering of camp at Waimakariri River bed, 247.
Woodford, William, Minister of Public Works, Newfoundland and Labrador, 1.
Wynne, Hon. A., Australian Postmaster-General on outbreak of war, 82.

Printed by T. and A. CONSTABLE, Printers to His Majesty
at the Edinburgh University Press

00106833

Digitized with financial assistance from
Shri Brihad Bhartiya Samaj
on 31 October, 2019